

Electron-positron pairs in physics and astrophysics

Contents

1. Topics	393
2. Participants	395
2.1. ICRANet participants	395
2.2. Past collaborators	395
2.3. On going collaborations	395
2.4. Ph.D. and M.S. Students	396
3. Brief description	397
3.1. Abstract	397
3.2. The three fundamental contributions to the electron-positron pair creation and annihilation and the concept of critical electric field	399
3.3. Nonlinear electrodynamics and rate of pair creation	401
3.4. Pair production and annihilation in QED	403
3.5. Semi-classical description of pair production in a general electric field	404
3.6. Phenomenology of electron-positron pair creation and annihilation	405
3.6.1. The Breit-Wheeler cutoff in high-energy Gamma-rays	409
3.7. The extraction of blackholic energy from a black hole by vacuum polarization processes	413
3.8. Plasma oscillations in electric fields	417
3.9. Thermalization of the mildly relativistic pair plasma	418
4. Publications (before 2005)	421
5. Publications (2005-2008)	429
6. Invited talks in international conferences	433
7. APPENDICES	435
A. The three fundamental contributions to the electron-positron pair creation and annihilation and the concept of critical electric field	437
A.1. Dirac's electron-positron annihilation	437
A.2. Breit-Wheeler pair production	440

A.3. Klein paradox and Sauter work	442
A.4. A semi-classical description of pair production in quantum me- chanics	448
A.4.1. An external constant electric field	448
A.4.2. An additional constant magnetic field	451
B. Nonlinear electrodynamics and rate of pair creation	455
B.1. Hans Euler and light-light scattering	455
B.2. Born's nonlinear electromagnetism	456
B.3. The Euler-Heisenberg lagrangian	458
B.3.1. Real part of the effective lagrangian	459
B.3.2. Weisskopf effective Lagrangian	462
B.3.3. Imaginary part of the effective Lagrangian	462
C. Pair production and annihilation in QED	465
C.1. Quantum Electrodynamics	465
C.2. Basic processes in Quantum Electro-Dynamics	468
C.3. The Dirac and the Breit-Wheeler processes in QED	470
C.4. QED description of pair production	472
C.4.1. Schwinger formula for pair production in uniform elec- tric field	473
C.4.2. Pair production in constant electromagnetic fields . . .	476
C.4.3. Effective nonlinear Lagrangian for arbitrary constant electromagnetic field	479
C.5. Theory of pair production in an alternating field	483
C.6. Nonlinear Compton effect	488
D. Semi-classical description of pair production in a general electric field	491
D.1. Semi-classical description of pair production	492
D.1.1. JWKB transmission probability for Klein-Gordon Field	493
D.1.2. Rate of pair production	495
D.1.3. Including a Smoothly Varying $\mathbf{B}(z)$ -Field Parallel to $\mathbf{E}(z)$	499
D.2. Time-dependent electric fields	500
D.3. Applications	501
D.3.1. Step-like electric field	501
D.3.2. Sauter electric field	502
D.3.3. Constant electric field in half space	507
D.4. Tunneling into Bound States	509
D.4.1. JWKB transmission probability	510
D.4.2. Energy spectrum of bound states	511
D.4.3. Rate of pair production	511
E. Phenomenology of electron-positron pair creation and annihilation	513

E.1.	e^+e^- annihilation experiments in particle physics	513
E.2.	The Breit-Wheeler process in laser physics and astrophysics .	515
E.2.1.	Phenomenology of pair production in alternating fields	518
E.2.2.	Pair production in X-ray free electron lasers	519
E.2.3.	Pair production by a circularly polarized laser beam . .	520
E.2.4.	Availability of laser technology for pair production . .	523
E.3.	Phenomenology of pair production in electron beam-laser collisions	523
E.3.1.	Experiment of electron beam-laser collisions	525
E.3.2.	Pair production viewed in the rest frame of electron beam	527
E.4.	The Breit-Wheeler cutoff in high-energy γ -rays	528
E.5.	Theory of pair production in Coulomb potential	532
E.5.1.	The $Z = 137$ catastrophe	532
E.5.2.	Semi-Classical description	533
E.5.3.	The critical value of the nuclear charge $Z_{cr} = 173$. . .	536
E.5.4.	Positron production	538
E.5.5.	Homogeneous and adiabatic approximation	540
E.6.	Pair production in heavy-ion collisions	541
E.6.1.	A transient super heavy “quasimolecules”	541
E.6.2.	Experiments	542
F.	The extraction of blackholic energy from a black hole by vacuum polarization processes	547
F.1.	Test particles in Kerr-Newmann geometries	548
F.2.	Reversible and irreversible transformations of a black hole: the Christodoulou-Ruffini mass formula	550
F.3.	Positive and negative root states as limits of quantum field states	554
F.4.	Vacuum polarization in Kerr-Newman geometries	555
F.5.	The “Dyadosphere” in Reissner- Nordström geometry	558
F.6.	The “Dyadotorus”	563
F.7.	Geometry of gravitationally collapsing cores	564
F.7.1.	The Tolman-Oppenheimer-Snyder solution	567
F.7.2.	Gravitational collapse of charged and uncharged shells	569
F.8.	The maximum energy extractable from a black hole	574
F.8.1.	The formula of the irreducible mass of a black hole . .	574
F.8.2.	Extracting electromagnetic energy from a subcritical and overcritical blackhole	578
F.9.	A theorem on a possible disagreement between black holes and thermodynamics	581
G.	Plasma oscillations in electric fields	587
G.1.	Semiclassical theory of plasma oscillations in electric fields . .	587
G.2.	Kinetic theory of plasma oscillations in electric fields	591
G.3.	Plasma oscillations in the color electric field of heavy ions . . .	592

G.4. Quantum Vlasov equation	594
G.5. Quantum decoherence in plasma oscillations	597
G.6. Collision decoherence in plasma oscillations	600
G.7. $e^+e^-\gamma$ interactions in plasma oscillations in electric fields . . .	601
G.8. Electro-fluidodynamics of the pair plasma	611
H. Thermalization of the mildly relativistic pair plasma	625
H.1. Qualitative description of the pair plasma	627
H.2. The discretization procedure and the computational scheme .	633
H.3. Conservation laws	634
H.4. Determination of temperature and chemical potentials in kinetic equilibrium	635
H.5. Binary interactions	637
H.5.1. Compton scattering	637
H.5.2. Pair creation and annihilation	639
H.5.3. Møller scattering of electrons and positrons	641
H.5.4. Bhaba scattering of electrons on positrons	643
H.6. Three-body processes	644
H.7. Cutoff in the Coulomb scattering	645
H.8. Numerical results	647
I. Concluding remarks	651
Bibliography	655

1. Topics

- The three fundamental contributions to the electron-positron pair creation and annihilation and the concept of critical electric field
- Nonlinear electrodynamics and rate of pair creation
- Pair production and annihilation in QED
- Semi-classical description of pair production in a general electric field
- Phenomenology of electron-positron pair creation and annihilation
- The Breit-Wheeler cutoff in high-energy γ -rays
- The extraction of blackholic energy from a black hole by vacuum polarization processes
- Plasma oscillations in electric fields
- Thermalization of the mildly relativistic pair plasma

2. Participants

2.1. ICRANet participants

- D. Bini (ICRANet, CNR, Rome, Italy)
- C. Cherubini (ICRANet, Univ. Campus Biomedico, Rome, Italy)
- T. Damour (ICRANet, IHES, Bures sur Yvette, France)
- A. Geralico (ICRANet, Rome, Italy)
- R. Ruffini (ICRANet, University of Rome, Italy)
- M. Rotondo (ICRANet, University of Rome, Italy)
- G. Vereshchagin (ICRANet, Minsk, Belarus)
- S.-S. Xue (ICRANet)

2.2. Past collaborators

- F. Fraschetti (CEA Saclay, France)
- R. Klippert (ICRANet, Brazile)
- G. Preparata* (INFN, University of Milan, Italy)
- J. Wilson* (Livermore National Lab., University of California, USA)
- J. Salmonson (Livermore National Lab., University of California, USA)
- L. Stella (Rome Astronomical Observatory, Italy)

2.3. On going collaborations

- H. Kleinert (Free University of Berlin , Germany)
- V. Popov (ITEP, Moscow, Russia)
- G.t'Hooft (Institute for Theoretical Physics Universiteit Utrecht)
- L. Vitagliano (University of Salerno, Italy)

2.4. Ph.D. and M.S. Students

- G. De Barros
- L. J. Rangel Lemos
- B. Patricelli
- J. Rueda

* passed away

3. Brief description

3.1. Abstract

From the interaction of physics and astrophysics we are witnessing in these years a splendid synthesis of theoretical, experimental and observational results originating from three fundamental physical processes. They were originally proposed by Dirac, by Breit and Wheeler and by Sauter, Heisenberg, Euler and Schwinger. For almost seventy years they have all three been followed by a continued effort of experimental verification on Earth-based experiments. The Dirac process, $e^+e^- \rightarrow 2\gamma$, has been by far the most successful. It has obtained extremely accurate experimental verification and has led as well to an enormous number of new physics in possibly one of the most fruitful experimental avenue by introduction of storage rings in Frascati and followed by the largest accelerators worldwide: DESY, SLAC etc. The Breit-Wheeler process, $2\gamma \rightarrow e^+e^-$, although conceptually simple, being the inverse process of the Dirac one, has been by far one of the most difficult to be verified experimentally. Only recently, through the technology based on free electron X-ray laser and its numerous applications in Earth-based experiments, some first indications of its possible verification have been reached. The vacuum polarization process in strong electromagnetic field, pioneered by Sauter, Heisenberg, Euler and Schwinger, introduced the concept of critical electric field $E_c = m_e^2 c^3 / (e\hbar)$. It has been searched without success for more than forty years by heavy-ion collisions in many of the leading particle accelerators worldwide.

The novel situation today is that these same processes can be studied on a much more grandiose scale during the gravitational collapse leading to the formation of a black hole. The observational evidence rests on the most powerful events ever observed in our Universe: the Gamma-Ray Bursts (GRBs). This report is dedicated to the scientific race in act. The theoretical and experimental work developed in Earth-based laboratories is confronted with the theoretical interpretation of space-based observations of phenomena originating on cosmological scales. What has become clear in the last ten years is that all the three above mentioned processes, duly extended in the general relativistic framework, are necessary for the understanding the GRBs. Vice versa, the natural arena where these processes can be observed in mutual interaction and on an unprecedented scale, is indeed the realm of relativistic astrophysics.

We systematically analyze the conceptual developments which have followed the basic work of Dirac and Breit-Wheeler. We also recall how the seminal work of Born and Infeld inspired the work by Sauter, Heisenberg and Euler on effective Lagrangian leading to the estimate of the rate for the process of electron-positron production in a constant electric field. In addition of reviewing the intuitive semi-classical treatment of quantum mechanical tunneling for describing the process of electron-positron production, we recall the calculations in *Quantum Electro-Dynamics* of the Schwinger rate and effective Lagrangian for constant electromagnetic fields. We also review the electron-positron production in both time-alternating electromagnetic fields, studied by Brezin, Itzykson, Popov, Nikishov and Narozhny, and the corresponding processes relevant for pair production at the focus of coherent laser beams as well as electron beam-laser collision. We finally report some current developments based on the general JWKB approach which allows to compute the Schwinger rate in spatially varying and time varying electromagnetic fields.

We then turn to the possible experimental verification of these phenomena. We review: A) the experimental verification of the $e^+e^- \rightarrow 2\gamma$ process studied by Dirac. We also briefly recall the very successful experiments of e^+e^- annihilation to hadronic channels, in addition to the Dirac electromagnetic channel; B) ongoing Earth based experiments to detect electron-positron production in strong fields by focusing coherent laser beams and by electron beam-laser collisions; and C) the multiyear attempts to detect electron-positron production in Coulomb fields for a large atomic number $Z > 137$ in heavy ion collisions. These attempts follow the classical theoretical work of Popov and Zeldovich, and Greiner and their schools.

We then turn to the astrophysical scenario. We first review the basic work on the energetics and electrodynamical properties of an electromagnetic black hole and the application of the Schwinger formula around Kerr-Newman black holes as pioneered by Damour and Ruffini. We derive the corresponding rate of electron-positron pair production and the introduction of the concept of Dyadosphere. We review recent progress in describing the evolution of optically thick electron-positron plasma in presence of supercritical electric field, which is relevant both in astrophysics as well as ongoing laser beam experiments. In particular we review recent progress based on the Vlasov-Boltzmann-Maxwell equations to study the feedback of the created electron-positron pairs on the original constant electric field. We evidence the existence of plasma oscillations and its interaction with photons leading to energy and number equipartition of photons, electrons and positrons. We finally review the recent progress obtained by using the Boltzmann equations to study the evolution of an electron-positron-photon plasma towards thermal equilibrium and determination of its characteristic timescales. The crucial difference introduced by the correct evaluation of the role of two and three body collisions, direct and inverse, is especially evidenced. This result

is crucial in fixing the initial conditions of the electron-positron plasma after the process of gravitational collapse. We plan to treat this topic on the forthcoming report. We then present some general conclusions.

3.2. The three fundamental contributions to the electron-positron pair creation and annihilation and the concept of critical electric field

The annihilation of electron-positron pair to two photons, and its inverse process – the production of electron-positron pair by the collision of two photons were first studied in the framework of quantum mechanics by P.A.M. Dirac and by G. Breit and J.A. Wheeler in the 1930's Dirac (1930b); Breit and Wheeler (1934).

A third fundamental process was pioneered by the work of Fritz Sauter and Oscar Klein, pointing to the possibility of creating an electron-positron pair from the vacuum in a constant electromagnetic field. This became known as the 'Klein paradox' and such a process named as *vacuum polarization*. It would occur for an electric field stronger than the critical value

$$E_c \equiv \frac{m_e^2 c^3}{e \hbar} \simeq 1.3 \cdot 10^{16} \text{ V/cm.} \quad (3.2.1)$$

where m_e , e , c and \hbar are respectively the electron mass and charge, the speed of light and the Planck's constant.

The experimental difficulties to verify the existence of such three processes became immediately clear. While the process studied by Dirac was almost immediately observed Klemperer (1934) and the electron-positron collisions became possibly the best tested and prolific phenomenon ever observed in physics, see e.g. E.1. The Breit-Wheeler process, on the contrary, is still today waiting a direct observational verification, see e.g. Chapter E. Similarly the vacuum polarization process defied dedicated attempts for almost fifty years in experiments in nuclear physics laboratories and accelerators all over the world, see Chapter E.

From the theoretical point of view the conceptual changes implied by these processes became immediately clear. They were by vastity and depth only comparable to the modifications of the linear gravitational theory of Newton introduced by the nonlinear general relativistic equations of Einstein. In the work of Euler, Oppenheimer and Debye, Born and his school it became clear that the existence of the Breit-Wheeler process was conceptually modifying the linearity of the Maxwell theory. In fact the creation of the electron-positron pair out of the two photons modifies the concept of superposition

of the linear electromagnetic Maxwell equations and impose the necessity to transit to a nonlinear theory of electrodynamics. In a certain sense the Breit-Wheeler process was having for electrodynamics the same fundamental role of gedanken experiment that the equivalence principle had for gravitation. Two different attempts to study these nonlinearities in the electrodynamics were made: one by Born and Infeld Born (1933, 1934); Born and Infeld (1934) and one by Euler and Heisenberg Heisenberg and Euler (1936). These works prepared the even greater revolution of Quantum Electrodynamics by Tomonaga Tomonaga (1946), Feynman Feynman (1948, 1949b,a), Schwinger Schwinger (1948b, 1949a,b) and Dyson Dyson (1949a,b).

In Chapter A we review the fundamental contribution to the electron-positron pair creation and annihilation and to the concept of the critical electric field. In Sec. A.1 we review the Dirac derivation Dirac (1930b) of the electron-positron annihilation process obtained within the perturbation theory in the framework of relativistic quantum mechanics and his derivation of the classical formula for the cross-section $\sigma_{e^+e^-}^{\text{lab}}$ in the rest frame of the electron

$$\sigma_{e^+e^-}^{\text{lab}} = \pi \left(\frac{\alpha \hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 (\hat{\gamma} - 1)^{-1} \left\{ \frac{\hat{\gamma}^2 + 4\hat{\gamma} + 1}{\hat{\gamma}^2 - 1} \ln[\hat{\gamma} + (\hat{\gamma}^2 - 1)^{1/2}] - \frac{\hat{\gamma} + 3}{(\hat{\gamma}^2 - 1)^{1/2}} \right\},$$

where $\hat{\gamma} \equiv \mathcal{E}_+ / m_e c^2 \geq 1$ is the energy of the positron and $\alpha = e^2 / (\hbar c)$ is as usual the fine structure constant, and we recall the corresponding formula for the center of mass reference frame. In Sec. A.2 we recall the main steps in the classical Breit-Wheeler work Breit and Wheeler (1934) on the production of a real electron-positron pair in the collision of two photons, following the same method used by Dirac and leading to the evaluation of the total cross-section $\sigma_{\gamma\gamma}$ in the center of mass of the system

$$\sigma_{\gamma\gamma} = \frac{\pi}{2} \left(\frac{\alpha \hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 (1 - \hat{\beta}^2) \left[2\hat{\beta}(\hat{\beta}^2 - 2) + (3 - \hat{\beta}^4) \ln \left(\frac{1 + \hat{\beta}}{1 - \hat{\beta}} \right) \right], \quad \text{with} \quad \hat{\beta} = \frac{c|\mathbf{p}|}{\mathcal{E}},$$

where $\hat{\beta}$ is the reduced velocity of the electron or the positron. In Sec. A.3 we recall the famous Klein paradox Klein (1929); Sauter (1931b) and the possible tunneling between the positive and negative energy states leading to the concept of level crossing and pair creation by analogy to the Gamow tunneling Gamow (1931) in the nuclear potential barrier. We then turn to the celebrated Sauter work Sauter (1931a) showing the possibility of creating a pair in a uniform electric field E . We recover in Sec. A.4.1 a JWKB approximation in order to reproduce and improve on the Sauter result by obtaining the classical Sauter exponential term as well as the prefactor

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V} \simeq D_s \frac{\alpha E^2}{2\pi^2 \hbar} e^{-\pi E_c / E},$$

where $D_s = 2$ for a spin-1/2 particle and $D_s = 1$ for spin-0, V is the volume. Finally, in Sec. A.4.2 the case of a simultaneous presence of an electric and a magnetic field B is presented leading to the estimate of pair production rate

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V} \simeq \frac{\alpha\beta\epsilon}{\pi\hbar} \coth\left(\frac{\pi\beta}{\epsilon}\right) \exp\left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{\epsilon}\right), \quad \text{spin} - 1/2 \text{ particle}$$

and

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V} \simeq \frac{\alpha\beta\epsilon}{2\pi\hbar} \sinh^{-1}\left(\frac{\pi\beta}{\epsilon}\right) \exp\left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{\epsilon}\right), \quad \text{spin} - 0 \text{ particle},$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} \epsilon &\equiv \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{\sqrt{(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2 + 4(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2} + (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)} = \sqrt{(S^2 + P^2)^{1/2} + S}, \\ \beta &\equiv \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{\sqrt{(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2 + 4(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2} - (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)} = \sqrt{(S^2 + P^2)^{1/2} - S}, \end{aligned}$$

where the scalar S and the pseudoscalar P are

$$S \equiv \frac{1}{4} F_{\mu\nu} F^{\mu\nu} = \frac{1}{2} (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2); \quad P \equiv \frac{1}{4} F_{\mu\nu} \tilde{F}^{\mu\nu} = \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B},$$

where $\tilde{F}^{\mu\nu} \equiv \epsilon^{\mu\nu\lambda\kappa} F_{\lambda\kappa}$ is the dual field tensor (see Appendix A).

3.3. Nonlinear electrodynamics and rate of pair creation

In Chapter B we first recall in Sec. B.1 the seminal work of Hans Euler Euler (1936) pointing out for the first time the necessity of nonlinear character of electromagnetism introducing the classical Euler lagrangian

$$\mathcal{L} = \frac{\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2}{8\pi} + \frac{1}{\alpha} \frac{1}{E_0^2} \left[-a_E (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2 - b_E (\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2 \right],$$

where

$$a_E = -1/(360\pi^2), \quad b_E = -7/(360\pi^2),$$

a first order perturbation to the Maxwell lagrangian. In Sec. B.2 we review the alternative theoretical approach of nonlinear electrodynamics by Max Born Born (1934) and his collaborators, to the more ambitious attempt to obtain the correct nonlinear Lagrangian of electrodynamics. The motivation of Born was to attempt a theory free of divergences in the observable properties of an

elementary particle, what has become known as ‘unitarian’ standpoint versus the ‘dualistic’ standpoint in description of elementary particles and fields. We recall how the Born Lagrangian was formulated to be

$$\mathcal{L} = \sqrt{1 + 2S - P^2} - 1,$$

and one of the first solutions derived by Born and Infeld Born and Infeld (1934). We also recall one of the interesting aspects of the courageous approach of Born had been to formulate this Lagrangian within a unified theory of gravitation and electromagnetism following Einstein program. Indeed, we also recall the very interesting solution within the Born theory obtained by Hoffmann Hoffmann (1935); Hoffmann and Infeld (1937). Still in the work of Born Born (1934) the seminal idea of describing the nonlinear vacuum properties of this novel electrodynamics by an effective dielectric constant and magnetic permeability functions of the field. We then review in Sec. B.3.1 the work of Heisenberg and Euler Heisenberg and Euler (1936) adopting the general approach of Born and generalizing to the presence of a real and imaginary part of the electric permittivity and magnetic permeability. They obtain an integral expression of the effective Lagrangian given by

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = & \frac{e^2}{16\pi^2\hbar c} \int_0^\infty e^{-s} \frac{ds}{s^3} \left[is^2 \bar{E}\bar{B} \frac{\cos(s[\bar{E}^2 - \bar{B}^2 + 2i(\bar{E}\bar{B})]^{1/2}) + \text{c.c.}}{\cos(s[\bar{E}^2 - \bar{B}^2 + 2i(\bar{E}\bar{B})]^{1/2}) - \text{c.c.}} \right. \\ & \left. + \left(\frac{m_e^2 c^3}{e\hbar} \right)^2 + \frac{s^2}{3} (|\bar{B}|^2 - |\bar{E}|^2) \right], \end{aligned}$$

where \bar{E}, \bar{B} are the dimensionless reduced fields in the unit of the critical field E_c ,

$$\bar{E} = \frac{|\mathbf{E}|}{E_c}, \quad \bar{B} = \frac{|\mathbf{B}|}{E_c}.$$

obtaining the real part and the crucial imaginary term which relates to the pair production in a given electric field. It is shown how these results give as a special case the previous result obtained by Euler (B.1.3). In Sec. B.3.2 the work by Weisskopf Weisskopf (1936) working on a spin-0 field fulfilling the Klein-Gordon equation, in contrast to the spin 1/2 field studied by Heisenberg and Euler, confirms the Euler-Heisenberg result. Weisskopf obtains explicit expression of pair creation in an arbitrary strong magnetic field and in an electric field described by \bar{E} and \bar{B} expansion.

For the first time Heisenberg and Euler provided a description of the vacuum properties by the characteristic scale of strong field E_c and the effective Lagrangian of nonlinear electromagnetic fields. In 1951, Schwinger Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b) made an elegant quantum field theoretic reformulation of this discovery in the QED-framework. This played an important role in understanding the properties of the QED theory in strong electromagnetic fields.

The QED theory in strong coupling regime, i.e., in the regime of strong electromagnetic fields, is still a vast arena awaiting for experimental verification as well as of further theoretical understanding (see Appendix B).

3.4. Pair production and annihilation in QED

In Chapter C after recalling some general properties of QED in Sec. C.1 and some basic processes in Sec. C.2 we proceed to the consideration of the Dirac and the Breit-Wheeler processes in QED in Sec. C.3. In Sec. C.4 the classical result for the vacuum to vacuum decay via pair creation in uniform electric field by Schwinger is recalled

$$\frac{\Gamma}{V} = \frac{\alpha E^2}{\pi^2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n^2} \exp\left(-\frac{n\pi E_c}{E}\right).$$

This formula generalizes and encompasses the previous results reviewed in our report: the JWKB results, discussed in Sec. A.4, and the Sauter exponential factor (A.4.11), and the Heisenberg-Euler imaginary part of the effective Lagrangian. We then recall the generalization of this formula to the case of a constant electromagnetic fields. Such results were further generalized to spatially non-uniform and time-dependent electromagnetic fields by Nikishov Nikishov (1969), Vanyashin and Terent'ev Vanyashin and Terent'ev (1965), Popov Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b), Narozhny and Nikishov Narozhnyi and Nikishov (1970) and Batalin and Fradkin Batalin and Fradkin (1970). We then conclude this argument by giving the real and imaginary parts for the effective Lagrangian for arbitrary constant electromagnetic field recently published by Ruffini and Xue Ruffini and Xue (2006). This result generalizes the previous result obtained by Weisskopf in strong fields. In weak field it gives the Euler-Heisenberg effective Lagrangian. As we will see in the Sec. E.2 much attention has been given experimentally to the creation of pairs in the rapidly changing electric fields. A fundamental contribution in this field studying pair production rates in an oscillating electric field was given by Brezin and Itzykson Brezin and Itzykson (1970) and we recover in Sec. C.5 their main results which apply both to the case of bosons and fermions. We recall how similar results were independently obtained two years later by Popov Popov (1972a). In Sec. C.6 we recall an alternative physical process considering the quantum theory of the interaction of free electron with the field of a strong electromagnetic waves: an ultrarelativistic electron absorbs multiple photons and emits only a single photon in the reaction Bula et al. (1996):

$$e + n\omega \rightarrow e' + \gamma,$$

This process appears to be of the great relevance as we will see in the next Chapter for the nonlinear effects originating from laser beam experiments. Particularly important appears to be the possibility outlined by Burke et al. (1997) that the high-energy photon γ created in the first process propagates through the laser field, it interacts with laser photons $n\omega$ to produce an electron-positron pair

$$\gamma + n\omega \rightarrow e^+ + e^-.$$

We also refer to the papers by Narozhny and Popov Nikishov and Ritus (1964a,b, 1965a, 1967, 1979, 1965b) studying the dependence of this process on the status of the polarization of the photons.

We have already pointed out in the previous Chapter the great relevance of departing from the case of the uniform electromagnetic field originally considered by Sauter, Heisenberg and Euler, and Schwinger. We have also recalled in the previous Chapter some of the classical works of Brezin and Itzykson and Popov on time-varying fields. The space variation of the field was also considered in the classical papers of Nikishov and Narozhny as well as in the work of Wang and Wong. Finally, we recall the work of Khriplovich (2000) studying the vacuum polarization around a Reissner- Nordström approach. A more recent approach using the world line formalism sometimes called the string-inspired formalism was advance by Dunne and Schubert (2001); Dunne and Schubert (2005) (see Appendix C).

3.5. Semi-classical description of pair production in a general electric field

In Chapter D, after recalling studies of pair-production in inhomogeneous electromagnetic fields in the literature by Dunne and Schubert (2005); Dunne et al. (2006); Dunne and Wang (2006); Kim and Page (2002, 2006, 2007), we present a brief review of our recent work Kleinert et al. (2008) where the general formulae for pairproduction rate as functions of either crossing energy-level or classical turning point, and total production rate are obtained in external electromagnetic fields which vary either in one space direction $E(z)$ or in time $E(t)$. In Secs. D.1 and D.2, these formulae are explicitly derived in the JWKB approximation and generalized to the case of 3-dimensianal electromagnetic configurations. We apply these formulae to several cases of such inhomogeneous electric field configurations, which are classified into two categories. In the first category, we study two cases: a semi confined field $E(z) \neq 0$ for $z \lesssim \ell$ and the Sauter field

$$E(z) = E_0 / \cosh^2(z/\ell), \quad V(z) = -\sigma_s m_e c^2 \tanh(z/\ell),$$

where ℓ is width in the z -direction, and

$$\sigma_s \equiv eE_0\ell/m_e c^2 = (\ell/\lambda_C)(E_0/E_c).$$

In these two cases the pairs produced are not confined by the electric potential and can reach an infinite distance. The resultant pair-production rate varies as a function of space coordinate. The result we obtained is drastically different from the Schwinger rate in homogeneous electric fields without any boundary. We clearly show that the approximate application of the Schwinger rate to electric fields limited within finite size of space over estimates the total number of pairs produced, particularly when the finite size is comparable with the Compton wavelength λ_C , see Figs. D.2 and D.3 where it is clearly shown how the rate of pair creation far from being constant goes to zero at both boundaries. The same situation is also found for the case of the semi confined field $z(z) \neq 0$ for $|z| \lesssim \ell$, see Eq. (D.3.34). In the second category, we study a linearly rising electric field $E(z) \sim z$, corresponding to a harmonic potential $V(z) \sim z^2$, see Figs. D.1. In this case the energy-spectra of bound states are discrete and thus energy crossing levels for tunneling are discrete. To obtain the total number of pairs created, using the general formulae for pair production rate, we need to sum over all discrete energy-crossing levels, see Eq. (D.4.11), provided these energy-levels are not occupied. Otherwise, the pair-production would stop due to the Pauli principle (see Appendix D).

3.6. Phenomenology of electron-positron pair creation and annihilation

In Chapter E we focus on the phenomenology of electron-positron pair creation and annihilation experiments. There are three different aspects which are examined: the verification of the process (A.0.1) initially studied by Dirac, the process (A.0.2) studied by Breit and Wheeler, and then the classical work of vacuum polarization process around a supercritical nucleus, following the Sauter, Euler, Heisenberg and Schwinger work. We first recall in Sec. E.1 how the process (A.0.1) predicted by Dirac was almost immediately discovered by Klemperer Klemperer (1934). Following this discovery the electron-positron collisions have become possibly the most prolific field of research in the domain of particle physics. The crucial step experimentally was the creation of the first electron-positron collider the “Anello d’Accumulazione” (AdA) was built by the theoretical proposal of Bruno Touschek in Frascati (Rome) in 1960 Bernardini (2004). Following the success of AdA (luminosity $\sim 10^{25}/(\text{cm}^2 \text{ sec})$, beam energy $\sim 0.25\text{GeV}$), it was decided to build in the Frascati National Laboratory a storage ring of the same kind, Adone. Electron-positron colliders have been built and proposed for this purpose all over the world (CERN,

SLAC, INP, DESY, KEK and IHEP). The aim here is just to recall the existence of this enormous field of research following the original Dirac idea. The main cross-sections (E.1.1) and (E.1.2) are recalled and the diagram (Fig. E.1) summarizing this very great success of particle physics is presented. While the Dirac process (A.0.1) has been by far one of the most prolific in physics, the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2) has been one of the most elusive for direct observations. In Earth-bound experiments the major effort today is directed to evidence this phenomenon in very strong and coherent electromagnetic field in lasers. In this process collision of many photons may lead in the future to pair creation. This topic is discussed in Sec. E.2. Alternative evidence for the Breit-Wheeler process can come from optically thick electron-positron plasma which may be created either in the future in Earth-bound experiments, or currently observed in astrophysics, see Chapter H. One additional way to probe the existence of the Breit-Wheeler process is by establishing in astrophysics an upper limits to observable high energy photons, as a function of distance, propagating in the Universe as pioneered by Nikishov Nikishov (1961), see Sec. E.4. We then recall in Sec. E.3 how the crucial experimental breakthrough came from the idea of John Madey Deacon et al. (1977) of self-amplified spontaneous emission in an undulator, which results when charges interact with the synchrotron radiation they emit Tremaine et al. (2002). Such X-ray free electron lasers have been constructed among others at DESY and SLAC and focus energy onto a small spot hopefully with the size of the X-ray laser wavelength $\lambda \simeq O(0.1)\text{nm}$ Nuhn and Pellegrini (2000), and obtain a very large electric field $E \sim 1/\lambda$, much larger than those obtainable with any optical laser of the same power. This technique can be used to achieve a very strong electric field near to its critical value for observable electron-positron pair production in vacuum. No pair can be created by a single laser beam. It is then assumed that each X-ray laser pulse is split into two equal parts and recombined to form a standing wave with a frequency ω . We then recall how for a laser pulse with wavelength λ about $1\mu\text{m}$ and the theoretical diffraction limit $\sigma_{\text{laser}} \simeq \lambda$ being reached, the critical intensity laser beam would be

$$I_{\text{laser}}^c = \frac{c}{4\pi} E_c^2 \simeq 4.6 \cdot 10^{29} \text{W/cm}^2.$$

In Sec. E.2.1 we recall the theoretical formula for the probability of pair production in time-alternating electric field in two limiting cases of large frequency and small frequency. It is interesting that in the limit of large field and small frequency the production rate approach the one of the Sauter, Heisenberg, Euler and Schwinger, discussed in Chapter C. In the following Sec. E.2.2 we recall the actually reached experimental limits quoted by Ringwald Ringwald (2001b) for a X-ray laser and give a reference to the relevant literature. In Sec. E.2.3 we summarize some of the most recent theoretical estimates for pair production by a circularly polarized laser beam by Narozhny, Popov and

their collaborators. In this case the field invariants (A.4.23) are not vanishing and pair creation can be achieved by a single laser beam. They computed the total number of electron-positron pairs produced as a function of intensity and focusing parameter of the laser. Particularly interesting is their analysis of the case of two counter-propagating focused laser-pulses with circular polarizations, pair production becomes experimentally observable when the laser intensity $I_{\text{laser}} \sim 10^{26} \text{W/cm}^2$ for each beam, which is about 1 ~ 2 orders of magnitude lower than for a single focused laser-pulse, and more than 3 orders of magnitude lower than the critical intensity (E.2.4). Equally interesting are the considerations which first appear in treating this problem that the backreaction of the pairs created on the field has to be taken into due account. We give the essential references and we will see in Chapter G how indeed this feature becomes of paramount importance in the field of astrophysics. We finally review in Sec. E.2.4 the technological situation attempting to increase both the frequency and the intensity of laser beams.

The difficulty of evidencing the Breit-Wheeler process even when the high energy photon beams have a center-of-mass energy larger than the energy-threshold $2m_e c^2 = 1.02 \text{ MeV}$ was clearly recognized since the early days. In the previous Section we have shown the crucial role of the effective nonlinear terms originating in strong electromagnetic laser fields: the interaction needs not to be limited to initial states of two photons Reiss (1962, 1971). A collective state of many interacting laser photons occurs. We turn then in Sec. E.3 to an even more complex and interesting procedure: the interaction of an ultrarelativistic electron beam with a terawatt laser pulse, performed at SLAC Kotseroglou et al. (1996), when strong electromagnetic fields are involved. A first nonlinear Compton scattering process occurs in which the ultrarelativistic electrons absorb multiple photons from the laser field and emit a single photon via the process (E.3.1). The theory of this process has been given in Sec. C.6. The second is a drastically improved Breit-Wheeler process (E.3.2) by which the high-energy photon γ , created in the first process, propagates through the laser field and interacts with laser photons $n\omega$ to produce an electron-positron pair Burke et al. (1997). In Sec. E.3.1 we describe the status of this very exciting experiments which give the first evidence for the observation in the laboratory of the Breit-Wheeler process although in a somewhat indirect form. Having determined the theoretical basis as well as attempts to verify experimentally the Breit-Wheeler formula we turn in Sec. E.4 to a most important application of the Breit-Wheeler process in the framework of cosmology. As pointed out by Nikishov Nikishov (1961) the existence of background photons in cosmology puts a stringent cutoff on the maximum trajectory of the high energy photons in cosmology.

Having reviewed both the theoretical and observational evidence of the Dirac and Breit-Wheeler processes of creation and annihilation of electron-positron pairs we turn now to one of the most conspicuous field of theoretical and experimental physics dealing with the process of pair electron-positron

pair creation by vacuum polarization in the field of a heavy nuclei. This topic has originated one of the vastest experimental and theoretical physics activities in the last forty years, especially by the process of collisions of heavy ions. We first review in Sec. E.5 the $Z = 137$ catastrophe, a collapse to the center, in semi-classical approach, following the Pomeranchuk work Pomeranchuk and Smorodinskii (1945) based on the imposing the quantum conditions on the classical treatment of the motion of two relativistic particles in circular orbits. We then proceed showing in Sec. E.5.3 how the introduction of the finite size of the nucleus, following the classical work of Popov and Zeldovich Zeldovich and Popov (1971), leads to the critical charge of a nucleus of $Z_{cr} = 173$ above which a bare nucleus would lead to the level crossing between the bound state and negative energy states of electrons in the field of a bare nucleus. We then review in Sec. E.5.5 the recent theoretical progress in analyzing the pair creation process in a Coulomb field, taking into account radial dependence and time variability of electric field. We finally recall in Sec. E.6 the attempt use to heavy-ion collisions to form transient super heavy “quasimolecules”: a long-lived metastable nuclear complex with $Z > Z_{cr}$. It was expected that the two heavy ions of charges respectively Z_1 and Z_2 with $Z_1 + Z_2 > Z_{cr}$ would reach small inter-nuclear distances well within the electron’s orbiting radii. The electrons would not distinguish between the two nuclear centers and they would evolve as if they were bounded by nuclear-“quasimolecules” with nuclear charge $Z_1 + Z_2$. Therefore, it was expected that electrons would evolve quasi statically through a series of well defined nuclear-“quasimolecules” states in the two-center field of the nuclei as the inter-nuclear separation decreases and then increases again. When heavy-ion collision occurs the two nuclei come into contact and some deep inelastic reaction occurs determining the duration Δt_s of this contact. Such “sticking time” is expected to depend on the nuclei involved in the reaction and on the beam energy. Theoretical attempts have been proposed to study the nuclear aspects of heavy-ion collisions at energies very close to the Coulomb barrier and search for conditions, which would serve as a trigger for prolonged nuclear reaction times, to enhance the amplitude of pair production. The sticking time Δt_s should be larger than $1 \sim 2 \cdot 10^{-21}$ sec Greiner and Reinhardt (1999) in order to have significant pair production. Up to now no success has been achieved in justifying theoretically such a long sticking time. In reality the characteristic sticking time has been found of the order of $\Delta t \sim 10^{-23}$ sec, hundred times shorter than the needed to activate the pair creation process. We finally recall in Sec. E.6.2 the Darmstadt-Brookhaven dialogue between the Orange and the Epos groups and the Apex group at Argonne in which the original discovery of electron-positron pair creation by vacuum polarization in heavy-ion collisions was finally retracted. In conclusion, out of the three fundamental processes addressed in this report, the Dirac electron-positron annihilation and the Breit-Wheeler electron-positron creation from two photons have found complete theoretical descriptions within Quantum

Electrodynamics. The first one is very likely the best-tested process in physical science, while the second has finally obtained the first indirect experimental evidence. The third process, the one of the vacuum polarization studied by Sauter, Euler, Heisenberg and Schwinger, presents in Earth-bound experiments presents a situation “terra incognita” (see Appendix E).

3.6.1. The Breit-Wheeler cutoff in high-energy Gamma-rays

The Breit-Wheeler process for the photon-photon pair production is one of most relevant elementary processes in high energy astrophysics (see Sec. E.4). In addition to the importance of this process in dense radiation fields of compact objects (Bonometto and Rees, 1971), the essential role of this process in the context of intergalactic absorption of high-energy γ -rays was first pointed out by Nikishov (Nikishov, 1962; Gould and Schröder, 1967). The spectra of TeV radiation observed from distant ($d > 100$ Mpc) extragalactic objects suffer essential deformation during the passage through the intergalactic medium, caused by energy-dependent absorption of primary γ -rays at interactions with the diffuse extragalactic background radiation, for the optical depth $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}$ most likely significantly exceeding one (Gould and Schröder, 1967; Stecker et al., 1992; Vassiliev, 2000; Coppi and Aharonian, 1999). A relevant broad-band information about the cosmic background radiation (CBR) is important for the interpretation of the observed high-energy γ spectra (Aharonian et al., 2000; Kneiske et al., 2002; Dwek and Krennrich, 2005; Aharonian et al., 2006). For details see Hauser and Dwek (2001); Aharonian (2003). In this section, we are particularly interested in such absorption effect of high-energy γ -ray, originated from cosmological sources, interacting with the Cosmic Microwave Background (CMB) photons. Fazio and Stecker (Fazio and Stecker, 1970; Stecker et al., 1977) were the first who calculated the cutoff energy versus redshift for cosmological γ -rays. This calculation was applied to further study of the optical depth of the Universe to high-energy γ -rays (MacMinn and Primack, 1996; Kneiske et al., 2004; Stecker et al., 2006). With the Fermi telescope, such study turns out to be important to understand the spectrum of high-energy γ -ray originated from GRBs’ sources at cosmological distance, we therefore offer the details of theoretical analysis as follow.

Breit-Wheeler cross-section in arbitrary frame

Breit and Wheeler (1934) studied the process

$$\gamma_1 + \gamma_2 \rightarrow e^+ + e^-, \quad (3.6.1)$$

in the center of mass of the system, the momenta of the electron and positron are equal and opposite $\mathbf{p}_1 = -\mathbf{p}_2$. The same thing holds for the momenta of the photons in the initial state: $\mathbf{k}_1 = -\mathbf{k}_2$. As a consequence, the energies

of electron and positron are equal: $\mathcal{E}_1 = \mathcal{E}_2 = \mathcal{E}$, and so are the energies of the photons: $\hbar\omega_1 = \hbar\omega_2 = \mathcal{E}_\gamma = \mathcal{E}$. They found the total cross-section in the center of mass of the system:

$$\sigma_{\gamma\gamma} = \frac{\pi}{2} \left(\frac{\alpha\hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 (1 - \hat{\beta}^2) \left[2\hat{\beta}(\hat{\beta}^2 - 2) + (3 - \hat{\beta}^4) \ln \left(\frac{1 + \hat{\beta}}{1 - \hat{\beta}} \right) \right], \quad \text{with} \quad \hat{\beta} = \frac{c|\mathbf{p}|}{\mathcal{E}}, \quad (3.6.2)$$

where \mathbf{p} and $\hat{\beta}$ are respectively momentum and the reduced velocity of an electron or positron. The necessary kinematic condition in order for the process (A.0.2) taking place is that the energy of two colliding photons is larger than the energetic threshold $2m_e c^2$, i.e.,

$$\mathcal{E}_\gamma > m_e c^2. \quad (3.6.3)$$

The cross-section in line (A.2.9) can be easily generalized to an arbitrary reference frame \mathcal{K} , in which the two photons k_1 and k_2 are moving in opposite directions; for Lorentz invariance of $(k_1 \cdot k_2)$, one has $\omega_1 \omega_2 = \mathcal{E}_\gamma^2$. Since

$$\mathcal{E}_\gamma = \mathcal{E} = m_e c^2 / \sqrt{1 - \hat{\beta}^2}, \quad (3.6.4)$$

to obtain the total cross-section in the arbitrary frame \mathcal{K} , we must therefore make the following substitution (Landau and Lifshitz, 1975),

$$\hat{\beta} \rightarrow \sqrt{1 - m_e^2 c^4 / (\omega_1 \omega_2)}, \quad (3.6.5)$$

in Eq. (A.2.9). For $\mathcal{E} \gg m_e c^2$, the total effective cross-section is approximately proportional to

$$\sigma_{\gamma\gamma} \simeq \pi \left(\frac{\alpha\hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 \left(\frac{m_e c^2}{\mathcal{E}} \right)^2 = \pi r_e^2 \left(\frac{m_e c^2}{\mathcal{E}} \right)^2, \quad (3.6.6)$$

where $r_e = \left(\frac{\alpha\hbar}{m_e c} \right)$ is the electron classical radius and $\pi r_e^2 \simeq 2.5 \cdot 10^{-25} \text{cm}^2$.

Opacity of high-energy GRB photons colliding with CMB photons

We study the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2) to the case that high-energy GRB photons ω_1 , originated from GRBs sources at cosmological distance z , on their way traveling to us, collide with CMB photons ω_2 in the rest frame of CMB photons, leading to electron-positron pair production. We calculate the opacity and mean free-path of these high-energy GRB photons, find the energy-range of absorption as a function of the cosmological red-shift z .

In general, a high-energy GRB photon with a give energy ω_1 , collides with background photons in all possible energies ω_2 . We assume that i -type back-

ground photons have the spectrum distribution $f_i(\omega_2/T_i)$, where T_i is the characteristic energy scale of the distribution, the opacity is then given by

$$\tau_{\gamma\gamma}^i(\omega_1, z) = \int dr \int_{m_e^2 c^4 / \omega_1}^{\infty} \frac{\omega_2^2 d\omega_2}{\pi^2} f_i(\omega_2/T_i) \sigma_{\gamma\gamma}(\frac{\omega_1 \omega_2}{m_e^2 c^4}), \quad (3.6.7)$$

where $m_e^2 c^4 / \omega_1$ is the energy-threshold (A.2.8) above which the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2) can occurs and the cross-section $\sigma_{\gamma\gamma}(x)$ is given by Eqs. (A.2.9), depending only on $x = \frac{\omega_1 \omega_2}{m_e^2 c^4}$. The total opacity is then given by

$$\tau_{\gamma\gamma}^{\text{total}}(\omega_1, z) = \sum_i \tau_{\gamma\gamma}^i(\omega_1, z), \quad (3.6.8)$$

which the sum is over all types of photon background in the Universe. The high-energy photons traveling path $\int dr$ is given by ,

$$\int_t^{t_0} \frac{dt'}{R(t')} = \int_0^{r(t)} \frac{dr}{(1 - kr^2)^{1/2}} = \int_0^{r(t)} dr, \quad (3.6.9)$$

where $R(t)$ is the scalar factor, t_0 is the present time and t corresponds to epoch of the red-shift z for a flat ($k = 0$) Freemann Universe. Using the relationship $z + 1 = R_0/R(t)$, we change integrand variable from t' to the red-shift z ,

$$dt' = -\frac{dz}{(z' + 1)H(z')}, \quad (3.6.10)$$

so that we have

$$\int_0^{r(t)} dr = \int_t^{t_0} \frac{dt'}{R(t')} = \frac{1}{R_0} \int_0^z \frac{dz}{H(z)}, \quad (3.6.11)$$

where $H(z) = \dot{R}(t)/R(t_0)$ is the Hubble function, obeyed the Friedmann equation

$$H(z) = H_0[\Omega_M(z+1)^3 + \Omega_\Lambda]^{1/2}, \quad \Omega_M + \Omega_\Lambda = 1, \quad (3.6.12)$$

$\Omega_M \simeq 0.3$ and $\Omega_\Lambda \simeq 0.7$.

In the case of CMB photons in a black-body distribution $1/(e^{\omega_2/T} - 1)$ with the temperature T , the opacity is given by

$$\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1, z) = \int dr \int_{m_e^2 c^4 / \omega_1}^{\infty} \frac{d\omega_2}{\pi^2} \frac{\omega_2^2}{e^{\omega_2/T} - 1} \sigma_{\gamma\gamma}(\frac{\omega_1 \omega_2}{m_e^2 c^4}), \quad (3.6.13)$$

where the Boltzmann constant $k_B = 1$. To simply Eq. (E.4.4), we set $x = \frac{\omega_1 \omega_2}{m_e^2 c^4}$,

$$\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1, z) = \int dr \left(\frac{m_e^2 c^4}{\omega_1} \right)^3 \int_1^\infty \frac{dx}{\pi^2} \frac{x^2}{\exp \frac{x m_e^2 c^4}{\omega_1 T} - 1} \sigma_{\gamma\gamma}(x). \quad (3.6.14)$$

In terms of CMB temperature and GRB-photons energy at the present time,

$$T = (z + 1)T^0; \quad \omega_{1,2} = (z + 1)\omega_{1,2}^0, \quad (3.6.15)$$

we obtain,

$$\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) = \frac{1}{R_0} \int_0^z \frac{dz'}{H(z') (z + 1)^3} \left(\frac{m_e^2 c^4}{\omega_1^0} \right)^3 \int_1^\infty \frac{dx}{\pi^2} \frac{x^2}{\exp(x/\theta) - 1} \sigma_{\gamma\gamma}(x), \quad (3.6.16)$$

where

$$\theta = x^0 (z + 1)^2; \quad x^0 = \frac{\omega_1^0 T^0}{m_e^2 c^4}, \quad (3.6.17)$$

and x^0 is the energy ω_1^0 in unit of $m_e c^2 (m_e c^2 / T^0) = 1.15 \cdot 10^{15} \text{eV}$. For the purpose of numerical calculations, we rewrite the expression,

$$\begin{aligned} \tau_{\gamma\gamma}(x^0, z) &= \frac{\pi r_e^2}{R_0 H_0 / c} \left(\frac{T^0}{x^0} \right)^3 \int_0^z \frac{dz'}{[\Omega_M(z' + 1)^3 + \Omega_\Lambda]^{1/2}} \frac{1}{(z' + 1)^3} \int_1^\infty \frac{dx}{2\pi^2} \frac{x^2 f_{\gamma\gamma}(x)}{\exp(x/\theta) - 1}, \\ &= \frac{23.8}{R_0 h} \left(\frac{1}{x^0} \right)^3 \int_0^z \frac{dz'}{[\Omega_M(z' + 1)^3 + \Omega_\Lambda]^{1/2}} \frac{1}{(z' + 1)^3} \int_1^\infty \frac{dx}{2\pi^2} \frac{x^2 f_{\gamma\gamma}(x)}{\exp(x/\theta) - 1} \end{aligned} \quad (3.6.18)$$

where $R_0 = 1$, present Hubble constant $h = H_0 / 100 \text{km/sec/Mpc}$ and

$$f_{\gamma\gamma}(x) = (1 - \hat{\beta}^2) \left[2\hat{\beta}(\hat{\beta}^2 - 2) + (3 - \hat{\beta}^4) \ln \left(\frac{1 + \hat{\beta}}{1 - \hat{\beta}} \right) \right], \quad \hat{\beta} = \sqrt{1 - 1/x}.$$

The $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) = 1$ give the relationship $\omega_1^0 = \omega_1^0(z)$ that separates the absorbed regime $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) > 1$ and transparent regime $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) < 1$ in the $\omega_1^0 - z$ plane.

The numerical result is shown in Fig. E.4. It clearly shows the following properties:

1. for the redshift z smaller than a critical value $z_c \simeq 0.1$ ($z < z_c$), the CMB photons are transparent $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) < 1$ to GRB photons in any energy bands, this indicates a minimal mean-free path of photons traveling in CMB photons background;
2. for the redshift z larger than the value ($z > z_c$), there are two branches of solutions for $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) = 1$, respectively corresponding to the dif-

ferent energy-dependence of the cross-section (A.2.9): the cross-section increases with the center-mass-energy $x = \mathcal{E}_\gamma^2 / (m_e c^2)^2$ from the energy-threshold $x = 1$ to $x \simeq 1.99$, and decreases (A.2.10) from $x \simeq 1.99$ to $x \rightarrow \infty$. The turn point ($z \simeq 0.1, \omega_1^0 \simeq 1.15 \cdot 10^{15} \text{eV}$) from one solution to another is determined by the maximal cross-section at $x \simeq 1.99$. Due to these two solutions, CMB photons are transparent to GRB photons of large and small energies, opaque to those GRB photons in an intermediate energy-range large for a given finite z -value;

3. CMB photons are transparent to very low-energy GRB photons $\omega_1^0 < 10^{12} \text{eV}$, i.e., $x^0 < 10^{-3}$, due to their energies are below the energetic threshold for the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2). In addition, CMB photons are transparent to very large-energy GRB photons $\omega_1^0 > 10^{18} \text{eV}$, i.e., $x^0 > 10^3$, due to the cross-section of Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2) is very small for extremely high-energy photons. For very large $z \sim 10^3$, the Universe becomes completely opaque and photon distribution cannot be described by the black body spectrum, we disregard this regime.

Due to the fact that there are other radiation backgrounds (E.4.1), the background of CMB photons gives the lowest bound of opacity, absorption limit, to GRB photons with respect to the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2). Finally, we point out that Fazio and Stecker (Fazio and Stecker, 1970; Stecker et al., 1977) gave only asymptotic form of small-energy solution indicated in Fig. (E.4).

3.7. The extraction of blackholic energy from a black hole by vacuum polarization processes

In Chapter F we turn then to astrophysics, where, in the process of gravitational collapse to a black hole and in its outcomes these three processes will be for the first time verified on a much larger scale, involving particle numbers of the order of 10^{60} , seeing both the Dirac process and the Breit-Wheeler process at work in symbiotic form and electron-positron plasma created from the “blackholic energy” during the process of gravitational collapse. It is becoming more and more clear that the gravitational collapse process to a Kerr-Newman black hole is possibly the most complex problem ever addressed in physics and astrophysics. What is most important for this report is that it gives for the first time the opportunity to see the above three processes simultaneously at work under ultrarelativistic special and general relativistic regimes. The process of gravitational collapse is characterized by the timescale $\Delta t_g = GM/c^3 \simeq 5 \cdot 10^{-6} M/M_\odot \text{ sec}$ and the energy involved are of the order of $\Delta E = 10^{54} M/M_\odot \text{ ergs}$. It is clear that this is one of the most energetic and most transient phenomena in physics and astrophysics and needs for its correct description such a highly time varying treatment.

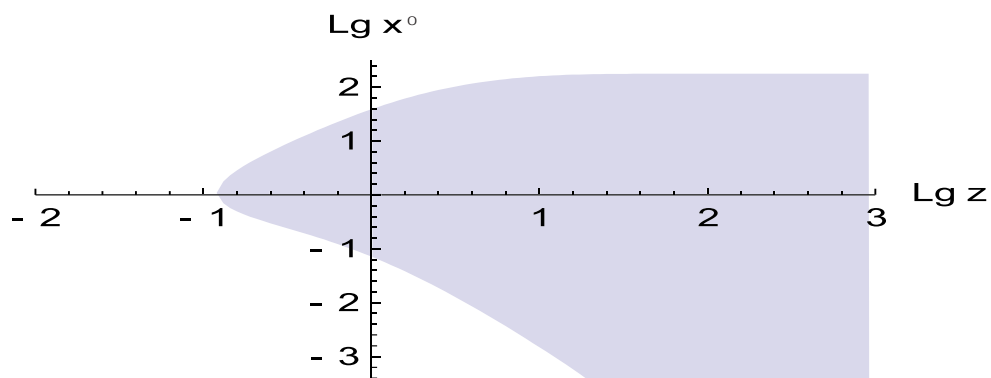


Figure 3.1.: This is a Log-Log plot for GRB photon energy x^0 (in unit of $1.11 \cdot 10^{15}$) vs redshift z . For $z > z_c \simeq 0.1$, the line that bounds shadow area indicates two solutions for the opacity $\tau_{\gamma\gamma} = 1$: (i) large-energy solution for $\omega_1^0 > 1.15 \cdot 10^{15} \text{eV}$; (ii) small-energy solution for $\omega_1^0 < 1.15 \cdot 10^{15} \text{eV}$, which separate the optically thick regime (shadow area) $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) > 1$ and optically thin regime $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) < 1$.

Our approach in Chapter F is to gain understanding of this process by separating the different components and describing 1) the basic energetic process of an already formed black hole, 2) the vacuum polarization process of an already formed black hole, 3) the basic formula of the gravitational collapse recovering the Tolman-Oppenheimer-Snyder solutions and evolving to the gravitational collapse of charged and uncharged shells. This will allow among others to obtain a better understanding of the role of irreducible mass of the black hole and the maximum blackholic energy extractable from the gravitational collapse. We will as well address some conceptual issues between general relativity and thermodynamics which have been of interest to theoretical physicists in the last forty years. Of course in these brief chapter we will be only recalling some of these essential themes and refer to the literature where in-depth analysis can be found. In Sec. F.1 we recall the Kerr-Newman metric and the associated electromagnetic field. We then recall the classical work of Carter (1968) integrating the Hamilton-Jacobi equations for charged particle motions in the above given metric and electromagnetic field. We then recall in Sec. F.2 the introduction of the effective potential techniques in order to obtain explicit expression for the trajectory of a particle in a Kerr-Newman geometry, and especially the introduction of the reversible-irreversible transformations which led then to the Christodoulou-Ruffini mass formula of the black hole

$$M^2 c^4 = \left(M_{\text{ir}} c^2 + \frac{c^2 Q^2}{4GM_{\text{ir}}} \right)^2 + \frac{L^2 c^8}{4G^2 M_{\text{ir}}^2},$$

where M_{ir} is the irreducible mass of a black hole, Q and L are its charge and angular momentum. We then recall in Sec. F.3 the positive and negative root states of the Hamilton-Jacobi equations as well as their quantum limit. We finally introduce in Sec. F.4 the vacuum polarization process in the Kerr-Newman geometry as derived by Damour and Ruffini (1975) by using a spatially orthonormal tetrad which made the application of the Schwinger formalism in this general relativistic treatment almost straightforward. We then recall in Sec. F.5 the definition of a Dyadosphere in a Reissner-Nordström geometry, a region extending from the horizon radius

$$r_+ = 1.47 \cdot 10^5 \mu (1 + \sqrt{1 - \xi^2}) \text{ cm}$$

out to an outer radius

$$\begin{aligned} r^* &= \left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c} \right)^{1/2} \left(\frac{GM}{c^2} \right)^{1/2} \left(\frac{m_p}{m_e} \right)^{1/2} \left(\frac{e}{q_p} \right)^{1/2} \left(\frac{Q}{\sqrt{GM}} \right)^{1/2} = \\ &= 1.12 \cdot 10^8 \sqrt{\mu \xi} \text{ cm}, \end{aligned}$$

where the dimensionless mass and charge parameters $\mu = \frac{M}{M_\odot}$, $\xi = \frac{Q}{(M\sqrt{G})} \leq 1$. In Sec. F.6 the definition of a Dyadotorus in a Kerr-Newman metric is recalled. We have focused on the theoretically well defined problem of pair creation in the electric field of an already formed black hole. Having set the background for the blackholc energy we recall some fundamental features of the dynamical process of the gravitational collapse. In Sec. F.7 we address some specific issues on the dynamical formation of the black hole, recalling first the Oppenheimer-Snyder solution Oppenheimer and Snyder (1939) and then considering its generalization to the charged non-rotating case using the classical work of W. Israel and V. de la Cruz Israel (1966); De la Cruz and Israel (1967). In Sec. F.7.1 we recover the classical Tolman-Oppenheimer-Snyder solution in a more transparent way than it is usually done in the literature. In the Sec. F.7.2 we are studying using the Israel-de la Cruz formalism the collapse of a charged shell to a black hole for selected cases of a charged shell collapsing on itself or collapsing in an already formed Reissner- Nordström black hole. Such elegant and powerful formalism has allowed to obtain for the first time all the analytic equations for such large variety of possibilities of the process of the gravitational collapse. The theoretical analysis of the collapsing shell considered in the previous section allows to reach a deeper understanding of the mass formula of black holes at least in the case of a Reissner- Nordström black hole. This allows as well to give in Sec. F.8 an expression of the irreducible mass of the black hole only in terms of its kinetic energy of the initial rest mass undergoing gravitational collapse and its gravitational energy and kinetic energy T_+ at the crossing of the black hole horizon r_+

$$M_{\text{ir}} = M_0 - \frac{M_0^2}{2r_+} + T_+.$$

Similarly strong, in view of their generality, are the considerations in Sec. F.8.2 which indicate a sharp difference between the vacuum polarization process in an overcritical $E \gg E_c$ and undercritical $E \ll E_c$ black hole. For $E \gg E_c$ the electron-positron plasma created will be optically thick with average particle energy 10 MeV. For $E \ll E_c$ the process of the radiation will be optically thin and the characteristic energy will be of the order of 10^{21} eV. This argument will be further developed in a forthcoming report. In Sec. F.9 we show how the expression of the irreducible mass obtained in the previous Section leads to a theorem establishing an upper limit to 50% of the total mass energy initially at rest at infinity which can be extracted from any process of gravitational collapse independent of the details. These results also lead to some general considerations which have been sometimes claimed in reconciling general relativity and thermodynamics (see Appendix F).

3.8. Plasma oscillations in electric fields

In Chapter G we discuss that the conditions encountered in the vacuum polarization process around black holes lead to a number of electron-positron pairs created of the order of 10^{60} confined in the Dyadosphere volume, of the order of a few hundred times to the horizon of the black hole. Under these conditions the plasma is expected to be optically thick and is very different from the nuclear collisions and laser case where pairs are very few and therefore optically thin. We turn then in Chapter G, to discuss a new phenomenon: the plasma oscillations, following the dynamical evolution of pair production in an external electric field close to the critical value. In particular, we will examine: i) the back reaction of pair production on the external electric field; ii) the screening effect of pairs on the electric field; iii) the motion of pairs and their interactions with the created photon fields. In Secs. G.1 and G.2, we review semi-classical and kinetic theories describing the plasma oscillations using respectively the Dirac-Maxwell equations and the Boltzmann-Vlasov equations. The electron-positron pairs, after they are created, coherently oscillate back and forth giving origin to an oscillating electric field. The oscillations lasting for at least a few hundred Compton times. We review the damping due to the quantum decoherence. The energy from collective motion of the classical electric field and pairs flows to the quantum fluctuations of these fields. This process is quantitatively discussed by using the quantum Boltzmann-Vlasov equation in Secs. G.4 and G.5. The damping due to collision decoherence is quantitatively discussed in Secs. G.6 and G.7 by using Boltzmann-Vlasov equation with particle collisions terms. This damping determines the energy flows from collective motion of the classical electric field and pairs to the kinetic energy of non-collective motion of particles of these fields due to collisions. In Sec. G.7, we particularly address the study of the influence of the collision processes $e^+e^- \rightleftharpoons \gamma\gamma$ on the plasma oscillations in supercritical electric field Ruffini et al. (2003c). It is shown that the plasma oscillation is mildly affected by a small number of photons creation in the early evolution during a few hundred Compton times (see Fig. G.4). In the later evolution of 10^3 – 10^4 Compton times, the oscillating electric field is damped to its critical value with a large number of photons created. An equipartition of number and energy between electron-positron pairs and photons is reached (see Fig. G.4). In Sec. G.8, we introduce an approach based on the following three equations: the number density continuity equation, the energy-momentum conservation equation and the Maxwell equations. We describe the plasma oscillation for both over critical electric field $E > E_c$ and under critical electric field $E < E_c$ Ruffini et al. (2007b). In addition of reviewing the result well known in the literature for $E > E_c$ we review some novel result for the case $E < E_c$. It was traditionally assumed that electron-positron pairs, created by the vacuum polarization process, move as charged particles in external uniform electric field reaching arbitrary large Lorentz factors. It

is reviewed how recent computations show the existence of plasma oscillations of the electron-positron pairs also for $E \lesssim E_c$. For both cases we quote the maximum Lorentz factors γ_{\max} reached by the electrons and positrons as well as the length of oscillations. Two specific cases are given. For $E_0 = 10E_c$ the length of oscillations $10 \hbar/(m_e c)$, and $E_0 = 0.15E_c$ the length of oscillations $10^7 \hbar/(m_e c)$. We also review the asymptotic behavior in time, $t \rightarrow \infty$, of the plasma oscillations by the phase portrait technique. Finally we review some recent results which differentiate the case $E > E_c$ from the one $E < E_c$ with respect to the creation of the rest mass of the pair versus their kinetic energy. For $E > E_c$ the vacuum polarization process transforms the electromagnetic energy of the field mainly in the rest mass of pairs, with moderate contribution to their kinetic energy (see Appendix G).

3.9. Thermalization of the mildly relativistic pair plasma

We then turn in Chapter H to the last physical process needed in ascertaining the reaching of equilibrium of an optically thick electron-positron plasma. The average energy of electrons and positrons we illustrate are $0.1 < \epsilon < 10$ MeV. These bounds are necessary from the one hand to have significant amount of electron-positron pairs to make the plasma optically thick, and from the other hand to avoid production of other particles such as muons. As we will see in the next report these are indeed the relevant parameters for the creation of ultrarelativistic regimes to be encountered in pair creation process during the formation phase of a black hole. They are also relevant for the physics of GRBs and active galactic nuclei. We then review the problem of evolution of optically thick, nonequilibrium electron-positron plasma, towards an equilibrium state, following Aksenov et al. (2007, 2008). These results have been mainly obtained by two of us (RR and GV) in recent publications and all relevant previous results are also reviewed in this Chapter H. We have integrating directly relativistic Boltzmann equations with all binary and triple interactions between electrons, positrons and photons two kinds of equilibrium are found: kinetic and thermal ones. Kinetic equilibrium is obtained on a timescale of few $(\sigma_T n_{\pm} c)^{-1}$, where σ_T and n_{\pm} are Thomson's cross-section and electron-positron concentrations respectively, when detailed balance is established between all binary interactions in plasma. Thermal equilibrium is reached on a timescale of few $(\alpha \sigma_T n_{\pm} c)^{-1}$, when all binary and triple, direct and inverse interactions are balanced. In Sec. H.1 basic plasma parameters are illustrated. The computational scheme as well as the discretization procedure are discussed in Sec. H.2. Relevant conservation laws are given in Sec. H.3. Details on binary interactions, consisting of Compton, Møller and Bhabha scatterings, Dirac pair annihilation and Breit-

Wheeler pair creation processes, and triple interactions, consisting of relativistic bremsstrahlung, double Compton process, radiative pair production and three-photon annihilation process, are presented in Sec. H.5 and H.6, respectively. In Sec. H.5 collisional integrals with binary interactions are computed from first principles, using QED matrix elements. In Sec. H.7 Coulomb scattering and the corresponding cutoff in collisional integrals are discussed. Numerical results are presented in Sec. H.8 where the time dependence of energy and number densities as well as chemical potential and temperature of electron-positron-photon plasma is shown, together with particle spectra. The most interesting result of this analysis is to have differentiated the role of binary and triple interactions. The detailed balance in binary interactions following the classical work of Ehlers (1973) leads to a distribution function of the form of the Fermi-Dirac for electron-positron pairs or of the Bose-Einstein for the photons. This is the reason we refer in the text to such conditions as the Ehlers equilibrium conditions. The crucial role of the direct and inverse three-body interactions is well summarized in fig. H.1, panel A from which it is clear that the inverse three-body interactions are essential in reaching thermal equilibrium. If the latter are neglected, the system deflates to the creation of electron-positron pairs all the way down to the threshold of 0.5 MeV. This last result which is referred to as the Cavallo-Rees scenario is simply due to improper neglect of the inverse triple reaction terms (see Appendix H).

4. Publications (before 2005)

1. R. Ruffini and J. A. Wheeler, "Introducing the black hole ", *Phys. Today*, January (1971) 178.

This article proved to be popular and was written with the intention of communicating some of the major processes made in understanding the final configurations of collapsed stars to the largest possible audience. In this article, the authors summarized the results of their students' work with particular emphasis on the work of D. Christodoulou (graduate student of R. Ruffini's at that time) together with some of their most significant new results. Moreover, it was emphasized that of all the procedures for identifying a collapsed object in space at a great distance, the most promising consisted of analyzing a close binary system in which one member is a normal star and the other a black hole. The X-ray emission associated with the transfer of material from the normal star to the collapsed object would then be of greatest importance in determining the properties of the collapsed object. This article has been reprinted many times and has been translated into many languages (Japanese, Russian, and Greek, among others). It has created much interest in the final configuration of stars after the endpoint of their thermonuclear evolution. The analysis of the possible processes leading to the formation of a black hole, via either a one-step process or a multistep process, was also presented for the first time in this article.

2. D. Christodoulou and R. Ruffini, "Reversible Transformations of a Charged Black Hole", *Phys. Rev. D* 4 (1971) 3552.

A formula is derived for the mass of a black hole as a function of its "irreducible mass," its angular momentum, and its charge. It is shown that 50% of the mass of an extreme charged black hole can be converted into energy as contrasted with 29% for an extreme rotating black hole.

3. T. Damour and R. Ruffini, "Quantum electrodynamical effects in Kerr-Newman geometries", *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 35 (1975) 463.

Following the classical approach of Sauter, of Heisenberg and Euler and of Schwinger the process of vacuum polarization in the field of a "bare" Kerr-Newman geometry is studied. The value of the critical strength of the electromagnetic fields is given together with an analysis of the feedback of the discharge on the geometry. The relevance of this analysis for current astrophysical observations is mentioned.

4. J. Ferreira, R. Ruffini and L. Stella, "On the relativistic Thomas-Fermi model", Phys. Lett. B 91, (1980) 314. The relativistic generalization of the Thomas-Fermi model of the atom is derived. It approaches the usual nonrelativistic equation in the limit $Z \ll Z_{\text{crit}}$, where Z is the total number of electrons of the atom and $Z_{\text{crit}} = (3\pi/4)^{1/2}\alpha^{-3/2}$ and α is the fine structure constant. The new equation leads to the breakdown of scaling laws and to the appearance of a critical charge, purely as a consequence of relativistic effects. These results are compared and contrasted with those corresponding to N self-gravitating degenerate relativistic fermions, which for $N \approx N_{\text{crit}} = (3\pi/4)^{1/2}(m/m_p)^3$ give rise to the concept of a critical mass against gravitational collapse. Here m is the mass of the fermion and $m_p = (\hbar c/G)^{1/2}$ is the Planck mass.
5. R. Ruffini and L. Stella, "Some comments on the relativistic Thomas-Fermi model and the Vallarta-Rosen equation", Phys. Lett. B 102 (1981) 442. Some basic differences between the screening of the nuclear charge due to a relativistic cloud of electrons in a neutral atom and the screening due to vacuum polarization effects induced by a superheavy ion are discussed.
6. G. Preparata, R. Ruffini and S.-S. Xue, "The dyadosphere of black holes and gamma-ray bursts", Astron. Astroph. Lett. 337 (1998) L3.

The "dyadosphere" has been defined (Ruffini, Preparata et al.) as the region outside the horizon of a black hole endowed with an electromagnetic field (abbreviated to EMBH for "electromagnetic black hole") where the electromagnetic field exceeds the critical value, predicted by Heisenberg & Euler for e^+e^- pair production. In a very short time ($\sim O(\hbar/(mc^2))$), a very large number of pairs is created there. We here give limits on the EMBH parameters leading to a Dyadosphere for $10M_\odot$ and 10^5M_\odot EMBH's, and give as well the pair densities as functions of the radial coordinate. We here assume that the pairs reach thermodynamic equilibrium with a photon gas and estimate the average energy per pair as a function of the EMBH mass. These data give the initial conditions for the analysis of an enormous pair-electromagnetic-pulse or "P.E.M. pulse" which naturally leads to relativistic expansion. Basic energy requirements for gamma ray bursts (GRB), including GRB971214 recently observed at $z = 3.4$, can be accounted for by processes occurring in the dyadosphere. In this letter we do not address the problem of forming either the EMBH or the dyadosphere: we establish some inequalities which must be satisfied during their formation process.

7. R. Ruffini, "On the dyadosphere of black holes", at the XLIXth Yamada Conference on "Black Holes and High-Energy Astrophysics", H. Sato Ed., Univ. Acad. Press, Tokyo, 1998.

The "dyadosphere" (from the Greek word "duas-duados" for pairs) is here defined as the region outside the horizon of a black hole endowed with an electromagnetic field (abbreviated to EMBH for "electromagnetic black hole")

where the electromagnetic field exceeds the critical value, predicted by Heisenberg and Euler for electron-positron pair production. In a very short time, a very large number of pairs is created there. I give limits on the EMBH parameters leading to a Dyadosphere for 10 solar mass and 100000 solar mass EMBH's, and give as well the pair densities as functions of the radial coordinate. These data give the initial conditions for the analysis of an enormous pair-electromagnetic-pulse or "PEM-pulse" which naturally leads to relativistic expansion. Basic energy requirements for gamma ray bursts (GRB), including GRB971214 recently observed at $z=3.4$, can be accounted for by processes occurring in the dyadosphere.

8. R. Ruffini, J. D. Salmonson, J. R. Wilson and S.-S. Xue, "On the Pair Electromagnetic Pulse of a Black Hole with Electromagnetic Structure", *Astron. Astroph.* 350 (1999) 334.

Starting from a nonequilibrium configuration we analyse the essential role of the direct and the inverse binary and triple interactions in reaching an asymptotic thermal equilibrium in a homogeneous isotropic electron-positron-photon plasma. We focus on energies in the range 0.1–10 MeV. We numerically integrate the integro-partial differential relativistic Boltzmann equation with the exact QED collisional integrals taking into account all binary and triple interactions in the plasma. We show that first, when detailed balance is reached for all binary interactions on a timescale $t_k \lesssim 10^{-14}$ sec, photons and electron-positron pairs establish kinetic equilibrium. Successively, when triple interactions fulfill the detailed balance on a timescale $t_{eq} \lesssim 10^{-12}$ sec, the plasma reaches thermal equilibrium. It is shown that neglecting the inverse triple interactions prevents reaching thermal equilibrium. Our results obtained in the theoretical physics domain also find application in astrophysics and cosmology.

9. R. Ruffini, J. D. Salmonson, J. R. Wilson and S.-S. Xue, "On Evolution of the Pair-Electromagnetic Pulse of a Charge Black Hole ", *Astron. Astrophys. Suppl. Ser.* 138 (1999) 511.

Using hydrodynamic computer codes, we study the possible patterns of relativistic expansion of an enormous pair-electromagnetic-pulse (P.E.M. pulse); a hot, high density plasma composed of photons, electron-positron pairs and baryons deposited near a charged black hole (EMBH). On the bases of baryon-loading and energy conservation, we study the bulk Lorentz factor of expansion of the P.E.M. pulse by both numerical and analytical methods.

10. R. Ruffini, J. D. Salmonson, J. R. Wilson and S.-S. Xue, "On the pair-electromagnetic pulse from an electromagnetic Black Hole surrounded by a Baryonic Remnant ", *Astron. Astrophys* 359, 855-864 (2000).

The interaction of an expanding Pair-Electromagnetic pulse (PEM pulse) with a shell of baryonic matter surrounding a Black Hole with electromagnetic struc-

ture (EMBH) is analyzed for selected values of the baryonic mass at selected distances well outside the dyadosphere of an EMBH. The dyadosphere, the region in which a super critical field exists for the creation of electron-positron pairs, is here considered in the special case of a Reissner-Nordstrom geometry. The interaction of the PEM pulse with the baryonic matter is described using a simplified model of a slab of constant thickness in the laboratory frame (constant-thickness approximation) as well as performing the integration of the general relativistic hydrodynamical equations. The validation of the constant-thickness approximation, already presented in a previous paper Ruffini, et al.(1999) for a PEM pulse in vacuum, is here generalized to the presence of baryonic matter. It is found that for a baryonic shell of mass-energy less than 1% of the total energy of the dyadosphere, the constant-thickness approximation is in excellent agreement with full general relativistic computations. The approximation breaks down for larger values of the baryonic shell mass, however such cases are of less interest for observed Gamma Ray Bursts (GRBs). On the basis of numerical computations of the slab model for PEM pulses, we describe (i) the properties of relativistic evolution of a PEM pulse colliding with a baryonic shell; (ii) the details of the expected emission energy and observed temperature of the associated GRBs for a given value of the EMBH mass; 10^3 solar masses, and for baryonic mass-energies in the range 10^{-8} to 10^{-2} the total energy of the dyadosphere.

11. G. Preparata, R. Ruffini and S.-S. Xue, "The role of the screen factor in GRBs ", *Il Nuovo Cimento B*115 (2000) 915.

We derive the screen factor for the radiation flux from an optically thick plasma of electron-positron pairs and photons, created by vacuum polarization process around a black hole endowed with electromagnetic structure.

12. C. L. Bianco, R. Ruffini and S.-S. Xue, "The elementary spike produced by a pure e^+e^- pair-electromagnetic pulse from a Black Hole: The PEM Pulse ", *Astron. Astrophys.* 368 (2001) 377.

In the framework of the model that uses black holes endowed with electromagnetic structure (EMBH) as the energy source, we study how an elementary spike appears to the detectors. We consider the simplest possible case of a pulse produced by a pure e^+e^- pair-electro-magnetic plasma, the PEM pulse, in the absence of any baryonic matter. The resulting time profiles show a *Fast-Rise-Exponential-Decay* shape, followed by a power-law tail. This is obtained without any special fitting procedure, but only by fixing the energetics of the process taking place in a given EMBH of selected mass, varying in the range from 10 to $10^3 M_\odot$ and considering the relativistic effects to be expected in an electron-positron plasma gradually reaching transparency. Special attention is given to the contributions from all regimes with Lorentz γ factor varying from $\gamma = 1$ to $\gamma = 10^4$ in a few hundreds of the PEM pulse travel time. Although the main goal of this paper is to obtain the elementary spike intensity as a function

of the arrival time, and its observed duration, some qualitative considerations are also presented regarding the expected spectrum and on its departure from the thermal one. The results of this paper will be comparable, when data will become available, with a subfamily of particularly short GRBs not followed by any afterglow. They can also be propedeutical to the study of longer bursts in presence of baryonic matter currently observed in GRBs.

13. R. Ruffini and L. Vitagliano, "Irreducible mass and energetics of an electromagnetic black hole ", *Phys. Lett. B*545 (2002) 233.

The mass-energy formula for a black hole endowed with electromagnetic structure (EMBH) is clarified for the nonrotating case. The irreducible mass M_{irr} is found to be independent of the electromagnetic field and explicitly expressible as a function of the rest mass, the gravitational energy and the kinetic energy of the collapsing matter at the horizon. The electromagnetic energy is distributed throughout the entire region extending from the horizon of the EMBH to infinity. We discuss two conceptually different mechanisms of energy extraction occurring respectively in an EMBH with electromagnetic fields smaller and larger than the critical field for vacuum polarization. For a subcritical EMBH the energy extraction mechanism involves a sequence of discrete elementary processes implying the decay of a particle into two oppositely charged particles. For a supercritical EMBH an alternative mechanism is at work involving an electron-positron plasma created by vacuum polarization. The energetics of these mechanisms as well as the definition of the spatial regions in which they can occur are given. The physical implementations of these ideas are outlined for ultrahigh energy cosmic rays (UHECR) and gamma ray bursts (GRBs).

14. C. Cherubini, R. Ruffini and L. Vitagliano, "On the electromagnetic field of a charged collapsing spherical shell in general relativity ", *Phys. Lett. B*545 (2002) 226.

A new exact solution of the Einstein-Maxwell equations for the gravitational collapse of a shell of matter in an already formed black hole is given. Both the shell and the black hole are endowed with electromagnetic structure and are assumed spherically symmetric. Implications for current research are outlined.

15. R. Ruffini, L. Vitagliano and S.-S. Xue, "On Plasma Oscillations in Strong Electric Fields ", *Phys. Lett. B*559 (2003) 12.

We describe the creation and evolution of electron-positron pairs in a strong electric field as well as the pairs annihilation into photons. The formalism is based on generalized Vlasov equations, which are numerically integrated. We recover previous results about the oscillations of the charges, discuss the electric field screening and the relaxation of the system to a thermal equilibrium configuration. The timescale of the thermalization is estimated to be $\sim 10^3 - 10^4 \hbar / m_e c^2$.

16. R. Ruffini, L. Vitagliano and S.-S. Xue, "electron-positron-photon plasma around a collapsing star ", (invited talk) in Proc. of the 28th Joint ICFA Conference on Quantum Aspects of Beam Physics and Other Critical Issues of Beams in Physics and Astrophysics, January 7–11, 2003, Hiroshima University, Higashi-Hiroshima, Japan, Pisin Chen Ed., World Scientific, Singapore.

We describe electron-positron pairs creation around an electrically charged star core collapsing to an electromagnetic black hole (EMBH), as well as pairs annihilation into photons. We use the kinetic Vlasov equation formalism for the pairs and photons and show that a regime of plasma oscillations is established around the core. As a byproduct of our analysis we can provide an estimate for the thermalization time scale.

17. G. Preparata, R. Ruffini and S.-S. Xue, "On the Dyadosphere of Black Hole", J. Korean Phys.Soc. 42 (2003) S99-S104 (astro-ph/0204080).

Basic energy requirements of Gamma Ray Burst (GRB) sources can be easily accounted for by a pair creation process occurring in the "Dyadosphere" of a Black Hole endowed with an electromagnetic field (abbreviated to EMBH for "electromagnetic Black Hole"). This includes the recent observations of GRB971214 by Kulkarni et al. The "Dyadosphere" is defined as the region outside the horizon of an EMBH where the electromagnetic field exceeds the critical value for e^+e^- pair production. In a very short time $\sim O(\hbar mc^2)$, very large numbers of pairs are created there. Further evolution then leads naturally to a relativistically expanding pair-electromagnetic-pulse (PEM-pulse). Specific examples of Dyadosphere parameters are given for 10 and 10^5 solar mass EMBH's. This process does occur for EMBH with charge-to-mass ratio larger than $2.2 \cdot 10^{-5}$ and strictly smaller than one. From a fundamental point of view, this process represents the first mechanism proved capable of extracting large amounts of energy from a Black Hole with an extremely high efficiency (close to 100%).

18. R. Ruffini and L. Vitagliano, "Energy Extraction From Gravitational Collapse to Static Black Holes ", Int. J. Mod. Phys. D12 (2003) 121.

The mass-energy formula of black holes implies that up to 50% of the energy can be extracted from a static black hole. Such a result is reexamined using the recently established analytic formulas for the collapse of a shell and expression for the irreducible mass of a static black hole. It is shown that the efficiency of energy extraction process during the formation of the black hole is linked in an essential way to the gravitational binding energy, the formation of the horizon and the reduction of the kinetic energy of implosion. Here a maximum efficiency of 50% in the extraction of the mass energy is shown to be generally attainable in the collapse of a spherically symmetric shell: surprisingly this result holds as well in the two limiting cases of the Schwarzschild and extreme

Reissner-Nordström space-times. Moreover, the analytic expression recently found for the implosion of a spherical shell onto an already formed black hole leads to a new exact analytic expression for the energy extraction which results in an efficiency strictly less than 100% for any physical implementable process. There appears to be no incompatibility between General Relativity and Thermodynamics at this classical level.

5. Publications (2005-2008)

1. R. Ruffini, F. Fraschetti, L. Vitagliano and S.-S. Xue, "Observational signatures of an electromagnetic overcritical gravitational collapse ", Int. Journ. Mod. Phys. D14 (2005) 131.

We present theoretical predictions for the spectral, temporal and intensity signatures of the electromagnetic radiation emitted during the process of the gravitational collapse of a stellar core to a black hole, during which electromagnetic field strengths rise over the critical value for e^+e^- pair creation. The last phases of this gravitational collapse are studied, leading to the formation of a black hole with a subcritical electromagnetic field, likely with zero charge, and an outgoing pulse of initially optically thick e^+e^- -photon plasma. Such a pulse reaches transparency at Lorentz gamma factors of 10^2 – 10^4 . We find a clear signature in the outgoing electromagnetic signal, drifting from a soft to a hard spectrum, on very precise time-scales and with a very specific intensity modulation. The relevance of these theoretical results for the understanding of short gamma-ray bursts is outlined.

2. Federico Fraschetti, Remo Ruffini, Luca Vitagliano, and She-Sheng Xue "Theoretical predictions of spectral evolution of short GRBs ", in Venice (Italy), June 5-9, 2006, IL NUOVO CIMENTO Vol. 121 (2006) 1477.

We present the properties of spectrum of radiation emitted during gravitational collapse in which electromagnetic field strengths rise over the critical value for e^+e^- pair creation. A drift from soft to a hard energy and a high energy cut off have been found; a comparison with a pure black body spectrum is outlined.

3. R. Ruffini and S.-S. Xue, "Effective Lagrangian of QED", Journal of the Korean physical society, Vol. 49, No. 2, august 2006, pp. 715.

From the Euler-Heisenberg formula we calculate the exact real part of the one-loop effective Lagrangian of Quantum Electrodynamics in a constant electromagnetic field, and determine its strong-field limit.

4. R. Ruffini and S.-S. Xue, "Electron-positron pairs production in an electric potential of massive cores", submitted to Phys. Lett. B (2008).

Classical and semi-classical energy states of relativistic electrons bounded by a massive and charged core with the charge-mass-radius Q/M and macroscopic radius R_c are discussed. We show that the energies of semi-classical (bound)

states can be much smaller than the negative electron mass-energy ($-mc^2$), and energy-level crossing to negative energy continuum occurs. Electron-positron pair production takes place by quantum tunneling, if these bound states are not occupied. Electrons fill into these bound states and positrons go to infinity. We explicitly calculate the rate of pair-production, and compare it with the rates of electron-positron production by the Sauter-Euler-Heisenberg-Schwinger in a constant electric field. In addition, the pair-production rate for the electro-gravitational balance ratio $Q/M = 10^{-19}$ is much larger than the pair-production rate due to the Hawking processes. We point out that in neutral cores with equal proton and electron numbers, the configuration of relativistic electrons in these semi-classical (bound) states should be stabilized by photon emissions.

5. C. Cherubini, A. Geralico, J. Rueda and R. Ruffini, "On the "Dyadotorus" of Kerr-Newman space time ", AIP Conf. Proceeding (2008).

We present the geometrical properties of the region where vacuum polarization precess occur in the Kerr-Newman space time. We find that the shape of the region can be ellipsoid-like or torus-like depending on the charge of the black hole.

6. H. Kleinert, R. Ruffini and S.-S. Xue, "Electron-positron pair-production in nonuniform electric fields", Phys. Rev. D 78 (2008) 025011.

Treating the production of electron and positron pairs in vacuum as quantum tunneling, at the semiclassical level $O(\hbar)$, we derive a general expression, both exponential and pre-exponential factors, of the pair-production rate in nonuniform electric fields varying only in one direction. In particular we discuss the expression for the case when produced electrons (or positrons) fill into bound states of electric potentials with discrete spectra of energy-level crossings. This expression is applied to the examples of the confined field $E(z) \neq 0, |z| \lesssim \ell$, half-confined field $E(z) \neq 0, z \gtrsim 0$, and linear increasing field $E(z) \sim z$, as well as the Coulomb field $E(r) = eZ/r^2$ for a nucleus with finite size r_n and large $Z \gg 1$.

7. R. Ruffini, G. V. Vereshchagin and S.-S. Xue, "Vacuum polarization and plasma oscillations", Phys. Lett. A 371(2007) 399 (arXiv:0706.4363).

We evidence the existence of plasma oscillations of electrons-positron pairs created by the vacuum polarization in an uniform electric field with $E < E_c$. Our general treatment, encompassing also the traditional, well studied case of $E > E_c$, shows the existence in both cases of a maximum Lorentz factor acquired by electrons and positrons and allows determination of the a maximal length of oscillation. We quantitatively estimate how plasma oscillations reduce the rate of pair creation and increase the time scale of the pair production. These results are particularly relevant in view of the experimental progress in approaching the field strengths $E < E_c$.

8. A. G. Aksenov, R. Ruffini, and G. V. Vereshchagin, "Thermalization of a nonequilibrium electron-positron-photon plasma ", *Phys.Rev.Lett.* 99 (2007) 125003 .

Starting from a nonequilibrium configuration we analyse the essential role of the direct and the inverse binary and triple interactions in reaching an asymptotic thermal equilibrium in a homogeneous isotropic electron-positron-photon plasma. We focus on energies in the range 0.1–10 MeV. We numerically integrate the integro-partial differential relativistic Boltzmann equation with the exact QED collisional integrals taking into account all binary and triple interactions in the plasma. We show that first, when detailed balance is reached for all binary interactions on a timescale $t_k \lesssim 10^{-14}$ sec, photons and electron-positron pairs establish kinetic equilibrium. Successively, when triple interactions fulfill the detailed balance on a timescale $t_{eq} \lesssim 10^{-12}$ sec, the plasma reaches thermal equilibrium. It is shown that neglecting the inverse triple interactions prevents reaching thermal equilibrium. Our results obtained in the theoretical physics domain also find application in astrophysics and cosmology.

9. R. Ruffini, M. Rotondo and S.-S. Xue, "Electrodynamics for Nuclear Matter in Bulk ", *Int. Journ. Mod. Phys. D* Vol. 16, No. 1 (2007) 1-9.

A general approach to analyze the electrodynamics of nuclear matter in bulk is presented using the relativistic Thomas-Fermi equation generalizing to the case of $N \simeq (m_{\text{Planck}}/m_n)^3$ nucleons of mass m_n the approach well tested in very heavy nuclei ($Z \simeq 10^6$). Particular attention is given to implement the condition of charge neutrality globally on the entire configuration, versus the one usually adopted on a microscopic scale. As the limit $N \simeq (m_{\text{Planck}}/m_n)^3$ is approached the penetration of electrons inside the core increases and a relatively small tail of electrons persists leading to a significant electron density outside the core. Within a region of 10^2 electron Compton wavelength near the core surface electric fields close to the critical value for pair creation by vacuum polarization effect develop. These results can have important consequences on the understanding of physical process in neutron stars structures as well as on the initial conditions leading to the process of gravitational collapse to a black hole.

10. R. Ruffini, M. Rotondo and S.-S. Xue, "Analytic treatment of the electrodynamics for nuclear matter in bulk", to be submitted to *Phy. Rev. Lett.*

Using the relativistic Thomas-Fermi equation, we present an analytic treatment of the electrodynamic properties of nuclear matter in bulk. Following the works of Migdal and Popov we generalize to the case of a massive core with the mass number $A \sim 10^{57}$ the analytic approach well tested in very heavy nuclei with $A \sim 10^6$. Attention is given to implement the condition of charge neutrality globally on the entire configuration, versus the one usually

adopted on a microscopic scale. It is confirmed that also in this limit A , an electric field develops near the core surface of magnitude close to the critical value of vacuum polarization. It is shown that such a configuration is energetically favorable with respect to the one which obeys local charge neutrality. These results can have important consequences on the understanding of the physical process in neutron stars as well as on the initial conditions leading to the process of gravitational collapse to a black hole.

11. R. Ruffini, M. Rotondo and S.-S. Xue, "Neutral nuclear core vs super charged one ", AIP Conf. Proc. (2008).

Based on the Thomas-Fermi approach, we describe and distinguish the electron distributions around extended nuclear cores: (i) in the case that cores are neutral for electrons bound by protons inside cores and proton and electron numbers are the same; (ii) in the case that super charged cores are bare, electrons (positrons) produced by vacuum polarization are bound by (fly into) cores (infinity).

12. R. Ruffini and S.-S. Xue, "Dyadosphere formed in gravitational collapse ", AIP Conf. Proc. 1059 (2008) 72.

We first recall the concept of Dyadosphere (electron-positron-photon plasma around a formed black holes) and its motivation, and recall on (i) the Dirac process: annihilation of electron-positron pairs to photons; (ii) the Breit-Wheeler process: production of electron-positron pairs by photons with the energy larger than electron-positron mass threshold; the Sauter-Euler-Heisenberg effective Lagrangian and rate for the process of electron-positron production in a constant electric field. We present a general formula for the pair-production rate in the semi-classical treatment of quantum mechanical tunneling. We also present in the *Quantum Electro-Dynamics* framework, the calculations of the Schwinger rate and effective Lagrangian for constant electromagnetic fields. We give a review on the electron-positron plasma oscillation in constant electric fields, and its interaction with photons leading to energy and number equipartition of photons, electrons and positrons. The possibility of creating an overcritical field in astrophysical condition is pointed out. We present the discussions and calculations on (i) energy extraction from gravitational collapse; (ii) the formation of Dyadosphere in gravitational collapsing process, and (iii) its hydrodynamical expansion in Reissner Nordström geometry. We calculate the spectrum and flux of photon radiation at the point of transparency, and make predictions for short Gamma-Ray Bursts.

6. Invited talks in international conferences

1. Yamada conference “On the dyadosphere of black holes” in Kyoto Japan, April 1998 .
2. International workshop on Gamma Ray Bursts, Rome (1998) .
3. 19th Texas Symposium, Dec. 1998
4. “Exploring the Universe”, a Festschrift in honour of Riccardo Giacconi, (2000).
5. Fluctuating Paths and Fields - Dedicated to Hagen Kleinert on the Occasion of His 60th Birthday, Berlin 2001.
6. the ESO workshop on “Black Holes in Binaries and Galactic Nuclei”, in honour of Prof. R. Giacconi, (2000) .
7. Marcel Grossmann Meetings IX (Rome) (2000), X (Brazil) (2003) and XI Berlin (2006).
8. international conference in the quantum aspect of beam physics in Hiroshima Japan (2003)
9. “Frontiers in Astroparticle Physics and Cosmology”, 6th RESCEU International Symposium, Tokyo 2003.
10. International Conference “Analysis, manifolds and geometric structures in physics”, in Honour of Y. Choquet-Bruhat, Isola d’Elba June 24th-26th, 2004 .
11. Brazilian School of Cosmology and Gravitation X (2002), XI (2004) and XII (2006) (Portobello, Brazile).
12. Relativistic Astrophysics and Cosmology - Einstein’s Legacy meeting, November 7-11, 2005,
13. 35th COSPAR scientific assembly (Paris, 2004) and 36th COSPAR scientific assembly (Beijing , 2006).

14. 9th International Conference Path Integrals - New Trends and Perspectives, DRESDEN, Germany 23 - 28 September 2007
15. APS April meeting, April 12-15 2008, Saint Louis (USA).
16. V Italian-Sino Workshop, May 28- June 1 2008, Taipei (Taiwan).
17. III Stueckelberg Workshop, July 8-18 2008, Pescara (Italy).
18. XIII Brazilian School of Cosmology and Gravitation, July 20-August 2 2008, Rio de Janeiro (Brazil).

7. APPENDICES

A. The three fundamental contributions to the electron-positron pair creation and annihilation and the concept of critical electric field

In this chapter we recall the annihilation process of an electron-positron pair with the production of two photons

$$e^+ + e^- \rightarrow \gamma_1 + \gamma_2, \quad (\text{A.0.1})$$

studied by Dirac in Dirac (1930b), the Breit-Wheeler process of electron-positron pair production by light-light collisions Breit and Wheeler (1934)

$$\gamma_1 + \gamma_2 \rightarrow e^+ + e^-. \quad (\text{A.0.2})$$

and the vacuum polarization in external electric field, introduced by Sauter Sauter (1931a). These three results, obtained in the mid-30's of the last century Medvedev and Shirkov (1987); Miller (1995), played a crucial role in the development of the *Quantum Electro-Dynamics* (QED).

A.1. Dirac's electron-positron annihilation

Dirac had proposed his theory of the electron Dirac (1928, 1930a) in the framework of relativistic quantum theory. Such a theory predicted the existence of positive and negative energy states. Only the positive energy states could correspond to the electrons. The negative energy states had to have a physical meaning since transitions were considered to be possible from positive to negative energy states. It was proposed by Dirac Dirac (1930a) that nearly all possible states of negative energy are occupied with just one electron in accordance with Pauli's exclusion principle and that the unoccupied states, 'holes' in the negative energy states should be regarded as 'positrons'¹.

¹Actually initially Dirac (1930a,b) Dirac believed that these 'holes' in negative energy spectrum describe protons, but later he realized that these holes represent particles with the

Adopting his time-dependent perturbation theory Dirac (1926) in the framework of relativistic Quantum Mechanics Dirac pointed out in Dirac (1930b) the necessity of the annihilation process of electron-positron pair into two photons A.0.1. He considered an electron under the simultaneous influence of two incident beams of radiation, which induce transition of the electron to states of negative energy, then he calculated the transition probability per unit time, using the well established validity of the Einstein emission and absorption coefficients, which connect spontaneous and stimulated emission probabilities. He obtained the explicit expression of the cross-section of the annihilation process.

Such process is *spontaneous*, i.e. it occurs necessarily for any pair of electron and positron independently of their energy. The process does not need any previously existing radiation. The derivation of the cross-section, considering the stimulated emission process, was simplified by the fact that the electromagnetic field could be treated as an external classical perturbation and did not need to be quantized Heitler (1954).

Dirac started from his wave equation Dirac (1928) for the spinor field Ψ :

$$\left\{ \frac{E}{c} + \frac{e}{c} A_0 + \boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \left(\mathbf{p} + \frac{e}{c} \mathbf{A} \right) + \beta_D m_e c \right\} \Psi = 0, \quad (\text{A.1.1})$$

where m_e and e are electron's mass and charge, \mathbf{A} is electromagnetic vector potential, and the matrices $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ and β_D are:

$$\boldsymbol{\alpha} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \boldsymbol{\sigma} \\ \boldsymbol{\sigma} & 0 \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad \beta_D = \begin{pmatrix} I & 0 \\ 0 & -I \end{pmatrix}, \quad (\text{A.1.2})$$

where $\boldsymbol{\sigma}$ and I are respectively the Pauli's and unit matrices. By choosing a gauge in which A_0 vanishes he obtained:

$$\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{a}_1 e^{i\omega_1[t - \mathbf{l}_1 \cdot \mathbf{x}/c]} + \mathbf{a}_1^* e^{-i\omega_1[t - \mathbf{l}_1 \cdot \mathbf{x}/c]} + \mathbf{a}_2 e^{i\omega_2[t - \mathbf{l}_2 \cdot \mathbf{x}/c]} + \mathbf{a}_2^* e^{-i\omega_2[t - \mathbf{l}_2 \cdot \mathbf{x}/c]}, \quad (\text{A.1.3})$$

where ω_1 and ω_2 are respectively the frequencies of the two beams, \mathbf{l}_1 and \mathbf{l}_2 are the unit vectors in their direction of motion and \mathbf{a}_1 and \mathbf{a}_2 are the polarization vectors, the modulus of which are the amplitudes of the two beams.

Dirac solved Eq. (A.1.1) by a perturbation method, finding a solution of the form $\psi = \psi_0 + \psi_1 + \psi_2 + \dots$, where ψ_0 is the solution in the free case, and ψ_1 is the first order perturbation containing the field \mathbf{A} , or, explicitly $-\frac{e}{c} \boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \mathbf{A}$. He then computed the explicit expression of the second order expansion term ψ_2 , which represents electrons that have made the double photon emission process and decay into negative-energy states. He evaluated the transition

same mass as of electron but with opposite charge, 'anti-electrons' Dirac (1931). The discovery of these anti-electrons was made by Anderson in 1932 Anderson (1933) and named by him 'positrons'.

amplitude for the stimulated transition process, which reads

$$w_{e^+ + e^- \rightarrow \gamma_1 + \gamma_2} = \frac{16e^2 |\mathbf{a}_1|^2 |\mathbf{a}_2|^2}{|\mathcal{E}'| m_e c^2} K_{12} \frac{1 - \cos(\delta \mathcal{E}' t / \hbar)}{(\delta \mathcal{E}')^2}, \quad (\text{A.1.4})$$

where $\mathcal{E}' = m_e c^2 - \nu_1 - \nu_2$, ν_1 and ν_2 are the photons' frequencies and

$$K_{12} = -(\mathbf{m}_1 \cdot \mathbf{m}_2)^2 + \frac{1}{4} [1 - (\mathbf{m}_1 \cdot \mathbf{m}_2)(\mathbf{n}_1 \cdot \mathbf{n}_2) + (\mathbf{m}_1 \cdot \mathbf{n}_2)(\mathbf{m}_1 \cdot \mathbf{n}_2)] \frac{\nu_1 + \nu_2}{m_e c^2}, \quad (\text{A.1.5})$$

is a dimensionless number depending on the unit vectors in the directions of the two photon's polarization vectors \mathbf{m}_1 and \mathbf{m}_2 . The quantities \mathbf{n}_1 and \mathbf{n}_2 are respectively given by $\mathbf{n}_{1,2} = \mathbf{l}_{1,2} \times \mathbf{m}_{1,2}$. Introducing the intensity of the two incident beams

$$I_1 = \frac{\nu_1^2}{2\pi c} |k_1|^2, \quad I_2 = \frac{\nu_2^2}{2\pi c} |k_2|^2, \quad (\text{A.1.6})$$

where $\mathbf{k}_{1,2} = \omega_{1,2} \mathbf{l}_{1,2}$. Dirac obtained from the above transition amplitude the transition probability

$$P_{e^+ + e^- \rightarrow \gamma_1 + \gamma_2} = \frac{8\pi^2 c^2 e^4}{|\mathcal{E}'| m_e c^2 \nu_1^2 \nu_2^2} K_{12} \frac{1 - \cos(\delta \mathcal{E}' t / \hbar)}{(\delta \mathcal{E}')^2}. \quad (\text{A.1.7})$$

In order to evaluate the spontaneous emission probability Dirac uses the relation between the Einstein coefficients A_E and B_E which is of the form

$$A_E / B_E = 2\pi \hbar / c^2 (\nu_{1,2} / 2\pi)^3. \quad (\text{A.1.8})$$

Integrating on all possible directions of emission he obtains the total probability per unit time, in the rest frame of the electron he obtains

$$\sigma_{e^+ e^-}^{\text{lab}} = \pi \left(\frac{\alpha \hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 (\hat{\gamma} - 1)^{-1} \left\{ \frac{\hat{\gamma}^2 + 4\hat{\gamma} + 1}{\hat{\gamma}^2 - 1} \ln[\hat{\gamma} + (\hat{\gamma}^2 - 1)^{1/2}] - \frac{\hat{\gamma} + 3}{(\hat{\gamma}^2 - 1)^{1/2}} \right\}, \quad (\text{A.1.9})$$

where $\hat{\gamma} \equiv \mathcal{E}_+ / m_e c^2 \geq 1$ is the energy of the positron and $\alpha = e^2 / (\hbar c)$ is as usual the fine structure constant, and we recall the corresponding formula for the center of mass reference frame. Again, historically Dirac was initially confused about the negative energy states interpretation as we recalled. Although he derived the correct formula, he was doubtful about the presence in it of the mass of the electron or of the mass of the proton. Of course today this has been clarified and this derivation is fully correct if one uses the mass of the electron and applied this formula to description of electron-positron

annihilation. The limit for high-energy pairs ($\hat{\gamma} \gg 1$) is

$$\sigma_{e^+e^-}^{\text{lab}} \simeq \frac{\pi}{\hat{\gamma}} \left(\frac{\alpha \hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 [\ln(2\hat{\gamma}) - 1]; \quad (\text{A.1.10})$$

The corresponding center of mass formula is

$$\sigma_{e^+e^-} = \frac{\pi}{4\hat{\beta}^2} \left(\frac{\alpha \hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 (1 - \hat{\beta}^2) \left[2\hat{\beta}(\hat{\beta}^2 - 2) + (3 - \hat{\beta}^4) \ln\left(\frac{1 + \hat{\beta}}{1 - \hat{\beta}}\right) \right], \quad (\text{A.1.11})$$

where $\hat{\beta}$ is as in (A.2.9).

A.2. Breit-Wheeler pair production

We now turn to the equally important derivation on the production of an electron-positron pair in the collision of two real photons given by Breit and Wheeler Breit and Wheeler (1934). According to Dirac's theory of the electron, this process is caused by a transition of an electron from a negative-energy state to a positive energy under the influence of two light quanta on the vacuum. This process differently from the one considered by Dirac, which occurs spontaneously, has a threshold due to the fact that electron and positron mass is not zero. In other words in the center of mass of the system there must be sufficient available energy to create an electron-positron pair. This energy must be larger than twice of electron rest mass energy.

Breit and Wheeler, following the discovery of the positron by Anderson, studied the effect of two light waves upon an electron in a negative energy state, represented by a normalized Dirac wave function $\psi^{(0)}$. Like in the previous case studied by Dirac Dirac (1930b) the light waves have frequencies ω_i , wave-vectors \mathbf{k}_i and vector potentials (A.1.3). Under the influence of the light waves, the initial electron wave function $\psi^{(0)}$ is changed after some time t into a final wave function $\psi^{(t)}$. The method adopted is the time-dependent perturbation Dirac (1926) (for details see Landau and Lifshitz (1981a)) to solve the Dirac equation with the time-dependent potential $e\mathbf{A}(t)$ (A.1.3). The transition amplitude was calculated by an expansion in powers of $\mathbf{a}_{1,2}$ up to $O(\alpha^2)$. The wave function $\psi^{(t)}$ contains a term representing an electron in a positive energy state. The associated density is found to be

$$w_{\gamma_1+\gamma_2 \rightarrow e^++e^-} = \left(\frac{\alpha \hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 |\mathbf{a}_1|^2 |\mathbf{a}_2|^2 K_{12} \frac{|1 - \exp(-it\delta\mathcal{E}/\hbar)|^2}{(\delta\mathcal{E})^2} \quad (\text{A.2.1})$$

$$= \left(\frac{\alpha \hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 2|\mathbf{a}_1|^2 |\mathbf{a}_2|^2 K_{12} \frac{|1 - \cos(\delta\mathcal{E}t/\hbar)|^2}{(\delta\mathcal{E})^2}, \quad (\text{A.2.2})$$

where K_{12} is the dimensionless number already obtained by Dirac, Eq. (A.1.5), depending on initial momenta and spin of the wave function $\psi^{(0)}$ and the polarizations of the quanta. This quantity is actually the squared transition matrix in the momenta and spin of initial and final states of light and electron-positron. The squared amplitudes $|\mathbf{a}_{1,2}|^2$ in Eq. (A.2.1) are determined by the intensities $I_{1,2}$ of the two light beams as

$$|\mathbf{a}_{1,2}|^2 = \frac{2\pi c}{\omega_{1,2}^2} I_{1,2}. \quad (\text{A.2.3})$$

The quantity $\delta\mathcal{E}$ in Eq. (A.2.1) is the difference in energies between initial light states and final electron-positron states. Indicating by $\mathcal{E}^{(-)} = -c(p_1^2 + m_e^2 c^2)^{1/2}$, where p_1 is the four-momentum of the positron, the negative energy of the electron in its initial state and the corresponding quantity for the electron $\mathcal{E}_2 = -c(p_2^2 + m_e^2 c^2)^{1/2}$, where p_2 is the four-momentum of the electron, $\delta\mathcal{E}$ is given by

$$\delta\mathcal{E} = c(p_2^2 + m_e^2 c^2)^{1/2} + \mathcal{E}_1 - \hbar\omega_1 - \hbar\omega_2, \quad \text{where} \quad \mathcal{E}_1 = -\mathcal{E}^{(-)}, \quad (\text{A.2.4})$$

and $\mathbf{p}_2 = -\mathbf{p}_1 + \mathbf{k}_1 + \mathbf{k}_2$ is the final momentum of the electron. From this energy and momentum conservation it follows

$$d(\delta\mathcal{E}) = c^2 \left[\frac{|\mathbf{p}_1|}{\mathcal{E}_1} - \frac{\mathbf{p}_1 \cdot \mathbf{p}_2}{(|\mathbf{p}_1| \mathcal{E}_2)} \right] dp_1. \quad (\text{A.2.5})$$

It is then possible to sum the probability densities (A.2.1) over all possible initial electron states of negative energy in the volume V . An integral over the phase space $\int 2|\mathbf{p}_1|^2 d|\mathbf{p}_1| d\Omega_1 V / (2\pi\hbar)^3$ must be performed. The effective collision area for the head-on collision of two light quanta was shown by Breit and Wheeler to be

$$\sigma_{\gamma\gamma} = 2 \left(\frac{\alpha\hbar}{m c} \right)^2 \int \frac{c|\mathbf{p}_1|^2}{\hbar\omega_1 \hbar\omega_2} K_{12} \left[\frac{|\mathbf{p}_1|}{\mathcal{E}_1} - \frac{\mathbf{p}_1 \cdot \mathbf{p}_2}{|\mathbf{p}_1| \mathcal{E}_2} \right]^{-1} d\Omega_1, \quad (\text{A.2.6})$$

where Ω_1 is the solid angle, which fulfills the total energy-conservation $\delta\mathcal{E} = 0$.

In the center of mass of the system, the momenta of the electron and the positron are equal and opposite $\mathbf{p}_1 = -\mathbf{p}_2$. In that frame the momenta of the photons in the initial state are $\mathbf{k}_1 = -\mathbf{k}_2$. As a consequence, the energies of the electron and the positron are equal: $\mathcal{E}_1 = \mathcal{E}_2 = \mathcal{E}$, and so are the energies of the photons: $\hbar\omega_1 = \hbar\omega_2 = \mathcal{E}_\gamma = \mathcal{E}$. The total cross-section of the process is then

$$\sigma_{\gamma\gamma} = 2 \left(\frac{\alpha\hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 \frac{c|\mathbf{p}|}{\mathcal{E}} \int K_{12} d\Omega_1, \quad (\text{A.2.7})$$

where $|\mathbf{p}| = |\mathbf{p}_1| = |\mathbf{p}_2|$, and $\mathcal{E} = (c^2|\mathbf{p}|^2 + m_e^2c^4)^{1/2}$. Therefore, the necessary kinematic condition in order for the process (A.0.2) taking place is that the energy of the two colliding photons be larger than the threshold $2m_ec^2$, i.e.,

$$\mathcal{E}_\gamma > m_ec^2. \quad (\text{A.2.8})$$

From Eq. (A.2.7) the total cross-section in the center of mass of the system is

$$\sigma_{\gamma\gamma} = \frac{\pi}{2} \left(\frac{\alpha\hbar}{m_ec} \right)^2 (1 - \hat{\beta}^2) \left[2\hat{\beta}(\hat{\beta}^2 - 2) + (3 - \hat{\beta}^4) \ln \left(\frac{1 + \hat{\beta}}{1 - \hat{\beta}} \right) \right], \quad \text{with} \quad \hat{\beta} = \frac{c|\mathbf{p}|}{\mathcal{E}}, \quad (\text{A.2.9})$$

where $\hat{\beta}$ is the reduced velocity of the electron or the positron. In modern QED cross-sections (A.1.10) and (A.2.9) emerge from two tree-level Feynman diagrams (see, for example, the textbook Itzykson and Zuber (2006)).

For $\mathcal{E} \gg m_ec^2$, the total effective cross-section is approximately proportional to

$$\sigma_{\gamma\gamma} \simeq \pi \left(\frac{\alpha\hbar}{m_ec} \right)^2 \left(\frac{m_ec^2}{\mathcal{E}} \right)^2. \quad (\text{A.2.10})$$

The cross-section in line (A.2.9) can be easily generalized to an arbitrary reference frame, in which the two photons k_1 and k_2 cross with arbitrary relative directions. The Lorentz invariance of the scalar product of their four momenta ($k_1 k_2$) gives $\omega_1 \omega_2 = \mathcal{E}_\gamma^2$. Since $\mathcal{E}_\gamma = \mathcal{E} = m_ec^2 / \sqrt{1 - \hat{\beta}^2}$, to obtain the total cross-section in the arbitrary frame \mathcal{K} , we must therefore make the following substitution Berestetskii et al. (1971)

$$\hat{\beta} \rightarrow \sqrt{1 - m_e^2 c^4 / (\omega_1 \omega_2)}, \quad (\text{A.2.11})$$

in Eq. (A.2.9).

A.3. Klein paradox and Sauter work

Every relativistic wave equation of a free particle of mass m_e , momentum \mathbf{p} and energy \mathcal{E} , admits “positive energy” and “negative energy” solutions. In Minkowski space such a solution is symmetric with respect to the zero energy and the wave-function given by

$$\psi^\pm(\mathbf{x}, t) \sim e^{i(\mathbf{k} \cdot \mathbf{x} - \mathcal{E}_\pm t)} \quad (\text{A.3.1})$$

describes a relativistic particle, whose energy, mass and momentum satisfy,

$$\mathcal{E}_\pm^2 = m_e^2 c^4 + c^2 |\mathbf{p}|^2; \quad \mathcal{E}_\pm = \pm \sqrt{m_e^2 c^4 + c^2 |\mathbf{p}|^2}. \quad (\text{A.3.2})$$

This gives rise to the familiar positive and negative energy spectrum (\mathcal{E}_\pm) of positive and negative energy states $\psi^\pm(\mathbf{x}, t)$ of the relativistic particle, as represented in Fig. A.1. In such a situation, in absence of external field, all the quantum states are stable; that is, there is no possibility of “positive” (“negative”) energy states decaying into “negative” (“positive”) energy states since there is an energy gap $2m_e c^2$ separating the negative energy spectrum from the positive energy spectrum. This stability condition was implemented by Dirac by considering all negative energy states as fully filled.

A scalar field described by the wave function $\phi(x)$ satisfies the Klein-Gordon equation Schrödinger (1926); Fock (1926); Klein (1926); Gordon (1926)

$$\left\{ \left[i\hbar \partial_\mu + \frac{e}{c} A_\mu(z) \right]^2 - m_e^2 c^2 \right\} \phi(x) = 0. \quad (\text{A.3.3})$$

If there is only an electric field $E(z)$ in the z -direction and varying only as a function of z , we can choose a vector potential with the only nonzero component $A_0(z)$ and potential energy

$$V(z) = -eA_0(z) = e \int^z dz' E(z'). \quad (\text{A.3.4})$$

For an electron of charge $-e$ by assuming

$$\phi(x) = e^{-i\mathcal{E}t/\hbar} e^{i\mathbf{p}_\perp \cdot \mathbf{x}_\perp / \hbar} \phi(z),$$

with a fixed transverse momentum \mathbf{p}_\perp in the x, y direction and an energy eigenvalue \mathcal{E} , and Eq. (A.3.3) becomes simply

$$\left[-\hbar^2 \frac{d^2}{dz^2} + p_\perp^2 + m_e^2 c^2 - \frac{1}{c^2} [\mathcal{E} - V(z)]^2 \right] \phi(z) = 0. \quad (\text{A.3.5})$$

Klein studied a relativistic particle moving in an external *step-function* potential $V(z) = V_0 \Theta(z)$ and in this case Eq. (A.3.5) is modified as

$$[\mathcal{E} - V_0]^2 = m_e^2 c^4 + c^2 |\mathbf{p}|^2; \quad \mathcal{E}_\pm = V_0 \pm \sqrt{m_e^2 c^4 + c^2 |\mathbf{p}|^2}, \quad (\text{A.3.6})$$

where $|\mathbf{p}|^2 = |\mathbf{p}_z|^2 + \mathbf{p}_\perp^2$. He solved his relativistic wave equation Schrödinger (1926); Fock (1926); Klein (1926); Gordon (1926) by considering an incident free relativistic wave of positive energy states scattered by the constant potential V_0 , leading to reflected and transmitted waves. He found a paradox that in the case $V_0 \geq \mathcal{E} + m_e c^2$, the reflected flux is larger than the incident flux $j_{\text{ref}} > j_{\text{inc}}$, although the total flux is conserved, i.e. $j_{\text{inc}} = j_{\text{ref}} + j_{\text{tran}}$. This is known as the Klein paradox Klein (1929); Sauter (1931b). This implies that negative energy states have contributions to both the transmitted flux j_{tran} and reflected flux j_{ref} .

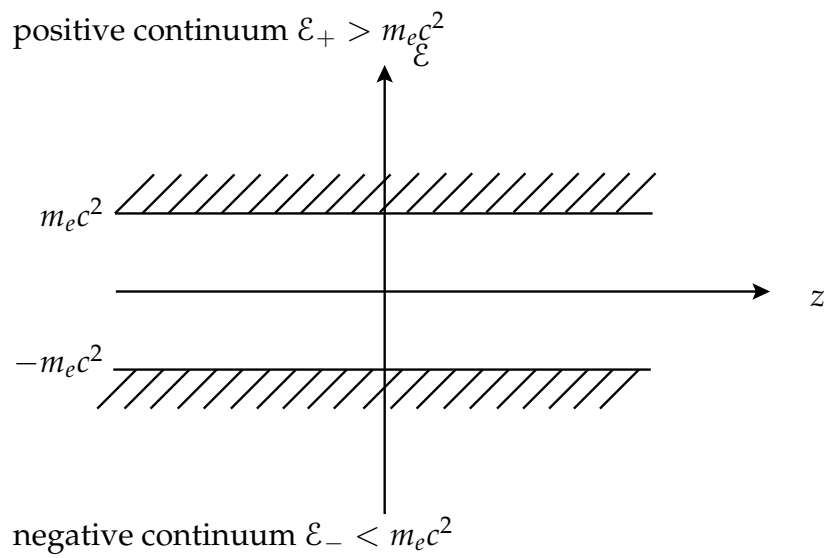


Figure A.1.: The mass-gap $2m_e c^2$ that separates the positive continuum spectrum \mathcal{E}_+ from the negative continuum spectrum \mathcal{E}_- .

Sauter studied this problem by considering a potential varying in the z direction corresponding to a constant electric field E in the $\hat{\mathbf{z}} = \mathbf{z}/|\mathbf{z}|$ direction and considering spin $1/2$ particles fulfilling the Dirac equation. In this case the energy \mathcal{E} is shifted by the amount $V(z) = -eEz$. He further assumed an electric field E uniform between z_1 and z_2 and null outside. Fig. A.2 represents the corresponding sketch of allowed states. The key point now, which is the essence of the Klein paradox Klein (1929); Sauter (1931b), is that a level crossing between the positive and negative energy levels occurs. Under this condition the above mentioned stability of the “positive energy” states is lost for sufficiently strong electric fields. The same is true for “negative energy” states. Some “positive energy” and “negative energy” states have the same energy-levels. Thus, these “negative energy” waves incident from the left will be both reflected back by the electric field and partly transmitted to the right as a “positive energy” wave, as shown in Fig. A.2 Damour (1975). This transmission represents a quantum tunneling of the wave function through the electric potential barrier, where classical states are forbidden. This quantum tunneling phenomenon was pioneered by George Gamow by the analysis of alpha particle emission or capture in the nuclear potential barrier (Gamow-wall) Gamow (1931). In the latter case however the tunneling occurred between two states of positive energy while in the Klein paradox and Sauter computation the tunneling occurs for the first time between the positive and negative energy states giving rise to the totally new concept of the creation of particle-antiparticle pairs in the positive energy state as we are going to show.

Sauter first solved the relativistic Dirac equation in the presence of the constant electric field by the ansatz,

$$\psi_s(\mathbf{x}, t) = e^{i\hbar(k_x x + k_y y - \mathcal{E}_{\pm} t)} \chi_{s_3}(z) \quad (\text{A.3.7})$$

where spinor function $\chi_{s_3}(z)$ obeys the following equation (γ_0, γ_i are Dirac matrices)

$$\left[\hbar c \gamma_3 \frac{d}{dz} + \gamma_0 (V(z) - \mathcal{E}_{\pm}) + (m_e c^2 + i c \gamma_2 p_y + i c \gamma_1 p_x) \right] \chi_{s_3}(z) = 0, \quad (\text{A.3.8})$$

and the solution $\chi_{s_3}(z)$ can be expressed in terms of hypergeometric functions Sauter (1931a). Using this wave-function $\psi_s(\mathbf{x}, t)$ (A.3.7) and the flux $i c \psi_s^\dagger \gamma_3 \psi_s$, Sauter computed the transmitted flux of positive energy states, the incident and reflected fluxes of negative energy states, as well as exponential decaying flux of classically forbidden states, as indicated in Fig. A.2. Using the regular matching conditions of the wave functions and fluxes at boundaries of the potential, Sauter found that the transmission coefficient $|T|^2$ of the wave through the electric potential barrier from the negative energy state

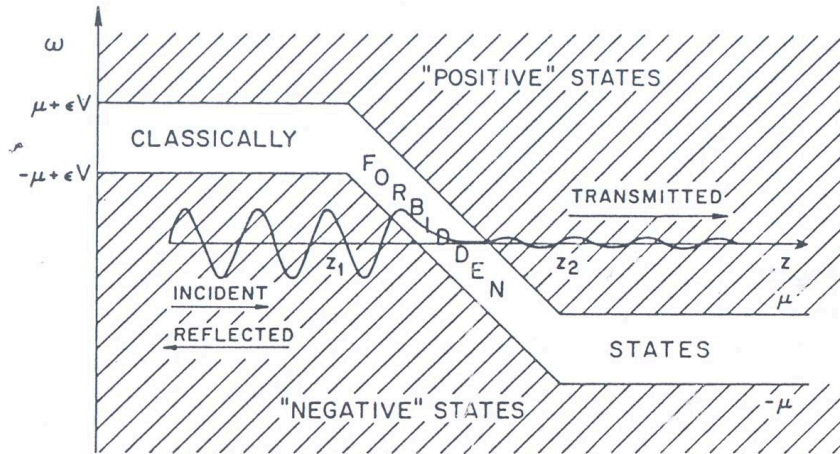


Figure A.2.: In presence of a strong enough electric field the boundaries of the classically allowed states ("positive" or "negative") can be so tilted that a "negative" is at the same level as a "positive" (level crossing). Therefore a "negative" wave-packet from the left will be partially transmitted, after an exponential damping due to the tunneling through the classically forbidden states, as a "positive" wave-packet outgoing to the right. This figure is reproduced from Fig. II in Ref. Damour (1975), and $\mu = m_e c^2$, $\epsilon V = V(z)$, $\omega = \mathcal{E}$.

to positive energy states:

$$|T|^2 = \frac{|\text{transmission flux}|}{|\text{incident flux}|} \sim e^{-\pi \frac{m_e^2 c^3}{\hbar e E}}. \quad (\text{A.3.9})$$

This is the probability of negative energy states decaying to positive energy states, caused by an external electric field. The method that Sauter adopted to calculate the transmission coefficient $|T|^2$ is indeed the same as the one Gamow used to calculate quantum tunneling of the wave function through nuclear potential barrier, leading to the α -particle emission Gamow (1931).

The simplest way to calculate the transmission coefficient $|T|^2$ (A.3.9) is the JWKB approximation. The electric potential $V(z)$ is not a constant. The corresponding solution of the Dirac equation is not straightforward, however it can be found using the quasi-classical, JWKB (Jeffreys-Wentzel-Kramers-Brillouin) approximation. Particle's energy \mathcal{E} , momentum \mathbf{p} and mass m_e satisfy,

$$[\mathcal{E}_{\pm} - V(z)]^2 = m_e^2 c^4 + c^2 |\mathbf{p}|^2; \quad \mathcal{E}_{\pm} = V(z) \pm \sqrt{m_e^2 c^4 + c^2 |\mathbf{p}|^2}, \quad (\text{A.3.10})$$

where the momentum $p_z(z)$ is spatially dependent. The momentum $p_z > 0$ for both negative and positive energy states and the wave functions exhibit usual oscillatory behavior of propagating wave in the $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ -direction, i.e. $\exp \frac{i}{\hbar} p_z z$. Inside the electric potential barrier where are the classically forbidden states, the momentum p_z^2 given by Eq. (A.3.10) becomes negative, and p_z becomes imaginary, which means that the wave-function will have an exponential behavior, i.e. $\exp -\frac{1}{\hbar} \int |p_z| dz$, instead of the oscillatory behavior which characterize the positive and negative energy states. Therefore the transmission coefficient $|T|^2$ of the wave through the one-dimensional potential barrier is given by

$$|T|^2 \propto \exp -\frac{2}{\hbar} \int_{z_-}^{z_+} |p_z| dz, \quad (\text{A.3.11})$$

where z_- and z_+ are roots of the equation $p_z(z) = 0$ defining the turning points of the classical trajectory, separating positive and negative energy states.

A.4. A semi-classical description of pair production in quantum mechanics

A.4.1. An external constant electric field

The phenomenon of pair production can be understood as a quantum-mechanical tunneling process of relativistic particles. The external electric field modifies the positive and negative energy-spectrum of the free Hamiltonian. Let the field vector \mathbf{E} point in the \hat{z} -direction. The electric potential is $A_0 = -|E|z$ where $-\ell < z < +\ell$ and the length $\ell \gg \hbar/(m_e c)$, then the positive and negative continuum energy-spectra are

$$\mathcal{E}_{\pm} = |eE|z \pm \sqrt{(cp_z)^2 + c^2 \mathbf{p}_{\perp}^2 + (m_e c^2)^2}, \quad (\text{A.4.1})$$

where p_z is the momentum in \hat{z} -direction, \mathbf{p}_{\perp} transverse momenta. The energy-spectra \mathcal{E}_{\pm} (A.4.1) are sketched in Fig. A.3. One finds that crossing energy-levels \mathcal{E} between two energy-spectra \mathcal{E}_{-} and \mathcal{E}_{+} (A.4.1) appear, then quantum tunneling process occurs. The probability amplitude for this process can be estimated by a semi-classical calculation using JWKB method (see e.g. Landau and Lifshitz (1981a); Kleinert et al. (2008)):

$$\mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}}(|\mathbf{p}_{\perp}|) \equiv \exp \left\{ -\frac{2}{\hbar} \int_{z_{-}(\mathcal{E}_{-})}^{z_{+}(\mathcal{E}_{+})} p_z dz \right\}, \quad (\text{A.4.2})$$

where

$$p_z = \sqrt{\mathbf{p}_{\perp}^2 + m_e^2 c^2 - (\mathcal{E} - |eE|z)^2 / c^2} \quad (\text{A.4.3})$$

is the classical momentum. The limits of integration $z_{\pm}(\mathcal{E}_{\pm})$ are the turning points of the classical orbit in imaginary time. They are determined by setting $p_z = 0$ in Eq. (A.4.1). The solutions are

$$z_{\pm}(\mathcal{E}_{\pm}) = \frac{c[\mathbf{p}_{\perp}^2 + m_e^2 c^2]^{1/2} + \mathcal{E}_{\pm}}{|eE|}, \quad (\text{A.4.4})$$

At the turning points of the classical orbit, the crossing energy-level

$$\mathcal{E} = \mathcal{E}_{+} = \mathcal{E}_{-}, \quad (\text{A.4.5})$$

as shown by dashed line in Fig. A.3. The *tunneling length* is

$$z_{+}(\mathcal{E}_{+}) - z_{-}(\mathcal{E}_{-}) = \frac{2m_e c^2}{|eE|} = 2 \frac{\hbar}{m_e c} \left(\frac{E_c}{E} \right), \quad (\text{A.4.6})$$

which is independent of crossing energy-levels \mathcal{E} . The critical electric field E_c in Eq. (3.2.1) is the field at which the tunneling length (A.4.6) is twice the Compton length $\lambda_C \equiv \hbar/m_e c$.

Changing the variable of integration from z to $y(z)$,

$$y(z) = \frac{\mathcal{E} - |eE|z}{c\sqrt{\mathbf{p}_\perp^2 + m_e^2 c^2}}, \quad (\text{A.4.7})$$

we obtain

$$y_-(z_-) = -1, \quad y_+(z_+) = +1 \quad (\text{A.4.8})$$

and the JWKB probability amplitude (A.4.2) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}}(|\mathbf{p}_\perp|) &= \exp \left[-\frac{2E_c}{E} \left(1 + \frac{\mathbf{p}_\perp^2}{m_e^2 c^2} \right) \int_{-1}^{+1} dy \sqrt{1 - y^2} \right] \\ &= \exp \left[-\frac{\pi E_c}{E} \left(1 + \frac{\mathbf{p}_\perp^2}{m_e^2 c^2} \right) \right]. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.4.9})$$

Summing over initial and final spin states and integrating over the transverse phase-space $\int d\mathbf{z}_\perp d\mathbf{p}_\perp / (2\pi\hbar)^2$ yields the final result

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}} &\approx D_s V_\perp e^{-\pi c m_e^2 c^2 / |eE| \hbar} \int \frac{d^2 \mathbf{p}_\perp}{(2\pi\hbar)^2} e^{-\pi c \mathbf{p}_\perp^2 / |eE| \hbar} = \\ &= D_s V_\perp \frac{|eE|}{4\pi^2 c \hbar} e^{-\pi E_c / E}, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.4.10})$$

where the transverse surface $V_\perp = \int d\mathbf{z}_\perp$. For the constant electric field E in $-\ell < z < +\ell$, crossing energy-levels \mathcal{E} vary from the maximal energy potential $V(-\ell) = +eE\ell$ to the minimal energy potential $V(+\ell) = -eE\ell$. This probability Eq. (A.4.10) is independent of crossing energy-levels \mathcal{E} . We integrate Eq. (A.4.10) over crossing energy-levels $\int d\mathcal{E} / m_e c^2$ and divide it by the time interval $\Delta t \simeq \hbar / m_e c^2$ during which quantum tunneling occurs, and find the transition rate per unit time and volume

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V} \simeq D_s \frac{\alpha E^2}{2\pi^2 \hbar} e^{-\pi E_c / E}, \quad (\text{A.4.11})$$

where $D_s = 2$ for a spin-1/2 particle and $D_s = 1$ for spin-0, V is the volume. The JWKB result contains the Sauter exponential $e^{-\pi E_c / E}$ Sauter (1931a) and reproduces as well the prefactor of Heisenberg and Euler Heisenberg and Euler (1936).

Let us specify a quantitative condition for the validity of the above “semi-classical” JWKB approximation, which is in fact leading term of the expansion of wave function in powers of \hbar . In order to have the next-leading term be much smaller than the leading term, the de Broglie wavelength $\lambda(z) \equiv$

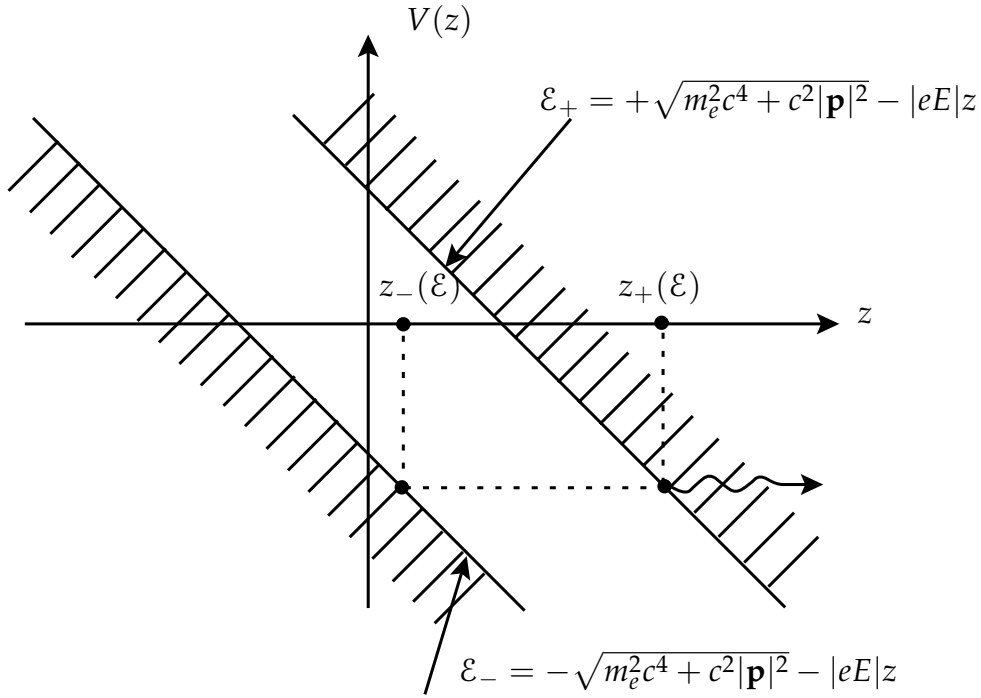


Figure A.3.: Energy-spectra \mathcal{E}_{\pm} with an external electric field \mathbf{E} along $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ -direction (for $-\ell < z < \ell$ and $\ell \gg 1$). Crossing energy-levels appear, indicated by a dashed line between two continuum energy-spectra \mathcal{E}_- and \mathcal{E}_+ . The turning points $z_{\pm}(\mathcal{E})$ for the crossing energy-levels \mathcal{E} of Eq. (A.4.5) are marked. This implies that virtual electrons at these crossing energy-levels in the negative energy-spectrum can quantum-mechanically tunnel toward infinity [$z \gg z_+(\mathcal{E})$] as real electrons; empty states left over in the negative energy-spectrum represent real positrons. This is how quantum tunneling produces pairs of electrons and positrons.

$2\pi\hbar/p_z(z)$ of wave-function of the tunneling particle must have only small spatial variations Landau and Lifshitz (1981a):

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} \left| \frac{d\lambda(z)}{dz} \right| = \frac{\hbar}{p_z^2(z)} \left| \frac{dp_z(z)}{dz} \right| \ll 1. \quad (\text{A.4.12})$$

with $p_z(z)$ of Eq. (A.4.3). The electric potential $A_0 = -e|z|Z$ must satisfy

$$\frac{\hbar}{2p_z^3} \left| \frac{dA_0}{dz} \right| \simeq \frac{E}{E_c} \ll 1. \quad (\text{A.4.13})$$

so that the result (A.4.11) is valid only for $E \ll E_c$.

A.4.2. An additional constant magnetic field

The result (A.4.11) can be generalized to include a uniform magnetic field \mathbf{B} . The calculation is simplest by going into a Lorentz frame in which \mathbf{B} and \mathbf{E} are parallel to each other, which is always possible. This frame will be referred to a *center-of-fields frame*, and the associated fields will be denoted by \mathbf{B}_{CF} and \mathbf{E}_{CF} . Suppose the initial \mathbf{B} and \mathbf{E} are not parallel, then we perform a Lorentz transformation with a velocity determined by Landau and Lifshitz (1975)

$$\frac{\mathbf{v}/c}{1 + (|\mathbf{v}|/c)^2} = \frac{\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}}{|\mathbf{E}|^2 + |\mathbf{B}|^2}, \quad (\text{A.4.14})$$

in the direction $\hat{\mathbf{v}} \equiv \mathbf{v}/|\mathbf{v}|$ as follows

$$\mathbf{E}_{\text{CF}} = (\mathbf{E} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{v}})\hat{\mathbf{v}} + \frac{\hat{\mathbf{v}} \times (\mathbf{E} \times \hat{\mathbf{v}}) + (\mathbf{v}/c) \times \mathbf{B}}{[1 - (|\mathbf{v}|/c)^2]^{1/2}}, \quad (\text{A.4.15})$$

$$\mathbf{B}_{\text{CF}} = (\mathbf{B} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{v}})\hat{\mathbf{v}} + \frac{\hat{\mathbf{v}} \times (\mathbf{B} \times \hat{\mathbf{v}}) - (\mathbf{v}/c) \times \mathbf{E}}{[1 - (|\mathbf{v}|/c)^2]^{1/2}}. \quad (\text{A.4.16})$$

The fields \mathbf{B}_{CF} and \mathbf{E}_{CF} are now parallel. As a consequence, the wave function factorizes into a Landau state and into a spinor function, this last one first calculated by Sauter (see Eqs. (A.3.7),(A.3.8)). The energy spectrum in the JWKB approximation is still given by Eq. (A.4.1), but the squared transverse momenta \mathbf{p}_{\perp}^2 is quantized due to the presence of the magnetic field: they are replaced by the Landau energy levels whose transverse energies have the discrete spectrum

$$c^2 \mathbf{p}_{\perp}^2 = 2m_e c^2 \times \frac{\mathbf{p}_{\perp}^2}{2m_e} \rightarrow 2m_e c^2 \times g \frac{\hbar \omega_L}{2} \left(n + \frac{1}{2} + \hat{\sigma} \right), \quad n = 0, 1, 2, \dots, \quad (\text{A.4.17})$$

where $g = 2 + \alpha/\pi + \dots$ is the anomalous magnetic moment of the electron Schwinger (1948a); Feynman (1949a); Lautrup et al. (1972); Cvitanović

and Kinoshita (1974); Bailey et al. (1977), $\omega_L = e|\mathbf{B}_{CF}|/m_e c$ the Landau frequency, $\hat{\sigma} = \pm 1/2$ for a spin-1/2 particle ($\hat{\sigma} = 0$ for a spin-0 particle) are eigenvalues of spinor operator σ_z in the $(\hat{\mathbf{z}})$ -direction, i.e., in the common direction of \mathbf{E}_{CF} and \mathbf{B}_{CF} in the selected frame. The quantum number n characterizing the Landau levels is associated with harmonic oscillations in the plane orthogonal to \mathbf{E}_{CF} and \mathbf{B}_{CF} . Apart from the replacement (A.4.17), the JWKB calculation remains the same as in the case of constant electric field (A.4.11). We must only replace the integration over the transverse phase-space $\int dx dy d\mathbf{p}_\perp / (2\pi\hbar)^2$ in Eq. (A.4.10) by the sum over all Landau levels with the degeneracy $V_\perp e|\mathbf{B}_{CF}| / (2\pi\hbar c)$ Landau and Lifshitz (1981a):

$$\frac{V_\perp e|\mathbf{B}_{CF}|}{2\pi\hbar c} \sum_{n\hat{\sigma}} \exp \left[-\pi \frac{2c\hbar |e||\mathbf{B}_{CF}|(n + 1/2 + \hat{\sigma}) + (m_e c^2)^2}{e|\mathbf{E}_{CF}|c\hbar} \right]. \quad (\text{A.4.18})$$

The results are

$$\frac{V_\perp e|\mathbf{B}_{CF}|}{2\pi\hbar c} \coth \left(\frac{\pi|\mathbf{B}_{CF}|}{|\mathbf{E}_{CF}|} \right) \exp \left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{|\mathbf{E}_{CF}|} \right), \quad \text{spin} - 1/2 \text{ particle} \quad (\text{A.4.19})$$

and

$$\frac{V_\perp e|\mathbf{B}_{CF}|}{4\pi\hbar c} \sinh^{-1} \left(\frac{\pi|\mathbf{B}_{CF}|}{|\mathbf{E}_{CF}|} \right) \exp \left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{|\mathbf{E}_{CF}|} \right), \quad \text{spin} - 0 \text{ particle}. \quad (\text{A.4.20})$$

We find the pair-production rate per unit time and volume

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V} \simeq \frac{\alpha|\mathbf{B}_{CF}||\mathbf{E}_{CF}|}{\pi\hbar} \coth \left(\frac{\pi|\mathbf{B}_{CF}|}{|\mathbf{E}_{CF}|} \right) \exp \left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{|\mathbf{E}_{CF}|} \right), \quad \text{spin} - 1/2 \text{ particle} \quad (\text{A.4.21})$$

and

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V} \simeq \frac{\alpha|\mathbf{B}_{CF}||\mathbf{E}_{CF}|}{2\pi\hbar} \sinh^{-1} \left(\frac{\pi|\mathbf{B}_{CF}|}{|\mathbf{E}_{CF}|} \right) \exp \left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{|\mathbf{E}_{CF}|} \right), \quad \text{spin} - 0 \text{ particle}. \quad (\text{A.4.22})$$

We can now go back to an arbitrary Lorentz frame by expressing the result in terms of the two Lorentz invariants that can be formed from the \mathbf{B} and \mathbf{E} fields: the scalar S and the pseudoscalar P

$$S \equiv \frac{1}{4} F_{\mu\nu} F^{\mu\nu} = \frac{1}{2} (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2); \quad P \equiv \frac{1}{4} F_{\mu\nu} \tilde{F}^{\mu\nu} = \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B}, \quad (\text{A.4.23})$$

where $\tilde{F}^{\mu\nu} \equiv \epsilon^{\mu\nu\lambda\kappa} F_{\lambda\kappa}$ is the dual field tensor. We define the invariants ε and β as the solutions of the invariant equations

$$\varepsilon^2 - \beta^2 \equiv \mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2 \equiv 2S, \quad \varepsilon\beta \equiv \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B} \equiv P, \quad (\text{A.4.24})$$

and obtain

$$\varepsilon \equiv \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{\sqrt{(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2 + 4(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2} + (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)} = \sqrt{(S^2 + P^2)^{1/2} + (\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})} \quad (\text{A.4.25})$$

$$\beta \equiv \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \sqrt{\sqrt{(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2 + 4(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2} - (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)} = \sqrt{(S^2 + P^2)^{1/2} - (\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})} \quad (\text{A.4.26})$$

In the special frame with parallel \mathbf{B}_{CF} and \mathbf{E}_{CF} , we see that $\beta = |\mathbf{B}_{\text{CF}}|$ and $\varepsilon = |\mathbf{E}_{\text{CF}}|$, so that we can replace (A.4.21) and (A.4.22) directly by the invariant expressions

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V} \simeq \frac{\alpha\beta\varepsilon}{\pi\hbar} \coth\left(\frac{\pi\beta}{\varepsilon}\right) \exp\left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{\varepsilon}\right), \quad \text{spin} - 1/2 \text{ particle} \quad (\text{A.4.27})$$

and

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V} \simeq \frac{\alpha\beta\varepsilon}{2\pi\hbar} \sinh^{-1}\left(\frac{\pi\beta}{\varepsilon}\right) \exp\left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{\varepsilon}\right), \quad \text{spin} - 0 \text{ particle}, \quad (\text{A.4.28})$$

which are pair-production rates in arbitrary constant electromagnetic fields.

B. Nonlinear electrodynamics and rate of pair creation

B.1. Hans Euler and light-light scattering

Hans Euler in his celebrated diplom thesis Euler (1936) discussed at the University of Leipzig called attention on the reaction

$$\gamma_1 \gamma_2 \longrightarrow e^+ e^- \longrightarrow \gamma'_1 \gamma'_2$$

He recalled that Halpern Halpern (1933) and Debye Debye (1934) first recognized that Dirac theory of electrons and the Dirac process (A.0.1) and the Breit-Wheeler (A.0.2) had fundamental implication for the light on light scattering and consequently implied a modifications of the Maxwell equations.

If the energy of the photons is high enough then a real electron-positron pair is created, following Breit and Wheeler Breit and Wheeler (1934). Again, if electron-positron pair do exist, two photons are created following Dirac (1930b). In the case that the sum of energies of the two photons are smaller than the threshold $2m_e c^2$ then the reaction (above) still occurs through a virtual pair of electron and positron.

Under this condition the light-light scattering implies deviation from superposition principle, and therefore the linear theory of electromagnetism has to be substituted by a nonlinear one. Maxwell equations acquire nonlinear corrections due to the Dirac theory of the electron.

Euler first attempted to describe this nonlinearity by an effective Lagrangian representing the interaction term. He showed that the interaction term had to contain the forth power of the field strengths and its derivatives

$$\mathcal{E}_{int} = \text{const} \int \left[FFFF + \text{const}' \frac{\partial F}{\partial x} \frac{\partial F}{\partial x} FF + \dots \right], \quad (\text{B.1.1})$$

F being symbolically the electromagnetic field strength. He also estimated that the constants may be determined from dimensional considerations. Since the interaction U_{int} has the dimension of energy density and contains electric charge in the forth power, the constants up to numerical factors are

$$\text{const} = \frac{\hbar c}{e^2} \frac{1}{E_0^2}, \quad \text{const}' = \left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2, \quad (\text{B.1.2})$$

where $E_0 = e \left(\frac{e^2}{m_e c^2} \right)^{-2}$, namely “the field strength at the edge of the electron”.

From these general qualitative considerations Euler made an important further step taking into account that the Lagrangian (B.1.1) describing such a process had necessarily be built from invariants constructed from the field strengths, such as $\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2$ and $\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B}$ following a precise procedure indicated by Max Born Pauli (1981). Contrary to the usual Maxwell Lagrangian which is only a function of $F_{\mu\nu}^2$ Euler first recognized that virtual electron-positron loops are represented by higher powers in the field strength corrections to the linear action of electromagnetism and written down the Lagrangian with second order corrections, expression

$$\mathcal{L} = \frac{\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2}{8\pi} + \frac{1}{\alpha} \frac{1}{E_0^2} \left[-a_E (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2 - b_E (\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2 \right], \quad (\text{B.1.3})$$

where

$$a_E = -1/(360\pi^2), \quad b_E = -7/(360\pi^2). \quad (\text{B.1.4})$$

The crucial result of Euler has been to determine the values of the coefficients (B.1.4) using time dependent perturbation technique, e.g. Landau and Lifshitz (1981a) in Dirac theory.

Euler computed only the lowest order corrections in α to Maxwell equations, namely “the 1/137 fraction of the field strength at the edge of the electron”. This perturbation method did not allow calculation of the tunneling rate for electron-positron pair creation in strong electromagnetic field which became the topic of the further work with Heisenberg Heisenberg and Euler (1936).

B.2. Born’s nonlinear electromagnetism

A nonlinear theory of electrodynamics was independently proposed and developed by Max Born Born (1933), Born (1934) and later by Born and Infeld Born and Infeld (1934). The main motivation in Born’s approach was the avoidance of infinities in an elementary particle description. Among the classical discussions on the fundamental interactions this topic had attracted attention of a large number of scientists. It was clear in fact from the considerations of J.J. Thomson, Abraham Lorentz that a point-like electron needed to have necessarily an infinite mass. The existence of a finite radius was attempted by Poincare by introduction of non-electromagnetic stresses. Also among the attempts we have to recall the theory of Mie Mie (1912a,b, 1913); Born (1914) modifying the Maxwell theory by nonlinear terms. This theory however had serious difficulty because solutions of Mie field equations depend on the absolute value of the potentials.

Max Born developed his theory in collaboration with Infeld. This alternative to the Maxwell theory is today called the Born-Infeld theory which still finds interest in the framework of subnuclear physics. The coauthorship of Infeld is felt by the general premise of the article in distinguishing the *unitarian* standpoint versus the *dualistic* standpoint in the description of particles and fields. "In the dualistic standpoint the particles are the sources of the field, are acted upon by the field but are not a part of the field. Their characteristic properties are inertia, measured by specific constant, the mass" Born and Infeld (1934). The unitarian theory developed by Thomson, Lorentz and Mie tends to describe the particle as a point-like singularity but with finite mass-energy density fulfilling uniquely an appropriate nonlinear field equations. It is interesting that this approach was later developed in the classical book by Einstein and Infeld Einstein and Infeld (1967) as well as in the classical paper by Einstein, Infeld and Hoffmann Einstein et al. (1938) on equations of motion in General Relativity.

In the Born-Infeld approach the emphasis is directed to a formalism encompassing General Relativity. But for simplicity the field equations are solved within the realm only of the electromagnetic field. A basic tensor $a_{\alpha\beta} = g_{\alpha\beta} + f_{\alpha\beta}$ is introduced. Its symmetric part $g_{\alpha\beta}$ is identified with a metric component and the antisymmetric part $f_{\alpha\beta}$ with the electromagnetic field. Formally therefore both the electromagnetic and gravitational fields are present although the authors explicitly avoided to insert the part of the Lagrangian describing the gravitational interaction and focused uniquely on the following non-linear lagrangian

$$\mathcal{L} = \sqrt{1 + 2S - P^2} - 1. \quad (\text{B.2.1})$$

The necessity to have the quadratic form of the G_B term is due to obtain a lagrangian invariant under reflections as pointed out by W. Pauli in his classical book Pauli (1981). For small field strengths lagrangian (B.2.1) has the same form as (B.1.3) obtained by Euler.

From the non-linear lagrangian (B.2.1) Born and Infeld calculated the fields \mathbf{D} and \mathbf{H} through a tensor, $P_{i0} = D^i$ and $P_{ij} = -\epsilon^{ijk} H^k$, where

$$P_{\mu\nu} \equiv \frac{\delta \mathcal{L}_{\text{Born}}}{\delta F^{\mu\nu}} = \frac{F_{\mu\nu} - P \tilde{F}_{\mu\nu}}{\sqrt{1 + 2S - P^2}}, \quad (\text{B.2.2})$$

and introduced therefore an effective electric permittivity and magnetic permeability which are functions of S and P . It is very interesting that Born and Infeld managed to obtain a solution for electrostatic field of a point particle ($P = 0$) in which the radial component $D_r = e/r^2$ becomes infinite as $r \rightarrow 0$ but the radial component of \mathbf{E} field is perfectly finite and is given by the ex-

pression

$$E_r = \frac{e}{r_0^2 \sqrt{1 + (r/r_0)^4}}, \quad (\text{B.2.3})$$

where r_0 is the “radius” of the electron.

Most important the integral of the electromagnetic energy is finite and given by

$$\int \mathcal{H}_{\text{Born}} dV = \int (P_{\mu\nu} F^{\mu\nu} - \mathcal{L}_{\text{Born}}) dV = 1.2361 \frac{e^2}{r_0}, \quad (\text{B.2.4})$$

Equating this energy to $m_e c^2$ they obtain $r_0 = 1.2361 e^2 / (m_e c^2)$.

The attempt therefore is to have a theoretical framework explaining the mass of the electron solely by a modified nonlinear electromagnetic field theory. This approach has not been followed by the current theories in particle physics where the dualistic approach is today adopted by which the particles are described by half-integer spin fields and field by integer-spin fields.

The initial goal to develop a fully covariant theory of electrodynamics within General Relativity although not developed by Born himself was not abandoned. Hoffmann found an analytic solution Hoffmann (1935) to the coupled system of the Einstein-Born-Infeld equations.

B.3. The Euler-Heisenberg lagrangian

The two different approaches Born and Infeld and of Euler present strong analogies and substantial differences. The attempt of Born and Infeld was to obtain at once a new nonlinear Lagrangian for electromagnetic field replacing the Maxwell Lagrangian in order to avoid the appearance of infinite self-energy for a classical point-like electron.

The attempt of Euler Euler and Kockel (1935) was more conservative, to obtain the first order nonlinear perturbation corrections to the Maxwell Lagrangian on the ground of the Dirac theory of the electron.

Born and Infeld in addition introduced an effective dielectric constant and an effective magnetic permeability of the vacuum out of their nonlinear Lagrangian (B.2.1). This approach was adopted as well in the classical work of Heisenberg and Euler Heisenberg and Euler (1936). They introduced an effective Lagrangian on the ground of the Dirac theory of the electron and expressed the result in integral form duly taking away infinities, see Sec. B.3.1. This integral was explicitly performed in the weak field limit and the special attention was given to the real part, see Sec. B.3.2 and the imaginary part, see Sec. B.3.3.

A successive work of Weisskopf Weisskopf (1936) derived the same equations of Heisenberg and Euler for the real part of the dielectric constant and magnetic permeability by using instead of the spin 1/2 particle of the Dirac equation the scalar relativistic wave equation of Klein and Gordon. The re-

sults differ from the one of spin 1/2 particle only by a factor 2 due to the Bose statistics, see Sec. B.3.1. The technique used by Weisskopf refers to the case of magnetic field of arbitrary strengths and describes the electric field perturbatively, see Sec. B.3.2. As we will see in the following we have solved the Heisenberg and Euler integral in the case of arbitrarily large both electric and magnetic fields, see Sec. C.4.3.

B.3.1. Real part of the effective lagrangian

We now recall how Heisenberg and Euler adopted the crucial idea of Max Born to describe the nonlinear Lagrangian by the introduction of an effective dielectric constant and magnetic permeability Heisenberg and Euler (1936). They further extended this idea by adopting the most general case of a dielectric constant containing real and imaginary part. Such an approach is generally followed in the description of dissipative media. The crucial point was to relate electron-positron pair creation process to imaginary part of the Lagrangian.

Let \mathcal{L} to be the Lagrangian density of electromagnetic fields \mathbf{E}, \mathbf{B} , a Legendre transformation produces the Hamiltonian density:

$$\mathcal{H} = E_i \frac{\delta \mathcal{L}}{\delta E_i} - \mathcal{L}. \quad (\text{B.3.1})$$

In Maxwell's theory, the two densities are given by

$$\mathcal{L}_M = \frac{1}{8\pi}(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2), \quad \mathcal{H}_M = \frac{1}{8\pi}(\mathbf{E}^2 + \mathbf{B}^2). \quad (\text{B.3.2})$$

To quantitatively describe non-linear electromagnetic properties of the vacuum based on the Dirac theory, Heisenberg and Euler introduced an effective Lagrangian \mathcal{L}_{eff} of the vacuum state and an associated Hamiltonian density

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = \mathcal{L}_M + \Delta \mathcal{L}, \quad \mathcal{H}_{\text{eff}} = \mathcal{H}_M + \Delta \mathcal{H}. \quad (\text{B.3.3})$$

Here \mathcal{H}_{eff} and \mathcal{L}_{eff} are complex functions of \mathbf{E} and \mathbf{B} . In Maxwell's theory, $\Delta \mathcal{L} \equiv 0$ in the vacuum, so that $\mathbf{D} = \mathbf{E}$ and $\mathbf{H} = \mathbf{B}$.

Heisenberg and Euler derived the induced fields \mathbf{D}, \mathbf{H} as the derivatives

$$D_i \equiv \frac{\delta \mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}}{\delta E_i}, \quad H_i \equiv -\frac{\delta \mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}}{\delta B_i}. \quad (\text{B.3.4})$$

Consequently, the vacuum behaves as a dielectric and permeable medium Heisenberg and Euler (1936); Weisskopf (1936) in which,

$$D_i = \sum_k \epsilon_{ik} E_k, \quad H_i = \sum_k \mu_{ik} B_k, \quad (\text{B.3.5})$$

where ϵ_{ik} and μ_{ik} are complex and field-dependent dielectric and permeability tensors of the vacuum.

The discussions on complex dielectric and permeability tensors (ϵ_{ik} and μ_{ik}) can be found for example in Ref. Landau and Lifshitz (1960). The effective Lagrangian and Hamiltonian densities in such a medium are given by

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{8\pi}(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{D} - \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{H}), \quad \mathcal{H}_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{8\pi}(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{D} + \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{H}). \quad (\text{B.3.6})$$

In this medium, the conservation of electromagnetic energy has the form

$$-\text{div} \mathbf{S} = \mathbf{E} \cdot \frac{\partial \mathbf{D}}{\partial t} + \mathbf{B} \cdot \frac{\partial \mathbf{H}}{\partial t}, \quad \mathbf{S} = c \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}, \quad (\text{B.3.7})$$

where \mathbf{S} is the Poynting vector describing the density of electromagnetic energy flux. Consider complex and monochromatic electromagnetic field

$$\mathbf{E} = \mathbf{E}(\omega) \exp -i(\omega t); \quad \mathbf{B} = \mathbf{B}(\omega) \exp -i(\omega t), \quad (\text{B.3.8})$$

of frequency ω , and dielectric and permeability tensors are frequency-dependent, i.e., $\epsilon_{ik}(\omega)$ and $\mu_{ik}(\omega)$. Substituting these fields and tensors into the r.h.s. of Eq. (B.3.7), one obtains the dissipation of electromagnetic energy per time into the medium,

$$Q_{\text{dis}} = \frac{\omega}{2} \{ \text{Im} [\epsilon_{ik}(\omega)] E_i E_k^* + \text{Im} [\mu_{ik}(\omega)] B_i B_k^* \}. \quad (\text{B.3.9})$$

This is nonzero if $\epsilon_{ik}(\omega)$ and $\mu_{ik}(\omega)$ contain an imaginary part. The dissipation of electromagnetic energy is accompanied by heat production. In the light of the third thermodynamical law of entropy increase, the energy lost Q_{dis} of electromagnetic fields in the medium is always positive, i.e., $Q_{\text{dis}} > 0$. As a consequence, $\text{Im}[\epsilon_{ik}(\omega)] > 0$ and $\text{Im}[\mu_{ik}(\omega)] > 0$. The real parts of $\epsilon_{ik}(\omega)$ and $\mu_{ik}(\omega)$ represent an electric and magnetic polarizability of the vacuum and leads, for example, to the refraction of light in an electromagnetic field, or to the elastic scattering of light from light. The $n_{ij}(\omega) = \sqrt{\epsilon_{ik}(\omega)\mu_{kj}(\omega)}$ is the reflection index of the medium. The field-dependence of ϵ_{ik} and μ_{ik} implies non-linear electromagnetic properties of the vacuum as a dielectric and permeable medium.

The effective Lagrangian density (B.3.3) is a relativistically invariant function of the field strengths \mathbf{E} and \mathbf{B} . Since $(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)$ and $\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B}$ are relativistic invariants, one can formally expand $\Delta\mathcal{L}$ in powers of weak field strengths:

$$\Delta\mathcal{L} = \kappa_{20}(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2 + \kappa_{02}(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2 + \kappa_{30}(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^3 + \kappa_{12}(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2 + \dots, \quad (\text{B.3.10})$$

where κ_{ij} are field-independent constants whose subscripts indicate the powers of $(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)$ and $\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B}$, respectively. Note that the invariant $\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B}$ appears

only in even powers since it is odd under parity and electromagnetism is parity invariant. The Lagrangian density (B.3.10) corresponds, via relation (B.3.1), to

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta\mathcal{H} = & \kappa_{2,0}(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)(3\mathbf{E}^2 + \mathbf{B}^2) + \kappa_{0,2}(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2 \\ & + \kappa_{3,0}(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2(5\mathbf{E}^2 + \mathbf{B}^2) + \kappa_{1,2}(3\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2 + \dots \end{aligned} \quad (\text{B.3.11})$$

To obtain \mathcal{H}_{eff} in Dirac's theory, one has to calculate

$$\Delta\mathcal{H} = \sum_k \left\{ \psi_k^*, \left[\boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot (-i\hbar c \nabla + e\mathbf{A}) + \beta_D m_e c^2 \right] \psi_k \right\}, \quad (\text{B.3.12})$$

where $\{\psi_k(x)\}$ are the wave functions of the occupied negative-energy states. When performing the sum, one encounters infinities which were removed by Dirac, Heisenberg, and Weisskopf Weisskopf (1936); Dirac (1934); Heisenberg (1934); Weisskopf (1934) by a suitable subtraction.

Heisenberg Heisenberg (1934) expressed the Hamiltonian density in terms of the density matrix $\rho(x, x') = \sum_k \psi_k^*(x) \psi_k(x')$ Dirac (1934). Heisenberg and Euler Heisenberg and Euler (1936) calculated the coefficients κ_{ij} . They did so by solving the Dirac equation in the presence of parallel electric and magnetic fields \mathbf{E} and \mathbf{B} in a specific direction,

$$\psi_k(x) \rightarrow \psi_{p_z, n, s_3} \equiv e^{\frac{i}{\hbar}(z p_z - \mathcal{E} t)} u_n(y) \chi_{s_3}(x), \quad n = 0, 1, 2, \dots \quad (\text{B.3.13})$$

where $\{u_n(y)\}$ are the Landau states¹ depending on the magnetic field and $\chi_{s_3}(x)$ are the spinor functions calculated by Sauter Sauter (1931a). Heisenberg and Euler used the Euler-Maclaurin formula to perform the sum over n , and obtained for the additional Lagrangian in (B.3.3) the integral representation

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = & \frac{e^2}{16\pi^2 \hbar c} \int_0^\infty e^{-s} \frac{ds}{s^3} \left[i s^2 \bar{E} \bar{B} \frac{\cos(s[\bar{E}^2 - \bar{B}^2 + 2i(\bar{E} \bar{B})]^{1/2}) + \text{c.c.}}{\cos(s[\bar{E}^2 - \bar{B}^2 + 2i(\bar{E} \bar{B})]^{1/2}) - \text{c.c.}} \right. \\ & \left. + \left(\frac{m_e^2 c^3}{e \hbar} \right)^2 + \frac{s^2}{3} (|\bar{B}|^2 - |\bar{E}|^2) \right], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{B.3.14})$$

where \bar{E}, \bar{B} are the dimensionless reduced fields in the unit of the critical field E_c ,

$$\bar{E} = \frac{|\mathbf{E}|}{E_c}, \quad \bar{B} = \frac{|\mathbf{B}|}{E_c}. \quad (\text{B.3.15})$$

Expanding this expression in powers of α up to α^3 yields the following values

¹Landau determined the quantum states of a particle in an external magnetic field in 1930 Landau and Lifshitz (1981a); Berestetskii et al. (1971).

for the four constants:

$$\kappa_{2,0} = \frac{\alpha}{90\pi} E_c^{-2}, \quad \kappa_{0,2} = 7\kappa_{2,0}, \quad \kappa_{3,0} = \frac{8\alpha}{315\pi} E_c^{-4}, \quad \kappa_{1,2} = \frac{13}{2}\kappa_{3,0}. \quad (\text{B.3.16})$$

The above results will receive higher corrections in QED and are correct only up to order α^2 . Up to this order, the field-dependent dielectric and permeability tensors ϵ_{ik} and μ_{ik} (B.3.5) have the following real parts for weak fields

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Re}(\epsilon_{ik}) &= \delta_{ik} + \frac{\alpha}{45\pi} [2(\bar{E}^2 - \bar{B}^2)\delta_{ik} + 7\bar{B}_i\bar{B}_k] + \mathcal{O}(\alpha^2), \\ \text{Re}(\mu_{ik}) &= \delta_{ik} + \frac{\alpha}{45\pi} [2(\bar{E}^2 - \bar{B}^2)\delta_{ik} + 7\bar{E}_i\bar{E}_k] + \mathcal{O}(\alpha^2). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{B.3.17})$$

B.3.2. Weisskopf effective Lagrangian

Weisskopf (1936) adopted a simpler method. He considered first the special case in which $\mathbf{E} = 0, \mathbf{B} \neq 0$ and used the Landau states to find $\Delta\mathcal{H}$ of Eq. (B.3.11), extracting from this $\kappa_{2,0}$ and $\kappa_{3,0}$. Then he added a weak electric field $\mathbf{E} \neq 0$ to calculate perturbatively its contributions to $\Delta\mathcal{H}$ in the Born approximation (see for example Landau and Lifshitz (1981a)). This led again to the coefficients (B.3.16),(B.3.17). In addition to the weak-field expansion of real part of effective Lagrangian, Weisskopf also obtained the leading order term considering very large field strengths $\bar{E} \gg 1$ or $\bar{B} \gg 1$,

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} \sim -\frac{e^2}{12\pi^2\hbar c} E^2 \ln \bar{E}; \quad \Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} \sim \frac{e^2}{12\pi^2\hbar c} B^2 \ln \bar{B}, \quad (\text{B.3.18})$$

We shall address this same problem in Sec. C.4.3 in the framework of QED Ruffini and Xue (2006) and we will compare and contrast our exact expressions with the one given by Weisskopf. The crucial point stressed by Weisskopf is that if one limits to the analysis of the real part of the dielectric constant and magnetic permeability then the nonlinearity of effective electromagnetic Lagrangian represent only small corrections even for field strengths which are much higher than the critical field strength E_c . As we will show however, the contribution of the imaginary part of the effective Lagrangian diverges as pointed out by Heisenberg and Euler (1936).

B.3.3. Imaginary part of the effective Lagrangian

Heisenberg and Euler (1936) were the first to realize that for $\mathbf{E} \neq 0$ the powers series expansion (B.3.10) is not convergent, due to singularities of the integrand in (B.3.14) at $s = \pi/\bar{E}, 2\pi/\bar{E}, \dots$. They concluded that the powers series expansion (B.3.10) does not yield all corrections to the Maxwell Lagrangian, calling for a more careful evaluation of the integral representation (B.3.14). Selecting an integration path that avoids these

singularities, they found an imaginary term. Motivated by Sauter's work Sauter (1931a) on Klein paradox Klein (1929); Sauter (1931b), Heisenberg and Euler estimated the size of the imaginary term in the effective Lagrangian as

$$\text{Im}\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = -\frac{8}{\pi}\bar{E}^2 m_e c^2 \left(\frac{m_e c}{h}\right)^3 e^{-\pi/\bar{E}}, \quad (\text{B.3.19})$$

and pointed out that it is associated with pair production by the electric field. The exponential in this expression is exactly reproducing the Sauter result (A.3.9). However, for the first time the pre-exponential factor is determined. This imaginary term in the effective Lagrangian is related to the imaginary parts of field-dependent dielectric ϵ and permeability μ of the vacuum.

In 1950's, Schwinger Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b) derived the same formula (B.3.14) within the *Quantum Electrodynamics* (QED). In the following sections, our discussions and computations will focus on the Schwinger formula, the real and imaginary parts of effective Lagrangian for arbitrary values of electromagnetic field strength.

The consideration of Heisenberg and Euler were applied to a uniform electric field. The exponential factor $e^{-\pi/\bar{E}}$ in Eqs. (A.3.9) and (B.3.19) characterizes the transmission coefficient of quantum tunneling, Heisenberg and Euler Heisenberg and Euler (1936) introduced the critical field strength (B.3.15). They compared it with the field strength E_e of an electron at its classical radius, $E_e = e/r_e^2$ where $r_e = \alpha\hbar/(m_e c)$. They found the field strength E_e is 137 time larger than the critical field strength E_c , i.e. $E_e = \alpha^{-1}E_c$. At a critical radius $r_c = \alpha^{1/2}\hbar/(m_e c) < r_e$, the field strength of the electron would be equal to the critical field strength E_c . There have been various attempts to reach the critical field: in Secs. E.5 and E.6 we will examine the possibility of reaching such value around the bare nucleus. In Sec. F.5 we will discuss the possibility of reaching such a field in an astrophysical setting around a black hole.

In conclusion, if an electric field attempts to tear an electron out of the filled state the gap energy must be gained over the distance of two electron radii. The virtual particles give an electron a radius of the order of the Compton wavelength λ_C . Thus we expect a significant creation of electron-positron pairs if the work done by the electric field E over twice the Compton wavelength $\hbar/m_e c$ is larger than $2m_e c^2$

$$eE \left(\frac{2\hbar}{m_e c} \right) > 2m_e c^2.$$

This condition defines a critical electric field (3.2.1) above which pair creation becomes abundant. To have an idea how large this critical electric field is, we compare it with the value of the electric field required to ionize a hydrogen atom. There the above inequality holds for twice of the Bohr radius and the

Rydberg energy

$$eE^{\text{ion}} \left(\frac{2\hbar}{\alpha m_e c} \right) > \alpha^2 m_e c^2,$$

so that $E_c \approx E_c^{\text{ion}}/\alpha^3$ is about 10^6 times as large, a value that has so far not been reached in a laboratory on Earth.

C. Pair production and annihilation in QED

C.1. Quantum Electrodynamics

Quantum Electro-Dynamics (QED), the quantum theory of electrons, positrons, and photons, was established by by Tomonaga Tomonaga (1946), Feynmann Feynman (1948, 1949b,a), Schwinger Schwinger (1948b, 1949a,b) and Dyson Dyson (1949a,b) and others in the 1940's and 1950's Schwinger (1958). For decades, both theoretical computations and experimental tests have been developed to great perfection. It is now one of the fundamental pillars of the theory of the microscopic world. Many excellent monographs have been written Bogoliubov and Shirkov (1959); Bjorken and Drell (1998, 1965); Feynman (1998); Feynman and Hibbs (1965); Berestetskii et al. (1971); Itzykson and Zuber (2006); Lee (1990); Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b, 1970, 1998); Weinberg (1995); Kleinert (1990), so the concepts of the theory and the techniques of calculation are well explained. On the basis of this material, we review some aspects and properties of the QED that are relevant to the subject of the present review.

QED combines a relativistic extension of quantum mechanics with a quantized electromagnetic field. The non relativistic system has a unique ground state, which is the state with no particle, the *vacuum state*. The excited states contain a fixed number of electrons and an arbitrary number of photons. As electrons are allowed to become relativistic, their number becomes also arbitrary, and it is possible to create pairs of electrons and positrons.

In the modern functional integral description, the non relativistic system is described by a given set of fluctuating particle orbits running forward in time. If the theory is continued to an imaginary time, in which case one speaks of a *Euclidean formulation*, the non relativistic system corresponds to a canonical statistical ensemble of trajectories.

In the relativistic system, the orbits form worldlines in four-dimensional spacetime which may run in any time direction, in particular they may run backwards in time, in which case the backward parts of a line correspond to positrons. The number of lines is arbitrary and the Euclidean formulation corresponds to a grand-canonical ensemble. The most efficient way of describing such an ensemble is by a single fluctuating field Kleinert (1990).

The vacuum state contains no physical particles. It does, however, harbor

zero-point oscillations of the electron and photon fields. In the world-line description, the vacuum is represented by a grand-canonical ensemble of interacting closed world lines. These are called *virtual particles*. Thus the vacuum contains the full complexity of a many-body problem so that one may rightfully say that *the vacuum is the world* Streater and Wightman (2000). In the Fourier decomposition of the fluctuating fields, virtual particles correspond to Fourier components, or *modes*, in which the four-vectors of energy and momentum $k^\mu \equiv (k^0, \mathbf{k}) \equiv (\mathcal{E}, \mathbf{k})$ do not satisfy the mass-shell relation

$$k^2 \equiv (k^0)^2 - c^2|\mathbf{k}|^2 = \mathcal{E}^2 - c^2|\mathbf{k}|^2 = m_e^2 c^4, \quad (\text{C.1.1})$$

valid for real particles.

The only way to evaluate physical consequences from QED is based on the smallness of the electromagnetic interaction. It is characterized by the dimensionless fine structure constant α . All theoretical results derived from QED are found in the form of series expansions in powers of α , which are expansions around the non-interacting system. Unfortunately, all these expansions are badly divergent (see e.g. Sec. 4.62 in Kleinert (2008)). The coefficients grow factorially fast, i.e., faster than any exponential, leading to a zero radius of convergence. Fortunately, however, the coupling α is so small that the series possess an apparent convergence up to order $1/\alpha \approx 137$, which is much higher than will be calculable for a long time to come (see e.g. Sec. 4.62 in Kleinert (2008)). With this rather academic limitation, perturbation expansions are well-defined.

In perturbation expansions, all physical processes are expressible in terms of *Feynman diagrams*. These are direct pictures of the interacting world lines of all particles. Among these lines, there are some which run to infinity. They satisfy the mass shell relation (C.1.1) and describe real particles observable in the laboratory. Those which remain inside a finite spacetime region are virtual.

The presence of virtual particles in the perturbation expansions leads to observable effects. Some of these have been measured and calculated with great accuracy. The most famous examples are

1. the electrostatic polarizability of quantum fluctuations of the QED vacuum has been measured in the Lamb shift Lamb and Retherford (1947); Triebwasser et al. (1953).
2. the anomalous magnetic moment of the electron Schwinger (1948a); Feynman (1949a); Lautrup et al. (1972); Cvitanović and Kinoshita (1974); Bailey et al. (1977).
3. the dependence of the electric charge on the distance. It is observed by measuring cross sections of electron-positron collisions, most recently

in the L3-experiments at the *Large Electron-Positron Collider* (LEP) at CERN L3C.

4. the *Casimir effect* caused by virtual photons, i.e., by the fluctuations of the electromagnetic field in the QED vacuum Casimir (1948); Fierz (1960). It causes an attractive force Sparnaay (1958); Lamoreaux (1997); Mohideen and Roy (1998) between two uncharged conducting plates in the vacuum (see also Høye et al. (2001); Harris et al. (2000); Chen et al. (2004); Xue (1989b,a); Xue and Xian (1986); Zheng and Xue (1993)).

There are, of course, many other discussions of the effects of virtual particles caused either by external boundary conditions or by external classical fields Schwinger (1992a,b, 1993a,d,b,c, 1994); Bordag (1999, 1996); Milton (2004, 2001); Xue (2001, 2003a,b, 2005).

An interesting aspect of virtual particles both theoretically and experimentally is the possibility that they can become real by the effect of external fields. In this case, real particles are excited out of the vacuum. In the previous Sec. A.3 and B.3.1, we have shown that this possibility was first pointed out in the framework of quantum mechanics by Klein, Sauter, Euler and Heisenberg Klein (1929); Sauter (1931b,a); Heisenberg and Euler (1936) who studied the behavior of the Dirac vacuum in a strong external electric field. Afterward, Schwinger studied this process and derived the probability (*Schwinger-formula*) in the field theory of Quantum Electrodynamics, which will be described in this chapter. If the field is sufficiently strong, the energy of the vacuum can be lowered by creating an electron-positron pair. This makes the vacuum unstable. This is the *Sauter-Euler-Heisenberg-Schwinger process* for electron-positron pair production. There are many reasons for the interest in the phenomenon of pair-production in a strong electric field. The most compelling one is that now both laboratory conditions and astrophysical events may now exist for observing this process.

In the following chapters, in addition to reviewing the *Schwinger-formula* and QED-effective Lagrangian in constant electromagnetic fields, we will also derive the probability of pair production in an alternating field, and discuss theoretical studies of pair production in (i) electron beam-laser collisions and (ii) Coulomb potential. In addition, the plasma oscillations of electron-positron pairs in electric fields will be reviewed. The rest part of this chapter, we shall use natural units $\hbar = c = 1$.

C.2. Basic processes in Quantum Electro-Dynamics

The total Lagrangian describing the interacting system of photons, electrons, and positrons reads Berestetskii et al. (1982)

$$\mathcal{L} = \mathcal{L}_0^\gamma + \mathcal{L}_0^{e^+e^-} + \mathcal{L}_{\text{int}}, \quad (\text{C.2.1})$$

where the free Lagrangians $\mathcal{L}_0^{e^+e^-}$ and \mathcal{L}_0^γ for electrons and photons are expressed in terms of quantized Dirac field $\psi(x)$ and quantized electromagnetic field $A_\mu(x)$ as follows:

$$\mathcal{L}_0^{e^+e^-} = \bar{\psi}(x)(i\gamma^\mu\partial_\mu - m_e)\psi(x), \quad (\text{C.2.2})$$

$$\mathcal{L}_0^\gamma = -\frac{1}{4}F_{\mu\nu}(x)F^{\mu\nu}(x) + \text{gauge-fixing term}. \quad (\text{C.2.3})$$

Here γ^μ are the 4×4 Dirac matrices, $\bar{\psi}(x) \equiv \psi^\dagger(x)\gamma^0$, and $F_{\mu\nu} = \partial_\mu A_\nu - \partial_\nu A_\mu$ denotes the electromagnetic field tensor. Minimal coupling gives rise to the interaction Lagrangian

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{int}} = -ej^\mu(x)A_\mu(x), \quad j^\mu(x) = \bar{\psi}(x)\gamma^\mu\psi(x). \quad (\text{C.2.4})$$

After quantization, the photon field is expanded into plane waves as

$$A_\mu(x) = \int \frac{d^3k}{2k_0(2\pi)^3} \sum_{\lambda=1}^3 \left[a^{(\lambda)}(\mathbf{k})\epsilon_\mu^{(\lambda)}(\mathbf{k})e^{-ikx} + a^{(\lambda)\dagger}(\mathbf{k})\epsilon_\mu^{(\lambda)*}(\mathbf{k})e^{ikx} \right], \quad (\text{C.2.5})$$

where $\epsilon_\mu^{(\lambda)}$ are polarization vectors, and $a^{(\lambda)}$, $a^{(\lambda)\dagger}$ are annihilation and creation operators of photons. The quantized fermion field $\psi(x)$ has the expansion

$$\psi(x) = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} \frac{m}{k^0} \sum_{\alpha=1,2} \left[b_\alpha(\mathbf{k}, s_3)u^{(\alpha)}(\mathbf{k}, s_3)e^{-ikx} + d_\alpha^\dagger(\mathbf{k}, s_3)v^{(\alpha)}(\mathbf{k}, s_3)e^{ikx} \right], \quad (\text{C.2.6})$$

where the four-component spinors $u^{(\alpha)}(\mathbf{k}, s_3)$, $v^{(\alpha)}(\mathbf{k}, s_3)$ are positive- and negative-energy solutions of the Dirac equation with momentum \mathbf{k} and spin component s_3 . The operators $b(\mathbf{k}, s_3)$, $b^\dagger(\mathbf{k}, s_3)$ annihilate and create electrons, the operators $d(\mathbf{k}, s_3)$ and $d^\dagger(\mathbf{k}, s_3)$ do the same thing for positrons Berestetskii et al. (1982).

In the framework of QED the transition probability from an initial to a final state for a given process is represented by the imaginary part of the unitary

S-matrix squared

$$\mathcal{P}_{f \leftarrow i} = |\langle f, \text{out} | \text{Im } \mathcal{S} | i, \text{in} \rangle|^2, \quad (\text{C.2.7})$$

where

$$\text{Im } \mathcal{S} = (2\pi)^4 \delta^4(P_f - P_i) |M_{fi}|, \quad (\text{C.2.8})$$

M_{fi} is called matrix element and δ -function stays for energy-momentum conservation in the process.

When initial state contains two particles with energies ϵ_1 and ϵ_2 , and final state contain arbitrary number of particles having 3-momenta \mathbf{p}'_i , the transition probability per unit time and unit volume is given by

$$\frac{d\mathcal{P}_{f \leftarrow i}}{dV dt} = (2\pi)^4 \delta^4(P_f - P_i) |M_{fi}|^2 \frac{1}{4\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2} \prod_i \frac{d^3 p'_i}{(2\pi)^3 2\epsilon_i}. \quad (\text{C.2.9})$$

The Lorentz-invariant differential cross-section for a given process is then obtained from (C.2.9) by dividing it on the flux density of initial particles

$$d\sigma = (2\pi)^4 \delta^4(P_f - P_i) |M_{fi}|^2 \frac{1}{4I_{kin}} \prod_i \frac{d^3 p'_i}{(2\pi)^3 2\epsilon_i}, \quad (\text{C.2.10})$$

where p_1 and p_2 are particles' 4-momenta, m_1 and m_2 are their masses respectively, $I_{kin} = \sqrt{(p_1 p_2)^2 - m_1^2 m_2^2}$.

It is useful to work with Mandelstam variables which are kinematic invariants built from particles 4-momenta. Consider the process $A + B \rightarrow C + D$. Lorentz invariant variables can be constructed in the following way

$$\begin{aligned} s &= (p_A + p_B)^2 = (p_C + p_D)^2, \\ t &= (p_A + p_C)^2 = (p_B + p_D)^2, \\ u &= (p_B + p_C)^2 = (p_A + p_D)^2. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{C.2.11})$$

Since any incoming particle can be regarded as outgoing antiparticle, it gives rise to the crossing symmetry property of the scattering amplitude, which is best reflected in the Mandelstam variables. In fact, reactions $A + B \rightarrow C + D$, $A + \bar{C} \rightarrow \bar{B} + D$ or $A + \bar{D} \rightarrow C + \bar{B}$ where the bar denotes the antiparticle are just different cross-channels of a single general reaction. The meaning of the variables s, t, u changes, but the amplitude is the same.

The S-matrix is computed through the interaction operator as

$$\mathcal{S} = \mathcal{T} \exp \left(i \int \mathcal{L}_{\text{int}} d^4 x \right), \quad (\text{C.2.12})$$

where \mathcal{T} is the chronological operator. Perturbation theory is applied, since the fine structure constant is small, while any additional interaction in colli-

sion of particles contains the factor α .

A simple and elegant way of computation of the S-matrix and consequently of the matrix element M_{fi} is due to Feynman, who discovered a graphical way to represent each QED process, in momentum representation.

In what follows we consider briefly the calculation for the case of Compton scattering process Berestetskii et al. (1982), which is represented by two Feynman diagrams. Conservation law for 4-momenta is $p + k = p' + k'$ and invariant $I_{kin} = \frac{1}{4}(s - m^2)^2$. After the calculation of traces with gamma-matrices, the final result, expressed in Mandelstam variables, is

$$|M_{fi}|^2 = 2^7 \pi^2 e^4 \left[\frac{m^2}{s - m^2} + \frac{m^2}{u - m^2} + \left(\frac{m^2}{s - m^2} + \frac{m^2}{u - m^2} \right)^2 - \frac{1}{4} \left(\frac{s - m^2}{u - m^2} + \frac{u - m^2}{s - m^2} \right) \right], \quad (\text{C.2.13})$$

$s = (p + k)^2$, $t = (p - p')^2$ and $u = (p - k')^2$. Since the differential cross-section is independent of the azimuth of \mathbf{p}'_1 relative to \mathbf{p}_1 , it is obtained from (C.2.13) as

$$d\sigma = \frac{1}{64\pi} |M_{fi}|^2 \frac{dt}{I_{kin}^2}. \quad (\text{C.2.14})$$

In the laboratory frame, where $s - m^2 = 2mw$, $u - m^2 = -2mw'$ and electron is at rest before the collision with photon, the differential cross-section of Compton scattering is thus given by the Klein-Nishina formula Klein and Nishina (1929)

$$d\sigma = \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{e^2}{m} \right)^2 \left(\frac{\omega'}{\omega} \right)^2 \left(\frac{\omega}{\omega'} + \frac{\omega'}{\omega} - \sin^2 \vartheta \right), \quad (\text{C.2.15})$$

where ω and ω' are frequencies of photon before and after the collision, ϑ is the angle at which the photon is scattered.

C.3. The Dirac and the Breit-Wheeler processes in QED

We turn now to the formulas obtained within framework of quantum mechanics by Dirac (1930b) and Breit and Wheeler (1934) within QED. The crossing-symmetry allows to readily write the matrix element for the pair production (A.0.1) and pair annihilation (A.0.2) processes with the energy-momentum conservation written as $p_+ + p_- = k_1 + k_2$. It is in fact given by the same formula (C.2.13) with the substitution $p \rightarrow p_-$, $p' \rightarrow p_+$, $k \rightarrow k_1$, $k' \rightarrow k_2$, but with different meaning of the kinematic in-

variants $s = (p_- - k_1)^2$, $t = (p_- + p_+)^2$, $u = (p_- - k_2)^2$. Matrix elements for Dirac and Breit-Wheeler processes are the same. The differential cross-section of the Dirac process is obtained from (C.2.13) with the exchange $s \leftrightarrow t$ and the invariant $I_{kin} = \frac{1}{4}t(t - 4m^2)$, which leads to (A.1.9). For the case of the Breit-Wheeler process with the invariant $I_{kin} = \frac{1}{4}t^2$, the result is reduced to (A.2.9).

Since the Dirac pair-annihilation process (A.0.1) is the inverse of Breit-Wheeler pair-production (A.0.2), thus it is useful to compare the cross-section of the two processes. We note that the squared transition amplitude $|M_{fi}|^2$ must be the same for two processes, due to the CPT invariance. The cross-sections could be different only by kinematics and statistical factors. Let us consider the pair annihilation process in the center of mass system where $\mathcal{E} = \mathcal{E}_1 + \mathcal{E}_2 = \mathcal{E}'_1 + \mathcal{E}'_2$ is the total energy, the initial and final momenta are equal and opposite, $\mathbf{p}_1 = -\mathbf{p}_2 \equiv \mathbf{p}$ and $\mathbf{p}'_1 = -\mathbf{p}'_2 \equiv \mathbf{p}'$. The differential cross-section is given by (C.2.14). For the Breit and Wheeler process (A.0.2) of two colliding photons with four-momenta k_1 and k_2 , the scalar $I_{\gamma\gamma}^2 = (k_1 k_2)^2$. For the Dirac process (A.0.1) of colliding electron and positron with four-momenta p_1 and p_2 , the scalar $I_{e^+e^-}^2 = (p_1 p_2)^2 - m_e^4$. As results, one has

$$\frac{d\sigma_{\gamma\gamma}}{d\sigma_{e^+e^-}} = \frac{I_{e^+e^-}^2}{I_{\gamma\gamma}^2} = \frac{2(k_1 k_2) - 4m_e^2}{2(k_1 k_2)} = \frac{\mathcal{E}^2 - 2m_e^2}{\mathcal{E}^2} = \left(\frac{|\mathbf{p}|}{\mathcal{E}}\right)^2 = \hat{\beta}^2, \quad (\text{C.3.1})$$

where momenta and energies are related by

$$(p_1 + p_2)^2 = (k_1 + k_2)^2 = 2(k_1 k_2) = 2\mathcal{E}^2.$$

Integrating Eq. (C.3.1) over all scattering angles yields the total cross-section. Whereas the previous $\sigma_{\gamma\gamma}$ required division by a Bose factor 2 for the two identical photons in the final state, the cross-section $\sigma_{e^+e^-}$ has no such factor since the final electron and positron are not identical. Hence we obtain

$$\sigma_{e^+e^-} = \frac{1}{2\hat{\beta}^2} \sigma_{\gamma\gamma}. \quad (\text{C.3.2})$$

By re-expressing the kinematic quantities in the laboratory frame, one obtains the Dirac cross-section (A.1.9).

As shown in Eq. (A.1.11) in the center of mass of the system, the two cross-sections $\sigma_{e^+e^-}$ and $\sigma_{\gamma\gamma}$ of the above described phenomena differ only in the kinematics and statistical factor $1/(2\hat{\beta}^2)$, which is related to the fact that the resulting particles are massless or massive. The process of electron and positron production by the collision of two photons has a kinematic energy-threshold, while the process of electron and positron annihilation to two photons has not such kinematic energy-threshold. In the limit of high energy neglecting the masses of the electron and positron, $\hat{\beta} \rightarrow 1$, the difference be-

tween two cross-sections $\sigma_{e^+e^-}$ and $\sigma_{\gamma\gamma}$ is only the statistical factor $1/2$.

The total cross-sections (A.1.11) of Breit-Wheeler's and Dirac's process are of the same order of magnitude $\sim 10^{-25}\text{cm}^2$ and have the same energy-dependence $1/\mathcal{E}^2$ above the energy threshold. The energy threshold ($2m_e c^2$) have made until now technically impossible to observe the pair production by the Breit-Wheeler process in laboratory experiments at the intersection of two beams of X-rays. Another reason is of course the smallness of the total cross-section (A.2.10) ($\sigma_{\gamma\gamma} \lesssim 10^{-25}\text{cm}^2$) and the experimental limitations on the intensities I_i (A.2.3) of the light beams. We shall see however, that this Breit-Wheeler process occurs routinely in the Dyadosphere of a black hole and in the entire physics of GRBs. In this sense GRBs are the first direct observational test of the validity of the Breit-Wheeler process.

C.4. QED description of pair production

We turn now to a Sauter-Heisenberg-Euler process in QED. An external electromagnetic field is incorporated by adding to the quantum field A_μ in (C.2.4) an unquantized external vector potential A_μ^e , so that the total interaction becomes

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{int}} + \mathcal{L}_{\text{int}}^e = -e\bar{\psi}(x)\gamma^\mu\psi(x) \left[A_\mu(x) + A_\mu^e(x) \right]. \quad (\text{C.4.1})$$

Instead of an operator formulation, one can derive the quantum field theory from a functional integral formulation, in which the quantum mechanical partition function is described by

$$Z[A^e] = \int [\mathcal{D}\psi \mathcal{D}\bar{\psi} \mathcal{D}A_\mu] \exp \left[i \int d^4x (\mathcal{L} + \mathcal{L}_{\text{int}}^e) \right], \quad (\text{C.4.2})$$

to be integrated over all fluctuating electromagnetic and Grassmannian electron fields. The normalized quantity $Z[A^e]$ gives the amplitude for the vacuum to vacuum transition in the presence of the external classical electromagnetic field:

$$\langle \text{out}, 0 | 0, \text{in} \rangle = \frac{Z[A^e]}{Z[0]}, \quad (\text{C.4.3})$$

where $|0, \text{in}\rangle$ is the initial vacuum state at the time $t = t_- \rightarrow -\infty$, and $\langle \text{out}, 0|$ is the final vacuum state at the time $t = t_+ \rightarrow +\infty$. By selecting only the one-particle irreducible Feynman diagrams in the perturbation expansion of $Z[A^e]$ one obtains the effective action as a functional of A^e :

$$\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}[A^e] \equiv -i \ln \langle \text{out}, 0 | 0, \text{in} \rangle. \quad (\text{C.4.4})$$

In general, there exists no local effective Lagrangian density $\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}$ whose spacetime integral is $\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}[A^e]$. An infinite set of derivatives would be needed,

i.e., $\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}$ would have the arguments $A^e(x), \partial_\mu A^e(x), \partial_\mu \partial_\nu A^e(x), \dots$, containing gradients of arbitrary high order. With presently available methods it is possible to calculate a few terms in such a gradient expansion, or a semi classical approximation *à la* JWKB for an arbitrary but smooth spacetime dependence (see Sec. 3.21ff in Ref. Kleinert (2004)). Under the assumption that the external field $A^e(x)$ varies smoothly over a finite spacetime region, we may define an approximately local effective Lagrangian $\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}[A^e(x)]$,

$$\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}[A^e] \simeq \int d^4x \Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}[A^e(x)] \approx V \Delta t \Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}[A^e], \quad (\text{C.4.5})$$

where V is the spatial volume and time interval $\Delta t = t_+ - t_-$.

For a large time interval $\Delta t = t_+ - t_- \rightarrow \infty$, the amplitude of the vacuum to vacuum transition (C.4.3) has the form,

$$\langle \text{out}, 0 | 0, \text{in} \rangle = e^{-i(\Delta\mathcal{E}_0 - i\Gamma/2)\Delta t}, \quad (\text{C.4.6})$$

where $\Delta\mathcal{E}_0 = \mathcal{E}_0(A^e) - \mathcal{E}_0(0)$ is the difference between the vacuum energies in the presence and the absence of the external field, Γ is the vacuum decay rate, and Δt the time over which the field is nonzero. The probability that the vacuum remains as it is in the presence of the external classical electromagnetic field is

$$|\langle \text{out}, 0 | 0, \text{in} \rangle|^2 = e^{-2\text{Im}\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}[A^e]}. \quad (\text{C.4.7})$$

This determines the decay rate of the vacuum in an external electromagnetic field:

$$\frac{\Gamma}{V} = \frac{2\text{Im}\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}[A^e]}{\Delta t V} \approx 2\text{Im}\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}[A^e]. \quad (\text{C.4.8})$$

The vacuum decay is caused by the production of electron and positron pairs. The external field changes the energy-density by

$$\frac{\Delta\mathcal{E}_0}{V} = -\frac{\text{Re}\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}[A^e]}{\Delta t V} \approx -\text{Re}\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}[A^e]. \quad (\text{C.4.9})$$

C.4.1. Schwinger formula for pair production in uniform electric field

The Dirac fields appears quadratically in the partition functional (C.4.2) and can be integrated out, leading to

$$Z[A^e] = \int \mathcal{D}A_\mu \text{Det}\{i\cancel{\partial} - e[\cancel{A}(x) + \cancel{A}^e(x)] - m_e + i\eta\}; \quad \cancel{\partial} \equiv \gamma^\mu \partial_\mu, \quad A \equiv \gamma^\mu A_\mu, \quad (\text{C.4.10})$$

where Det denotes the functional determinant of the Dirac operator. Ignoring the fluctuations of the electromagnetic field, the result is a functional of the

external vector potential $A^e(x)$:

$$Z[A^e] \approx \text{const} \times \text{Det}\{i\cancel{\partial} - e \cancel{A}^e(x) - m_e + i\eta\}. \quad (\text{C.4.11})$$

The infinitesimal constant $i\eta$ with $\eta > 0$ specifies the treatment of singularities in energy integrals. From Eqs. (C.4.3)–(C.4.11), the effective action (C.4.7) is given by

$$\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}[A^e] = -i\text{Tr} \ln \left\{ [i\cancel{\partial} - e \cancel{A}^e(x) - m_e + i\eta] \frac{1}{i\cancel{\partial} - m_e + i\eta} \right\}, \quad (\text{C.4.12})$$

where Tr denotes the functional and Dirac trace. In physical units, this is of order \hbar . The result may be expressed as a one-loop Feynman diagram, so that one speaks of one-loop approximation. More convenient will be the equivalent expression

$$\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}[A^e] = -\frac{i}{2} \text{Tr} \ln \left(\{[i\cancel{\partial} - e \cancel{A}^e(x)]^2 - m_e^2 + i\eta\} \frac{1}{-\partial^2 - m_e^2 + i\eta} \right), \quad (\text{C.4.13})$$

where

$$[i\cancel{\partial} - e \cancel{A}^e(x)]^2 = [i\partial_\mu - e A_\mu^e(x)]^2 + \frac{e}{2} \sigma^{\mu\nu} F_{\mu\nu}^e. \quad (\text{C.4.14})$$

Using the identity

$$\ln \frac{a_2}{a_1} = \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s} [e^{is(a_1+i\eta)} - e^{is(a_2+i\eta)}], \quad (\text{C.4.15})$$

Eq. (C.4.13) becomes

$$\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}[A^e] = \frac{i}{2} \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s} e^{-is(m_e^2-i\eta)} \text{Tr} \langle x | e^{is\{[i\partial_\mu - e A_\mu^e(x)]^2 + \frac{e}{2} \sigma^{\mu\nu} F_{\mu\nu}^e\}} - e^{-is\partial^2} | x \rangle, \quad (\text{C.4.16})$$

where $\sigma^{\mu\nu} \equiv \frac{i}{2}[\gamma^\mu, \gamma^\nu]$, $F_{\mu\nu}^e = \partial_\mu A_\nu^e - \partial_\nu A_\mu^e$, and $\langle x | \{ \dots \} | x \rangle$ are the diagonal matrix elements in the local basis $|x\rangle$. This is defined by the matrix elements with the momentum eigenstates $|k\rangle$ being plane waves: $\langle x | k \rangle = e^{-ikx}$. The symbol Tr denotes integral $\int d^4x$ in spacetime and the trace in spinor space. For constant electromagnetic fields, the integrand in (C.4.16) does not depend on x , and $\sigma^{\mu\nu} F_{\mu\nu}^e$ commutes with all other operators. This will allow us to calculate the exponential in Eq. (C.4.16) explicitly. The presence of $-i\eta$ in the mass term ensures convergence of integral for $s \rightarrow \infty$.

If only a constant electric field \mathbf{E} is present, it may be assumed to point along the $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ -axis, and one can choose a gauge such that $A_z^e = -Et$ is the only nonzero component of A_μ^e . Then one finds

$$\text{tr} \exp is \left[\frac{e}{2} \sigma^{\mu\nu} F_{\mu\nu}^e \right] = 4 \cosh(seE), \quad (\text{C.4.17})$$

where the symbol tr denotes the trace in spinor space. Using the commutation relation $[\partial_0, x^0] = 1$, where $x^0 = t$, one computes the exponential term in the effective action (C.4.16) (c.e.g. Itzykson and Zuber (2006))

$$\langle x | \exp is \left[(i\partial_\mu - eA_\mu^e(x))^2 + \frac{e}{2} \sigma^{\mu\nu} F_{\mu\nu}^e \right] | x \rangle = \frac{eE}{(2\pi)^2 is} \coth(eEs). \quad (\text{C.4.18})$$

The second term in Eq. (C.4.16) is obtained by setting $E = 0$ in Eq. (C.4.18), so that the effective action (C.4.16) yields,

$$\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \int d^4x \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s^3} [eEs \coth(eEs) - 1] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}. \quad (\text{C.4.19})$$

Since the field is constant, the integral over x gives a volume factor, and the effective action (C.4.16) can be attributed to the spacetime integral over an effective Lagrangian (C.4.5)

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s^3} [eEs \coth(eEs) - 1] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}. \quad (\text{C.4.20})$$

By expanding the integrand in Eq. (C.4.20) in powers of e , one obtains,

$$\frac{1}{s^3} [eEs \coth(eEs) - 1] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)} = \left[\frac{e^2}{3s} E^2 - \frac{e^4 s}{45} E^4 + \mathcal{O}(e^6) \right] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}. \quad (\text{C.4.21})$$

The small- s divergence in the integrand,

$$\frac{e^2}{3} E^2 \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s} e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}, \quad (\text{C.4.22})$$

is proportional to the electric term in the original Maxwell Lagrangian. The divergent term (C.4.22) can therefore be removed by a renormalization of the field E . Thus we subtract a counterterm in Eq. (C.4.20) and form

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s^3} \left[eEs \coth(eEs) - 1 - \frac{e^2}{3} E^2 s^2 \right] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}. \quad (\text{C.4.23})$$

Remembering Eq. (C.4.8), we find from (C.4.23) the decay rate of the vacuum per unit volume

$$\frac{\Gamma}{V} = \frac{1}{(2\pi)^2} \text{Im} \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s^3} \left[eEs \coth(eEs) - 1 - \frac{e^2}{3} E^2 s^2 \right] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}. \quad (\text{C.4.24})$$

The integral (C.4.24) can be evaluated analytically by the method of residues. Since the integrand is even, the integral can be extended to the entire s -axis. After this, the integration contour is deformed to enclose the negative imagi-

nary axis and to pick up the contributions of the poles of the coth function at $s = n\pi/eE$. The result is

$$\frac{\Gamma}{V} = \frac{\alpha E^2}{\pi^2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n^2} \exp\left(-\frac{n\pi E_c}{E}\right). \quad (\text{C.4.25})$$

This result, i.e. the *Schwinger-formula* Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b) is valid to lowest order in \hbar for arbitrary constant electric field strength.

An analogous calculation for a charged scalar field yields

$$\frac{\Gamma}{V} = \frac{\alpha E^2}{2\pi^2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{n+1}}{n^2} \exp\left(-\frac{n\pi E_c}{E}\right), \quad (\text{C.4.26})$$

which generalizes the Weisskopf treatment being restricted to the leading term $n = 1$. These Schwinger results complete the derivation of the probability for pair productions. The leading $n = 1$ -terms of (C.4.25) and (C.4.26) agrees with the JWKB results we discuss in Sec. A.4, and thus the correct Sauter exponential factor (A.3.9) and Heisenberg-Euler imaginary part of the effective Lagrangian (B.3.19).

Narozhny and Nikishov Narozhnyi and Nikishov (1970) have expressed the probability (C.4.7) of one pair production P_1 , of n pair production P_n with $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ as well as the average number of pair productions

$$|\langle \text{out}, 0 | 0, \text{in} \rangle|^2 = 1 - P_1 - P_2 - P_3 - \dots, \quad (\text{C.4.27})$$

where P_n , ($n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$) is the probability of n -pair production, and the probability of one pair production is,

$$P_1 = V\Delta t \frac{\alpha E^2}{2\pi^2} \ln\left(1 - e^{-\frac{\pi m_e^2}{eE}}\right) e^{-2V\Delta t \text{Im}\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}[A^e]}. \quad (\text{C.4.28})$$

The average number \bar{N} of pair productions is then given by

$$\bar{N} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} nP_n = V\Delta t \frac{\alpha E^2}{\pi^2} \exp\left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{E}\right), \quad (\text{C.4.29})$$

which is the quantity directly related to the experimental measurements.

C.4.2. Pair production in constant electromagnetic fields

Since the QED theory is gauge and Lorentz invariant, effective action $\Delta\mathcal{A}_{\text{eff}}$ and Lagrangian $\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}$ are expressed as functional of the scalar and pseudoscalar invariants S, P (A.4.23). Thus they must be invariant under the dis-

crete duality transformation:

$$|\mathbf{B}| \rightarrow -i|\mathbf{E}|, \quad |\mathbf{E}| \rightarrow i|\mathbf{B}|, \quad (\text{C.4.30})$$

i.e.,

$$\beta \rightarrow -i\varepsilon, \quad \varepsilon \rightarrow i\beta. \quad (\text{C.4.31})$$

This implies that in the case $\mathbf{E} = 0$ and $\mathbf{B} \neq 0$, results can be simply obtained by replacing $|\mathbf{E}| \rightarrow i|\mathbf{B}|$ in Eqs. (C.4.18), (C.4.23), (C.4.24):

$$\langle x | \exp is \left[(i\partial_\mu - eA_\mu^e(x))^2 + \frac{e}{2} \sigma^{\mu\nu} F_{\mu\nu}^e \right] | x \rangle = \frac{eB}{(2\pi)^2 is} \cot(eBs), \quad (\text{C.4.32})$$

and

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s^3} \left[eBs \cot(eBs) - 1 + \frac{e^2}{3} B^2 s^2 \right] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}. \quad (\text{C.4.33})$$

In the presence of both constant electric and magnetic fields \mathbf{E} and \mathbf{B} , we adopt parallel \mathbf{E}_{CF} and \mathbf{B}_{CF} pointing along the $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ -axis in the *center-of-fields frame*, as discussed after Eqs. (A.4.14), (A.4.15), (A.4.16). We can choose a gauge such that only $A_z^e = -E_{\text{CF}}t$, $A_y^e = B_{\text{CF}}x^1$ are nonzero. Due to constant fields, the exponential in the effective action Eq. (C.4.16) can be factorized into a product of the magnetic part and the electric part. Following the same method used to compute the electric part (C.4.17, C.4.18), one can compute the magnetic part by using the commutation relation $[\partial_1, x^1] = 1$, where $x^1 = x$. Or one can make the substitution (C.4.30) to obtain the magnetic part, based on the discrete symmetry of duality. As results, Eqs. (C.4.17), (C.4.18) become

$$\text{tr} \exp is \left[\frac{e}{2} \sigma^{\mu\nu} F_{\mu\nu}^e \right] = 4 \cosh(seE_{\text{CF}}) \cos(seB_{\text{CF}}), \quad (\text{C.4.34})$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} & \langle x | \exp is \left\{ [i\partial_\mu - eA_\mu^e(x)]^2 + \frac{e}{2} \sigma^{\mu\nu} F_{\mu\nu}^e \right\} | x \rangle \\ &= \frac{1}{(2\pi)^2} \frac{eE_{\text{CF}}}{is} \coth(seE_{\text{CF}}) \frac{eB_{\text{CF}}}{s} \cot(seB_{\text{CF}}). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{C.4.35})$$

In this special frame, the effective Lagrangian is then given by

$$\begin{aligned} \Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} &= \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s^3} \left[e^2 E_{\text{CF}} B_{\text{CF}} s^2 \coth(seE_{\text{CF}}) \cot(seB_{\text{CF}}) \right. \\ &\quad \left. - 1 - \frac{e^2}{3} (E_{\text{CF}}^2 - B_{\text{CF}}^2) s^2 \right] \cdot e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{C.4.36})$$

As discussed in Eqs. (A.4.23), (A.4.24), (A.4.25), we obtain the effective La-

grangian

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s^3} \left[e^2 \varepsilon \beta s^2 \coth(e\varepsilon s) \cot(e\beta s) - 1 - \frac{e^2}{3} (\varepsilon^2 - \beta^2) s^2 \right] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}; \quad (\text{C.4.37})$$

and the decay rate

$$\frac{\Gamma}{V} = \frac{1}{(2\pi)^2} \text{Im} \int_0^\infty \frac{ds}{s^3} \left[e^2 \varepsilon \beta s^2 \coth(e\varepsilon s) \cot(e\beta s) - 1 - \frac{e^2}{3} (\varepsilon^2 - \beta^2) s^2 \right] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}, \quad (\text{C.4.38})$$

in terms of the invariants ε and β (A.4.25) for arbitrary electromagnetic fields \mathbf{E} and \mathbf{B} .

The integral (C.4.38) is evaluated as in Eq. (C.4.25) by the method of residues, and yields Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b)

$$\frac{\Gamma}{V} = \frac{\alpha \varepsilon^2}{\pi^2} \sum_{n=1} \frac{1}{n^2} \frac{n\pi\beta/\varepsilon}{\tanh n\pi\beta/\varepsilon} \exp\left(-\frac{n\pi E_c}{\varepsilon}\right), \quad (\text{C.4.39})$$

which reduces for $\beta \rightarrow 0$ ($\mathbf{B} = 0$) correctly to (C.4.25). The $n = 1$ -term is the JWKB approximation (A.4.27).

The analogous result for bosonic fields is

$$\frac{\Gamma}{V} = \frac{\alpha \varepsilon^2}{2\pi^2} \sum_{n=1} \frac{(-1)^n}{n^2} \frac{n\pi\beta/\varepsilon}{\sinh n\pi\beta/\varepsilon} \exp\left(-\frac{n\pi E_c}{\varepsilon}\right), \quad (\text{C.4.40})$$

where the first term $n = 1$ corresponds to the Euler-Heisenberg result (B.3.19). Note that the magnetic field produces in the fermionic case an extra factor $(n\pi\beta/\varepsilon)/\tanh(n\pi\beta/\varepsilon) > 1$ in each term which enhances the decay rate. The bosonic series (C.4.40), on the other hand, carries in each term a suppression factor $(n\pi\beta/\varepsilon)/\sinh n\pi\beta/\varepsilon < 1$. The average number \bar{N} (C.4.29) is given by

$$\bar{N} = \sum_{n=1}^\infty n P_n = V \Delta t \frac{\alpha}{\pi} \frac{\beta \varepsilon}{\tanh \pi\beta/\varepsilon} \exp\left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{\varepsilon}\right). \quad (\text{C.4.41})$$

The decay rate Γ/V gives the number of electron-positron pairs produced per unit volume and time. The prefactor can be estimated on dimensional grounds. It has the dimension of E_c^2/\hbar , i.e., $m^4 c^5/\hbar^4$. This arises from the energy of a pair $2m_e c^2$ divided by the volume whose diameter is the Compton wavelength $\hbar/m_e c$, produced within a Compton time $\hbar/m_e c^2$. The exponential factor suppresses pair production as long as the electric field is

much smaller than the critical electric field E_c , in which case the JWKB results (A.4.27) and (A.4.28) are good approximations.

The general results (C.4.39),(C.4.40) was first obtained by Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b) for scalar and spinor electrodynamics (see also Nikishov (1969), Batalin and Fradkin (1970), Vanyashin and Terent'ev (1965)). The method was extended to special spacetime-dependent fields in Refs. Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b); Narozhnyi and Nikishov (1970); Batalin and Fradkin (1970). The monographs Itzykson and Zuber (2006); Kleinert (2008); Greiner et al. (1985); Grib et al. (1980); Fradkin et al. (1991) can be consulted about more detailed calculation, discussion and bibliography.

C.4.3. Effective nonlinear Lagrangian for arbitrary constant electromagnetic field

Starting from the integral form of Heisenberg and Euler Lagrangian (C.4.37) we find explicitly real and imaginary parts of the effective Lagrangian $\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}$ (C.4.37) for arbitrary constant electromagnetic fields \mathbf{E} and \mathbf{B} Ruffini and Xue (2006). The essential step is to reach a direct analytic form resulting from performing the integration. We use the expressions Gradshteyn and Ryzhik (1994),

$$e\epsilon s \coth(e\epsilon s) = \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{s^2}{(s^2 + \tau_n^2)}; \quad \tau_n \equiv n\pi/e\epsilon, \quad (\text{C.4.42})$$

$$e\beta s \cot(e\beta s) = \sum_{m=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{s^2}{(s^2 - \tau_m^2)}, \quad \tau_m \equiv m\pi/e\beta, \quad (\text{C.4.43})$$

and obtain for the finite effective Lagrangian of Heisenberg and Euler integral representation,

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum_{n,m=-\infty}^{\infty}{}' \int_0^{\infty} ds \frac{s}{\tau_n^2 + \tau_m^2} \left[\frac{\bar{\delta}_{m0}}{(s^2 - \tau_m^2)} - \frac{\bar{\delta}_{n0}}{(s^2 + \tau_n^2)} \right] e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}, \quad (\text{C.4.44})$$

where divergent terms $n \neq 0, m = 0$, $n = 0, m \neq 0$ and $n = m = 0$ are excluded from the sum, as indicated by a prime. The symbol $\bar{\delta}_{ij} \equiv 1 - \delta_{ij}$ denotes the complimentary Kronecker- δ which vanishes for $i = j$. The divergent term with $n = m = 0$ is eliminated by the zero-field subtraction in Eq. (C.4.37), while the divergent terms $n \neq 0, m = 0$ and $n = 0, m \neq 0$

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\text{div}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \int_0^{\infty} \frac{ds}{s} e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)} 2 \left(\sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_m^2} - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_n^2} \right), \quad (\text{C.4.45})$$

are eliminated by the second subtraction in Eq. (C.4.37). This can be seen by performing the sums

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_n^k} = \left(\frac{e\varepsilon}{\pi}\right)^k \zeta(k); \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_m^k} = \left(\frac{e\beta}{\pi}\right)^k \zeta(k), \quad (\text{C.4.46})$$

where $\zeta(k) = \sum_n 1/n^k$ is the Riemann function.

The infinitesimal $i\eta$ accompanying the mass term in the s -integral (C.4.44) is equivalent to replacing $e^{-is(m_e^2 - i\eta)}$ by $e^{-is(1-i\eta)m_e^2}$. This implies that s is to be integrated slightly below (above) the real axis for $s > 0$ ($s < 0$). Equivalently one may shift the τ_m ($-\tau_m$) variables slightly upwards (downwards) to $\tau_m + i\eta$ ($-\tau_m - i\eta$) in the complex plane.

In order to calculate the finite effective Lagrangian (C.4.44), the factor $e^{-is(1-i\eta)m_e^2}$ is divided into its sin and cos parts:

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\sin} = \frac{-i}{4(2\pi)^2} \sum_{n,m=-\infty}^{\infty} ' \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{sds}{\tau_n^2 + \tau_m^2} \left[\frac{\bar{\delta}_{m0}}{(s^2 - \tau_m^2)} - \frac{\bar{\delta}_{n0}}{(s^2 + \tau_n^2)} \right] \sin[s(1-i\eta)m_e^2]; \quad (\text{C.4.47})$$

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\cos} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum_{n,m=-\infty}^{\infty} ' \int_0^{\infty} \frac{sds}{\tau_n^2 + \tau_m^2} \left[\frac{\bar{\delta}_{m0}}{(s^2 - \tau_m^2)} - \frac{\bar{\delta}_{n0}}{(s^2 + \tau_n^2)} \right] \cos[s(1-i\eta)m_e^2]. \quad (\text{C.4.48})$$

The sin part (C.4.47) has an even integrand allowing for an extension of the s -integral over the entire s -axis. The contours of integration can then be closed by infinite semicircles in the half-plane, the integration receives contributions from poles $\pm\tau_m, \pm i\tau_n$, so that the residue theorem leads to,

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\sin} = i \frac{\alpha\varepsilon\beta}{2\pi} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n} \coth\left(\frac{n\pi\beta}{\varepsilon}\right) \exp(-n\pi E_c/\varepsilon) \quad (\text{C.4.49})$$

$$- i \frac{\alpha\varepsilon\beta}{2\pi} \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{m} \coth\left(\frac{m\pi\varepsilon}{\beta}\right) \exp(im\pi E_c/\beta) \quad (\text{C.4.50})$$

The first part (C.4.49) leads to the exact non-perturbative Schwinger rate (C.4.39) for pair production.

The second term, as we see below, is canceled by the imaginary part of the cos term. In fact, shifting $s \rightarrow s - i\eta$, we rewrite the cos part of effective Lagrangian (C.4.48) as

$$\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\cos} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum_{n,m=-\infty}^{\infty} ' \int_0^{\infty} ds \frac{\cos(sm_e^2)}{\tau_n^2 + \tau_m^2} \left(\frac{s\bar{\delta}_{m0}}{s^2 - \tau_m^2 - i\eta} - \frac{s\bar{\delta}_{n0}}{s^2 + \tau_n^2 - i\eta} \right). \quad (\text{C.4.51})$$

In the first term of magnetic part, singularities $s = \tau_m, (m > 0)$ and $s =$

$-\tau_m$, ($m < 0$) appear in integrating s -axis. We decompose

$$\frac{s}{s^2 - \tau_m^2 - i\eta} = i\frac{\pi}{2}\delta(s - \tau_m) + i\frac{\pi}{2}\delta(s + \tau_m) + \mathcal{P}\frac{s}{s^2 - \tau_m^2}, \quad (\text{C.4.52})$$

where \mathcal{P} indicates the principle value under the integral. The integrals over the δ -functions give

$$\Delta_\delta \mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\cos} = i\frac{\alpha\epsilon\beta}{2\pi} \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{m} \coth\left(\frac{m\pi\epsilon}{\beta}\right) \exp(im\pi E_c/\beta), \quad (\text{C.4.53})$$

which exactly cancels the second part (C.4.50) of the sin part $\Delta \mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\sin}$.

It remains to find the principle-value integrals in Eq. (C.4.51), which corresponds to the real part of the effective Lagrangian

$$(\Delta \mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\cos})_{\mathcal{P}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum_{n,m=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_n^2 + \tau_m^2} \mathcal{P} \int_0^{\infty} ds \cos(sm_e^2) \left(\frac{s\bar{\delta}_{m0}}{s^2 - \tau_m^2} - \frac{s\bar{\delta}_{n0}}{s^2 + \tau_n^2} \right). \quad (\text{C.4.54})$$

We rewrite the cos function as $\cos(sm_e^2) = (e^{ism_e^2} + e^{-ism_e^2})/2$ and make the rotations of integration contours by $\pm\pi/2$ respectively,

$$\begin{aligned} (\Delta \mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\cos})_{\mathcal{P}} &= \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum_{n,m=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_n^2 + \tau_m^2} \times \\ &\times \mathcal{P} \int_0^{\infty} d\tau \left(\frac{\bar{\delta}_{m0}\tau e^{-\tau}}{\tau^2 - (i\tau_m m_e^2)^2} - \frac{\bar{\delta}_{n0}\tau e^{-\tau}}{\tau^2 - (\tau_n m_e^2)^2} \right). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{C.4.55})$$

Using the formulas (see Secs. 3.354, 8.211.1 and 8.211.2 in Ref. Gradshteyn and Ryzhik (1994))

$$J(z) \equiv \mathcal{P} \int_0^{\infty} ds \frac{se^{-s}}{s^2 - z^2} = -\frac{1}{2} \left[e^{-z} \text{Ei}(z) + e^z \text{Ei}(-z) \right], \quad (\text{C.4.56})$$

where $\text{Ei}(z)$ is the exponential-integral function,

$$\text{Ei}(z) \equiv \mathcal{P} \int_{-\infty}^z dt \frac{e^t}{t} = \log(-z) + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{z^k}{kk!}, \quad (\text{C.4.57})$$

we obtain the principal-value integrals (C.4.55),

$$(\Delta \mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\cos})_{\mathcal{P}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum_{n,m=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_m^2 + \tau_n^2} \left[\bar{\delta}_{m0} J(i\tau_m m_e^2) - \bar{\delta}_{n0} J(\tau_n m_e^2) \right]. \quad (\text{C.4.58})$$

Having so obtained the real part of an effective Lagrangian for an arbitrary constant electromagnetic field we recover the usual approximate results

by suitable expansion of the exact formula. With the help of the series and asymptotic representation (see formula 8.215 in Ref. Gradshteyn and Ryzhik (1994)) of the exponential-integral function $\text{Ei}(z)$ for large z , corresponding to weak electromagnetic fields ($\varepsilon \ll 1, \beta \ll 1$),

$$J(z) = -\frac{1}{z^2} - \frac{6}{z^4} - \frac{120}{z^6} - \frac{5040}{z^8} - \frac{362880}{z^{10}} + \dots, \quad (\text{C.4.59})$$

and Eq. (C.4.58), we find,

$$\begin{aligned} (\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\text{cos}})_{\mathcal{P}} &= \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum'_{n,m=-\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_m^2 + \tau_n^2} \left\{ \bar{\delta}_{n0} \left[\frac{1}{\tau_n^2 m_e^4} + \frac{6}{\tau_n^4 m_e^8} + \frac{120}{\tau_n^6 m_e^{12}} + \dots \right] \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \bar{\delta}_{m0} \left[\frac{1}{\tau_m^2 m_e^4} - \frac{6}{\tau_m^4 m_e^8} + \frac{120}{\tau_m^6 m_e^{12}} + \dots \right] \right\}. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{C.4.60})$$

Applying the summation formulas (C.4.46), the weak-field expansion (C.4.60) is seen to agree with the Heisenberg and Euler effective Lagrangian Heisenberg and Euler (1936),

$$\begin{aligned} (\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}})_{\mathcal{P}} &= \frac{2\alpha^2}{45m_e^4} \left\{ (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2 + 7(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2 \right\} \\ &\quad + \frac{64\pi\alpha^3}{315m_e^8} \left\{ 2(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^3 + 13(\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)(\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2 \right\} + \dots, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{C.4.61})$$

which is expressed in terms of a powers series of weak electromagnetic fields up to $O(\alpha^3)$. The expansion coefficients of the terms of order n have the general form $m_e^4/(E_c)^n$. As long as the fields are much smaller than E_c , the expansion converges.

On the other hand, we can address the limiting form of the effective Lagrangian (C.4.58) corresponding to electromagnetic fields ($\varepsilon \gg 1, \beta \gg 1$). We use the series and asymptotic representation (formulas 8.214.1 and 8.214.2 in Ref. Gradshteyn and Ryzhik (1994)) of the exponential-integral function $\text{Ei}(z)$ for small $z \ll 1$,

$$J(z) = -\frac{1}{2} \left[e^z \ln(z) + e^{-z} \ln(-z) \right] + \gamma_E + \mathcal{O}(z), \quad (\text{C.4.62})$$

with $\gamma_E = 0.577216$ being the Euler-Mascheroni constant, we obtain the leading terms in the strong-field expansion of Eq. (C.4.58),

$$(\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\text{cos}})_{\mathcal{P}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum'_{n,m=-\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_m^2 + \tau_n^2} \left[\bar{\delta}_{n0} \ln(\tau_n m_e^2) - \bar{\delta}_{m0} \ln(\tau_m m_e^2) \right] + \dots. \quad (\text{C.4.63})$$

In the case of vanishing magnetic field $\mathbf{B} = 0$ and $m = 0$ in Eq. (C.4.63), we

have,

$$(\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\text{cos}})_{\mathcal{P}} = \frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_n^2} \ln(\tau_n m_e^2) + \dots = \frac{\alpha E^2}{2\pi^2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n^2} \ln\left(\frac{n\pi E_c}{E}\right) + \dots, \quad (\text{C.4.64})$$

for a strong electric field \mathbf{E} . In the case of vanishing electric field $\mathbf{E} = 0$ and $n = 0$ in Eq. (C.4.63), we obtain for the strong magnetic field \mathbf{B} ,

$$(\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}^{\text{cos}})_{\mathcal{P}} = -\frac{1}{2(2\pi)^2} \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\tau_m^2} \ln(\tau_m m_e^2) + \dots = -\frac{\alpha B^2}{2\pi^2} \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{m^2} \ln\left(\frac{m\pi E_c}{B}\right) + \dots. \quad (\text{C.4.65})$$

The ($m = 1$) term is the one obtained by Weisskopf Weisskopf (1936).

We have presented in Eqs. (C.4.49), (C.4.50), (C.4.53), (C.4.58) closed form results for the one-loop effective Lagrangian $\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}}$ (C.4.37) for arbitrary strength of constant electromagnetic fields. The results will receive fluctuation corrections from higher loop diagrams. These carry one or more factors α , α^2 , ... and are thus suppressed by factors $1/137$. Thus results are valid for all field strengths with an error no larger than roughly 1%. If we include, for example, the two-loop correction, the first term in the Heisenberg and Euler effective Lagrangian (C.4.61) becomes Kleinert (2008)

$$(\Delta\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}})_{\mathcal{P}} = \frac{2\alpha^2}{45m_e^4} \left\{ \left(1 + \frac{40\alpha}{9\pi}\right) (\mathbf{E}^2 - \mathbf{B}^2)^2 + 7 \left(1 + \frac{1315\alpha}{252\pi}\right) (\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2 \right\}. \quad (\text{C.4.66})$$

Readers can consult the recent review article Dunne (2004), where one finds discussions and computations of the effective Lagrangian at the two-loop level, and Dunne and Schubert (2000) for discussion of pair production rate.

C.5. Theory of pair production in an alternating field

When the external electromagnetic field $F_{\mu\nu}^e$ is spacetime dependent, i.e., $F_{\mu\nu}^e = F_{\mu\nu}^e(\mathbf{x}, t)$ the exponential in Eq. (C.4.16) can no longer be calculated exactly. In this case, JWKB methods have to be used to calculate pair production rates Brezin and Itzykson (1970); Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b, 1972a); Marinov and Popov (1973, 1977); Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b). The aim of this section is to show how one can use a semiclassical JWKB approach to estimate the rate of pair production in an oscillating electric field as first indicated by Brezin and Itzykson in Ref. Brezin and Itzykson (1970). They evaluated the production rate of charged boson pairs. The results they obtained can be straightforwardly generalized to charged fermion case, since the spins of charged particles contribute essentially with a counting factor to the final results (see

Secs. A.4 and C.4.1). Thus, let the electromagnetic potential be $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ directed, uniform in space and periodic in time with frequency ω_0 :

$$A_\mu^e(x) = (0, 0, 0, A(t)), \quad A(t) = \frac{E}{\omega_0} \cos \omega_0 t. \quad (\text{C.5.1})$$

Then the electric field is $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ directed, uniform in space and periodic in time as well. The electric field strength is given by $E(t) = -\dot{A}(t) = E \sin \omega_0 t$. It is assumed that the electric field is adiabatically switched on and damped off in a time T^e , which is much larger than the period of oscillation $T_0 = 2\pi/\omega_0$. Suppose also that T_0 is much larger than the Compton time $2\pi/\omega$ of the created particle, i.e.,

$$T^e \gg T_0 \gg \frac{2\pi}{\omega} \simeq \frac{2\pi}{m_e}, \quad (\text{C.5.2})$$

where $\omega = \sqrt{|\mathbf{p}|^2 + m_e^2}$, \mathbf{p} being the 3-momentum of the created particle. Furthermore, eE is assumed to be much smaller than m_e^2 , i.e., $E \ll E_c$ (see Eq. (A.4.13)).

We have to study the time evolution of a scattered wave-function $\psi(t)$ representing the production of particle and antiparticle pairs in the electromagnetic potential (C.5.1). As usual, an antiparticle can be thought of as a wave packet moving backward in time. Therefore, for large positive time (forward) only positive energy modes ($\sim e^{-i\omega t}$) contribute to $\psi(t)$. Similarly, for large negative times both positive energy and negative energy modes ($\sim e^{i\omega t}$) contribute to $\psi(t)$ which satisfies the differential equation Brezin and Itzykson (1970):

$$\left[\frac{d^2}{dt^2} + \omega^2(t) \right] \psi(t) = 0, \quad (\text{C.5.3})$$

where the “variable frequency” is defined as

$$\omega(t) \equiv \left\{ m_e^2 + \mathbf{p}_\perp^2 + [p_z - eA(t)]^2 \right\}^{1/2}. \quad (\text{C.5.4})$$

The JWKB method suggests a general solution of the form

$$\psi(t) = \alpha(t)e^{-i\chi(t)} + \beta(t)e^{i\chi(t)}, \quad \chi(t) \equiv \int_0^t dt' \omega(t'), \quad (\text{C.5.5})$$

where the boundary conditions at large positive and negative times are:

$$\alpha(-\infty) = 1, \quad \beta(+\infty) = 0; \quad \dot{\chi}(\pm\infty) = \omega. \quad (\text{C.5.6})$$

The backward scattering amplitude $\beta(t)$ for large negative time ($t \rightarrow -\infty$) represents the probability of antiparticle production.

The normalization condition $|\psi(t)|^2 = 1$ implies

$$\dot{\alpha}(t)e^{-i\chi(t)} + \dot{\beta}(t)e^{i\chi(t)} = 0. \quad (\text{C.5.7})$$

Eq. (C.5.3) can be written in terms of the scattering amplitudes as

$$\dot{\alpha}(t)e^{-i\chi(t)} - \dot{\beta}(t)e^{i\chi(t)} = -\frac{\dot{\omega}(t)}{\omega(t)} \left[\alpha(t)e^{-i\chi(t)} - \beta(t)e^{i\chi(t)} \right], \quad (\text{C.5.8})$$

or, which is the same,

$$\dot{\alpha}(t) = -\frac{\dot{\omega}(t)}{2\omega(t)} \left[\alpha(t) - \beta(t)e^{i2\chi(t)} \right], \quad (\text{C.5.9})$$

$$\dot{\beta}(t) = -\frac{\dot{\omega}(t)}{2\omega(t)} \left[\beta(t) - \alpha(t)e^{-i2\chi(t)} \right]. \quad (\text{C.5.10})$$

It follows from assumption (C.5.2) that $\dot{\omega}(t)$ vanishes as $|t| \rightarrow \infty$, i.e.,

$$\frac{\dot{\omega}(t)}{\omega^2(t)} = \frac{eE[p_z - eA(t)]}{\{m_e^2 + \mathbf{p}_\perp^2 + [p_z - eA(t)]^2\}^{3/2}} \ll 1. \quad (\text{C.5.11})$$

More precisely

$$\left| \frac{\dot{\omega}(t)}{\omega^2(t)} \right| < \frac{eE}{m_e^2 + \mathbf{p}_\perp^2} < \frac{eE}{m_e^2} \ll 1. \quad (\text{C.5.12})$$

Therefore, $\alpha(t)$ and $\beta(t)$ slowly vary in time and tend to constants as $|t| \rightarrow \infty$. The phase $e^{i2\chi(t)}$ oscillates very rapidly as compared to the variation of $\alpha(t)$ and $\beta(t)$, for $\dot{\chi}(t) = \omega(t) \gg |\dot{\omega}(t)/\omega(t)|$. In the zeroth order the oscillating terms in Eqs. (C.5.9), (C.5.10) are negligible and one finds

$$\alpha^{(0)}(t) = [\omega/\omega(t)]^{1/2} \simeq 1; \quad \beta^{(0)}(t) = 0, \quad (\text{C.5.13})$$

which duly satisfy the boundary conditions, and

$$\beta^{(1)}(t) = \int_t^\infty dt' \frac{\dot{\omega}(t')}{2\omega(t')} e^{-i2\chi(t')}, \quad (\text{C.5.14})$$

where (C.5.2) and (C.5.12) have been used. $|\beta^{(1)}(-\infty)|^2$ gives information about the probability of particle-antiparticle pair production. Namely, the probability of pair production per unit volume and time is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{\mathcal{P}} &= \lim_{T^e \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{T^e} \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} |\beta^{(1)}(-T^e)|^2 \\ &= \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^3} \lim_{T^e \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{T^e} \left| \int_{-T^e/2}^{T^e/2} dt' \frac{\dot{\omega}(t')}{2\omega(t')} e^{-i2\chi(t')} \right|^2. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{C.5.15})$$

Since $\omega(t)$ is a periodic function with the same frequency ω_0 as $A(t)$ one can make a Fourier series expansion:

$$\frac{\dot{\omega}(t)}{2\omega(t)} = \sum_{n=-\infty}^{+\infty} c_n e^{in\omega_0 t}. \quad (\text{C.5.16})$$

Defined a renormalized frequency Ω via $\chi(t) = t\Omega$ one finds

$$\Omega \equiv \int_0^{2\pi} \frac{dx}{2\pi} \left[m_e^2 + \mathbf{k}_\perp^2 + \left(k_3 - \frac{eE}{\omega_0} \cos x \right)^2 \right]^{1/2}. \quad (\text{C.5.17})$$

so that

$$\lim_{T^e \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{T^e} \left| \int_{-T^e/2}^{T^e/2} dt' \frac{\dot{\omega}(t')}{2\omega(t')} e^{-i2\chi(t')} \right|^2 = 2\pi \sum_n \delta(n\omega_0 - 2\Omega) |c_n|^2. \quad (\text{C.5.18})$$

Consequently, the probability of pair production (C.5.15) is,

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}} = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^2} \sum_n \delta(n\omega_0 - 2\Omega) |c_n|^2 = \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^2 \omega_0} |c_{n^\circ}|^2, \quad (\text{C.5.19})$$

where $n^\circ = 2\Omega/\omega_0$ and c_{n° are determined via Eq. (C.5.16) as

$$c_{n^\circ} = \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \frac{dx}{2\pi} \frac{\dot{\omega}(x)}{2\omega(x)} \exp \left\{ \frac{2i}{\omega_0} \int_0^x dx' \left[m_e^2 + \mathbf{p}_\perp^2 + \left(p_z - \frac{eE}{\omega_0} \cos(x') \right)^2 \right]^{1/2} \right\}. \quad (\text{C.5.20})$$

The expression for c_{n° contains a very rapidly oscillating phase factor with frequency of the order of m_e/ω_0 , and it decreases very rapidly in terms of imaginary time $\tau = -it$. Its evaluation requires the application of the steepest-descent method in the complex time $x = \omega_0 t$ plane. This is done by selecting a proper contour turning in a neighborhood of the saddle point and following the steepest descent line, so as to find the main contributions to the integral in Eq. (C.5.20). The saddle point originates from branch points and poles in Eq. (C.5.20), which are the zeros of $\omega(x)$. Mathematical details can be found in Ref. Brezin and Itzykson (1970). One finds

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}} \simeq \frac{\omega_0}{9} \int \frac{d^3k}{(2\pi)^2} e^{-2A} \cos^2 B, \quad (\text{C.5.21})$$

where

$$-A + iB = \frac{2i}{\omega_0} \int_0^{x_0} dx' \left[m_e^2 + \mathbf{p}_\perp^2 + \left(p_z - \frac{eE}{\omega_0} \cos(x') \right)^2 \right]^{1/2}, \quad (\text{C.5.22})$$

and the saddle point is $x_0 = 1/\pi + i \sinh^{-1}[(\omega_0/eE)(m_e^2 + \mathbf{p}_\perp^2)^{1/2}]$.

The exponential factor e^{-2A} in Eq. (C.5.21) indicates that particle-antiparticle pairs tend to be emitted with small momenta. This allows one to estimate the r.h.s. of Eq. (C.5.21) as follow: (i) p_z is set equal to zero, moreover, the range of the p_z -integration is of the order of $2eE/\omega_0$ as suggested by the classical equation of motion (C.5.3); (ii) $\cos^2 B$ is replaced by its average value $1/2$. As a result, one obtains Brezin and Itzykson (1970),

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}} \simeq \frac{(eE)^3}{18\pi\omega_0^2} \int_{\eta^{-1}}^{\infty} duu \exp \left[-\frac{\pi eE}{\omega_0^2} u^2 g(u) \right], \quad (\text{C.5.23})$$

where $\eta^{-1} = m_e\omega_0/(eE)$, $u = (m_e^2 + \mathbf{p}_\perp^2)\omega_0^2/(eE)^2$ and

$$g(z) = \frac{4}{\pi} \int_0^1 dy \left[\frac{1-y^2}{1+z^{-2}y^2} \right]^{1/2} = F\left(\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}; 2; -z^{-2}\right), \quad (\text{C.5.24})$$

where $F(1/2, 1/2; 2; -z^{-2}) = {}_2F_1(1/2, 1/2; 2; -z^{-2})$ is the Gauss hyper-geometrical function. The function $u^2 g(u)$ is monotonically increasing:

$$\frac{eE}{\omega_0^2} u^2 g(u) \geq \frac{eE}{\omega_0^2} \eta^{-2} g(\eta) = \frac{m_e^2}{eE} g(\eta) \gg 1, \quad (\text{C.5.25})$$

which indicates that the integral in (C.5.23) is strongly dominated by values in a neighborhood of $u = \eta^{-1}$. This allows one to approximately perform the integration and leads to the rate of pair-production of charged bosons Brezin and Itzykson (1970),

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_{\text{boson}} \simeq \frac{\alpha E^2}{2\pi} \frac{1}{g(\eta) + \frac{1}{2\eta} g'(\eta)} \exp \left[-\frac{\pi m_e^2}{eE} g(\eta) \right]. \quad (\text{C.5.26})$$

Analogously, the rate of pair-production of charged fermions can be approximately obtained from Eq. (C.5.26) by taking into account two helicity states of fermions (see Secs. A.4 and C.4.1),

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_{\text{fermion}} \simeq \frac{\alpha E^2}{\pi} \frac{1}{g(\eta) + \frac{1}{2\eta} g'(\eta)} \exp \left[-\frac{\pi m_e^2}{eE} g(\eta) \right]. \quad (\text{C.5.27})$$

This formula has played an important role in recent studies of electron and positron pair production by laser beams, which we will discuss in some details in Sec. E.2.

Unfortunately, it appears very difficult to produce a macroscopic electric field with strength of the order of the critical value (3.2.1) and lifetime long enough ($\gg \hbar/(m_e c^2)$) in any ground laboratory to directly observe the Sauter-Euler-Heisenberg-Schwinger process of electron-positron pair production in

vacuum. The same argument applies for the production of any other pair of fermions or bosons. In the following chapter, we first discuss some ideas to experimentally create a transient electric field $E \lesssim E_c$ in Earth-bound laboratories, whose lifetime is expected to be long enough (larger than $\hbar/m_e c^2$) for the pair production process to take place.

C.6. Nonlinear Compton effect

In Refs. Reiss (1962, 1971); Nikishov and Ritus (1964a,b, 1965a, 1967, 1979, 1965b); Sengupta (1952); Brown and Kibble (1964); Goldman (1964a,b); Eberly (1969); Berestetskii et al. (1982), it has been studied the quantum theory of the interaction of free electrons with the field of a strong electromagnetic wave. The application of quantum perturbation theory to such interaction requires not only that the interaction constant α should be small but also that field should be sufficiently weak. The characteristic quantity in this respect is the dimensionless invariant ratio η (E.3.5). The photon-emission processes occurring in the interaction of an electron with the field of a strong electromagnetic wave have been discussed in Ref. Berestetskii et al. (1982) for any η value. The method used is based on an exact treatment of this interaction, while the interaction of the electron with the newly emitted photons regarded as a perturbation.

Laser beam is considered as a monochromatic plane wave, described by the gauge potential $A_\mu(\phi)$ and $\phi = kx$, where wave vector $k = (\omega, \mathbf{k})$ ($k^2 = 0$) (see Eq. (A.1.3)). The Dirac equation can be exactly solved Wolkow (1935) for an electron moving in this field of electromagnetic plane wave of an arbitrary polarization and the normalized wave function of the electron with momentum p is given by (c.e.g. Berestetskii et al. (1982)),

$$\psi_p = \left[1 + \frac{e}{2(kp)} \not{k} \not{A} \right] \frac{u(p)}{\sqrt{2q_0}} e^{i\Phi}, \quad (\text{C.6.1})$$

$$\Phi = -px - \int_0^{kx} \left[\frac{e}{(kp)} (pA) - \frac{e^2}{2(kp)} A^2 \right] d\phi, \quad (\text{C.6.2})$$

where $u(p)$ is the solution of free Dirac equation $(\not{p} - m_e)u(p) = 0$ and the time-average value of 4-vector,

$$q = p - \frac{e^2 \langle A^2 \rangle}{2(kp)} k, \quad (\text{C.6.3})$$

is the kinetic momentum operator in the electron state ψ_p (C.6.1) and the “effective mass” m_* of the electron in the field is

$$q^2 = m_*^2, \quad m_* = m_e \sqrt{1 + \eta^2}, \quad (\text{C.6.4})$$

where η^2 is given by Eq. (E.3.5). The electron becomes “heavy” in an oscillating electromagnetic field.

The S -matrix element for a transition of the electron from the state ψ_p to the state $\psi_{p'}$, with emission of a photon having momentum k' and polarization ϵ' is given by (c.e.g. Berestetskii et al. (1982))

$$S_{fi} = -ie \int \bar{\psi}_{p'}(\gamma\epsilon'^*)\psi_p \frac{e^{ik'x}}{\sqrt{2\omega'}} d^4x \quad (\text{C.6.5})$$

$$= \frac{1}{2\omega' \cdot 2q_0 \cdot 2q'_0} \sum_n M_{fi}^{(n)} (2\pi)^4 i\delta^{(4)}(nk + q - q' - k'), \quad (\text{C.6.6})$$

where the integrand in Eq. (C.6.5) is expanded in Fourier series and expansion coefficients are in terms of Bessel functions J_n , the scattering amplitude $M_{fi}^{(n)}$ in Eq. (C.6.6) is obtained by integrating over x ¹. Eq. (C.6.6) shows that S_{fi} is an infinite sum of terms, each corresponds to an energy-momentum conservation law $nk + q = q' + k'$, indicating an electron (q) absorbs n -photons (nk) and emits another photon (k') of frequency

$$\omega' = \frac{n\omega}{1 + (n\omega/m_*)(1 - \cos\theta)}, \quad (\text{C.6.7})$$

in the frame of reference where the electron is at rest ($\mathbf{q} = 0, q_0 = m_*$), and θ is the angle between \mathbf{k} and \mathbf{k}' . Given the n th term of the S -matrix S_{fi} (C.6.6), the differential probability per unit volume and unit time yields,

$$d\mathcal{P}_{e\gamma}^{(n)} = \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}' d^3\mathbf{q}'}{(2\pi)^6 \cdot 2\omega' \cdot 2q_0 \cdot 2q'_0} |M_{fi}^{(n)}|^2 (2\pi)^4 i\delta^{(4)}(nk + q - q' - k'). \quad (\text{C.6.8})$$

Integrating over the phase space of final states $\int d^3\mathbf{k}' d^3\mathbf{q}'$, one obtained the total probability of emission from unit volume in unit time (circular polarization),

$$\mathcal{P}_{e\gamma} = \frac{e^2 m_e^2}{4q_0} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \int_0^{\kappa_n} \frac{d\kappa}{(1+\kappa)^2} \left[-4J_n^2(z) + \eta^2 \left(2 + \frac{\kappa^2}{1+\kappa} \right) (J_{n+1}^2 + J_{n-1}^2 - 2J_n^2) \right], \quad (\text{C.6.9})$$

where $\kappa = (kk')/(kp')$, $\kappa_n = 2n(kp)/m_*^2$ and Bessel functions $J_n(z)$,

$$z = 2m_e^2 \frac{\eta}{(1+\eta^2)^{1/2}} \left[\frac{\kappa}{\kappa_n} \left(1 - \frac{\kappa}{\kappa_n} \right) \right]^{1/2}, \quad (\text{C.6.10})$$

for any η value. A systematic investigation of various quantum processes

¹The explicit expression $M_{fi}^{(n)}$ is not given here for its complicity, see for example Berestetskii et al. (1982).

in the field of a strong electromagnetic wave can be found in Nikishov and Ritus (1964a,b, 1965a, 1967, 1979, 1965b), in particular photon emission and pair production in the field of a plane wave with various polarizations are discussed.

We now turn to the second process (E.3.2), i.e. the Breit-Wheeler process for multi-photons. In this process, the pair production is attributed to the interaction of a high-energy photon with many laser photons in the electromagnetic laser wave. Actually, the Breit-Wheeler process for multi-photons (E.3.2) is related to the nonlinear Compton scattering process (E.3.1) by *crossing symmetry* (see Eq. (E.3.2)), i.e., in Eq. (E.3.1) γ is moved to the l.h.s., e is moved to the r.h.s. and changed to e^+ . By replacement $p \rightarrow -p$ and $k' \rightarrow -l$ and reverse the common sign of the expression in Eq. (C.6.6), one obtains the probability of pair production (E.3.2) by a photon γ (momentum l) colliding with n laser photons (momentum k) per unit volume in unit time (circular polarization) Nikishov and Ritus (1964a,b, 1965a, 1967, 1979, 1965b),

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{P}_{\gamma\gamma} = & \frac{e^2 m_e^2}{16l_0} \sum_{n>n_0}^{\infty} \int_1^{v_n} \frac{dv}{v^{3/2}(1+v)^{1/2}} \times \\ & \times \left[2J_n^2(z) + \eta^2(2v-1)(J_{n+1}^2 + J_{n-1}^2 - 2J_n^2) \right], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{C.6.11})$$

where $v = (kl)^2/4(kq)(kq')$, $v_n = n/n_0$, $n_0 = 2m_*^2/(kl)$ and Bessel functions $J_n(z)$,

$$z = 4m_e^2 \frac{\eta(1+\eta^2)^{1/2}}{(kl)} \left[\frac{v}{v_n} \left(1 - \frac{v}{v_n} \right) \right]^{1/2}.$$

In Eq. (C.6.11), the number n of laser photons must be larger than n_0 ($n > n_0$), which is the energy threshold $n_0(kl) = 2m_*^2$ for the process (E.3.2) of pair production to occur.

D. Semi-classical description of pair production in a general electric field

As shown in previous sections, the rate of pair-production may be split into an exponential and a pre-exponential factor. The exponent is determined by the classical trajectory of the tunneling particle in imaginary time which has the smallest action. It plays the same role as the activation energy in a Boltzmann factor with a “temperature” \hbar . The pre-exponential factor is determined by the quantum fluctuations of the path around that trajectory. At the semiclassical level, the latter is obtained from the functional determinant of the quadratic fluctuations. It can be calculated in closed form only for a few classical paths Kleinert (2004). An efficient technique for doing this is based on the JWKB wave functions, another on solving the Heisenberg equations of motion for the position operator in the external field Kleinert (2004).

Given the difficulties in calculating the pre-exponential factor, only a few nonuniform electric fields in space or in time have led to analytic results for the pair-production rate: (i) the electric field in the z -direction is confined in the space $x < x_0$, i.e., $\mathbf{E} = E(x)\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ where $E(x) = E_0\Theta(x_0 - x)$ Martin and Vautherin (1988, 1989); (ii) the electric field in the z -direction depends only on the light-cone coordinate $z_+ = (t + z)/\sqrt{2}$, i.e., $\mathbf{E} = E(z_+)\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ Tomaras et al. (2000); Avan et al. (2003). If the nonuniform field has the form $E(z) = E_0/\cosh^2(z)$, which will be referred as a Sauter field, the rate was calculated by solving the Dirac equation Narozhnyi and Nikishov (1970) in the same way as Heisenberg and Euler did for the constant electric field. For general space and time dependences, only the exponential factor can be written down easily — the fluctuation factor is usually hard to calculate Zeldovich and Popov (1971). In the Coulomb field of heavy nucleus whose size is finite and charge Z is supercritical, the problem becomes even more difficult for bound states being involved in pair production, and a lot of effort has been spent on this issue Zeldovich and Popov (1971); Greiner et al. (1985); Rafelski et al. (1978a).

If the electric field has only a time dependence $E = E(t)$, both exponential and pre-exponential factors were approximately computed by Brezin and Itzykson using JWKB methods for the purely periodic field $E(t) = E_0 \cos \omega_0 t$ Brezin and Itzykson (1970). The result was generalized by Popov in Ref. Marinov and Popov (1973); Soff et al. (1974) to more general time-dependent fields

$E(t)$. After this, several time-independent but space-dependent fields were treated, for instance an electric field between two conducting plates Wang and Wong (1988), and an electric field around a Reissner-Nordström black hole Khriplovich (2000).

The semiclassical expansion was carried beyond the JWKB approximation by calculating higher-order corrections in powers of \hbar in Refs. Kim and Page (2002, 2006) and Kim and Page (2007). Unfortunately, these terms do not comprise all corrections of the same orders \hbar as explained in Kleinert et al. (2008).

An alternative approach to the same problems was recently proposed by using the worldline formalism Schubert (2001), sometimes called the “string-inspired formalism”. This formalism is closely related to Schwinger’s quantum field theoretic treatment of the tunneling problem, where the evaluation of a fluctuation determinant is required involving the *fields* of the particle pairs created from the vacuum. The worldline approach is special technique for calculating precisely this functional determinant. Within the worldline formalism, Dunne and Schubert Dunne and Schubert (2005) calculated the exponential factor and Dunne et al. Dunne et al. (2006) gave the associated prefactor for various field configurations: for instance a spatially uniform, and single-pulse field with a temporal Sauter shape $\propto 1/\cosh^2 \omega t$. For general z -dependences, a numerical calculation scheme was proposed in Ref. Gies and Langfeld (2001, 2002); Langfeld et al. (2002); Gies et al. (2003) and applied further in Gies and Klingmüller (2005). For a multidimensional extension of the techniques see Ref. Dunne and Wang (2006).

In this Chapter, a general expression is derived for the pair-production rate in nonuniform electric fields $E(z)$ pointing in the z -direction recently derived in Kleinert et al. (2008). A simple variable change in all formulas leads to results for electric fields depending also on time rather than space. As examples, three cases will be treated: (i) a nonzero electric field confined to a region of size ℓ , i.e., $E(z) \neq 0, |z| \lesssim \ell$ (Sauter field see Eq. (D.3.4)); (ii) a nonzero electric field in a half-space, i.e., $E(z) \neq 0, z \gtrsim 0$ (see Eq. (D.3.25)); (iii) an electric field increasing linearly like $E(z) \sim z$. In addition, the process of negative-energy electrons tunneling into the bound states of an electric potential with the emission of positrons will be studied, by considering the case: the electric field $E(z) \sim z$ of harmonic potential $V(z) \sim z^2$.

D.1. Semi-classical description of pair production

The phenomenon of pair production in an external electric field can be understood as a quantum-mechanical tunneling process of Dirac electrons Dirac (1928, 1930b). In the original Dirac picture, the electric field bends the positive and negative-energy levels of the Hamiltonian, leading to a level-crossing and a tunneling of the electrons in the negative-energy band to the positive-

energy band. Let the field vector $\mathbf{E}(z)$ point in the z -direction. In the one-dimensional potential energy (A.3.4) the classical positive and negative-energy spectra are

$$\mathcal{E}_{\pm}(p_z, p_{\perp}; z) = \pm \sqrt{(cp_z)^2 + c^2 p_{\perp}^2 + (m_e c^2)^2 + V(z)}, \quad (\text{D.1.1})$$

where p_z is the momentum in the z -direction, \mathbf{p}_{\perp} the momentum orthogonal to it, and $p_{\perp} \equiv |\mathbf{p}_{\perp}|$. For a given energy \mathcal{E} , the tunneling takes place from z_- to z_+ determined by $p_z = 0$ in Eq. (D.1.1)

$$\mathcal{E} = \mathcal{E}_+(0, p_{\perp}; z_+) = \mathcal{E}_-(0, p_{\perp}; z_-). \quad (\text{D.1.2})$$

The points z_{\pm} are the *turning points* of the classical trajectories crossing from the positive-energy band to the negative one at energy \mathcal{E} . They satisfy the equations

$$V(z_{\pm}) = \mp \sqrt{c^2 p_{\perp}^2 + m_e^2 c^4 + \mathcal{E}}. \quad (\text{D.1.3})$$

This energy-level crossing \mathcal{E} is shown in Fig. D.1 for the Sauter potential $V(z) \propto \tanh(z/\ell)$.

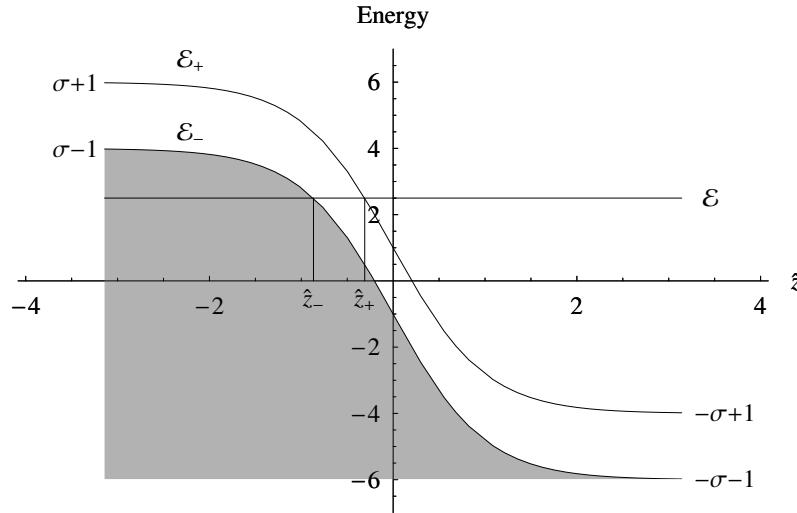


Figure D.1.: Positive- and negative-energy spectra $\mathcal{E}_{\pm}(z)$ of Eq. (D.1.1) in units of $m_e c^2$, with $p_z = p_{\perp} = 0$ as a function of $\hat{z} = z/\ell$ for the Sauter potential $V_{\pm}(z)$ (D.3.4) for $\sigma_s = 5$.

D.1.1. JWKB transmission probability for Klein-Gordon Field

The probability of quantum tunneling in the z -direction is most easily studied for a scalar field which satisfies the Klein-Gordon equation (A.3.3). If there is only an electric field in the z -direction which varies only along z , a vector

potential with the only nonzero component (A.3.4) is chosen, and the ansatz $\phi(x) = e^{-i\mathcal{E}t/\hbar} e^{i\mathbf{p}_\perp \cdot \mathbf{x}_\perp/\hbar} \phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}(z)$, is made with a fixed momentum \mathbf{p}_\perp in the x, y direction and an energy \mathcal{E} , and Eq. (A.3.3) becomes simply

$$\left[-\hbar^2 \frac{d^2}{dz^2} + p_\perp^2 + m_e^2 c^2 - \frac{1}{c^2} [\mathcal{E} - V(z)]^2 \right] \phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}(z) = 0. \quad (\text{D.1.4})$$

By expressing the wave function $\phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}(z)$ as an exponential

$$\phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}(z) = \mathcal{C} e^{iS_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}/\hbar}, \quad (\text{D.1.5})$$

where \mathcal{C} is some normalization constant, the wave equation becomes a Riccati equation for $S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}$:

$$-i\hbar \partial_z^2 S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}(z) + [\partial_z S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}(z)]^2 - p_z^2(z) = 0. \quad (\text{D.1.6})$$

where the function $p_z(z)$ is the solution of the equation

$$p_z^2(z) = \frac{1}{c^2} [\mathcal{E} - V(z)]^2 - p_\perp^2 - m_e^2 c^2. \quad (\text{D.1.7})$$

The solution of Eq. (D.1.6) can be found iteratively as an expansion in powers of \hbar :

$$S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}(z) = S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}^{(0)}(z) - i\hbar S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}^{(1)}(z) + (-i\hbar)^2 S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}^{(2)}(z) + \dots \quad (\text{D.1.8})$$

Neglecting the expansion terms after $S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}^{(1)}(z) = -\log p_z^{1/2}(z)$ leads to the JWKB approximation for the wave functions of positive and negative energies can (see e.g. Landau and Lifshitz (1981a); Kleinert (2004))

$$\phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}^{\text{JWKB}}(z) = \frac{\mathcal{C}}{p_z^{1/2}(z)} e^{iS_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}^{(0)}(z)/\hbar}. \quad (\text{D.1.9})$$

where $S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}^{(0)}(z)$ is the eikonal

$$S_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}^{(0)}(z) = \int^z p_z(z') dz'. \quad (\text{D.1.10})$$

Between the turning points $z_- < z < z_+$, whose positions are illustrated in Fig. D.1, the momentum $p_z(z)$ is imaginary and is useful to define the positive function

$$\kappa_z(z) \equiv \sqrt{p_\perp^2 + m_e^2 c^2 - \frac{1}{c^2} [\mathcal{E} - V(z)]^2} \geq 0. \quad (\text{D.1.11})$$

The tunneling wave function in this regime is the linear combination

$$\frac{\mathcal{C}}{2(\kappa_z)^{1/2}} \exp \left[-\frac{1}{\hbar} \int_{z_-}^z \kappa_z dz \right] + \frac{\bar{\mathcal{C}}}{2(\kappa_z)^{1/2}} \exp \left[+\frac{1}{\hbar} \int_{z_-}^z \kappa_z dz \right]. \quad (\text{D.1.12})$$

Outside the turning points, i.e., for $z < z_-$ and $z > z_+$, there exist negative-energy and positive-energy solutions for $\mathcal{E} < \mathcal{E}_-$ and $\mathcal{E} > \mathcal{E}_+$ for positive p_z . On the left-hand side of z_- , the general solution is a linear combination of an incoming wave running to the right and outgoing wave running to the left:

$$\frac{\mathcal{C}_+}{(p_z)^{1/2}} \exp \left[\frac{i}{\hbar} \int^z p_z dz \right] + \frac{\mathcal{C}_-}{(p_z)^{1/2}} \exp \left[-\frac{i}{\hbar} \int^z p_z dz \right]. \quad (\text{D.1.13})$$

On the right hand of z_+ , there is only an outgoing wave

$$\frac{\mathcal{T}}{(p_z)^{1/2}} \exp \left[\frac{i}{\hbar} \int_{z_+}^z p_z dz \right], \quad (\text{D.1.14})$$

The connection equations can be solved by

$$\bar{\mathcal{C}} = 0, \quad \mathcal{C}_{\pm} = e^{\pm i\pi/4} \mathcal{C}/2, \quad \mathcal{T} = \mathcal{C}_+ \exp \left[-\frac{1}{\hbar} \int_{z_-}^{z_+} \kappa_z dz \right]. \quad (\text{D.1.15})$$

The incident flux density is

$$j_z \equiv \frac{\hbar}{2m_e i} [\phi^* \partial_z \phi - (\partial_z \phi^*) \phi] = \frac{p_z}{m_e} \phi^* \phi = \frac{|\mathcal{C}_+|^2}{m_e}, \quad (\text{D.1.16})$$

which can be written as

$$j_z(z) = v_z(z) n_-(z), \quad (\text{D.1.17})$$

where $v_z(z) = p_z(z)/m_e$ is the velocity and $n_-(z) = \phi^*(z)\phi(z)$ the density of the incoming particles. Note that the z -dependence of $v_z(z)$ and $n_-(z)$ cancel each other. By analogy, the outgoing flux density is $|\mathcal{T}|^2/m_e$.

D.1.2. Rate of pair production

From the above considerations, the transmission probability is obtained

$$\mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}} \equiv \frac{\text{transmitted flux}}{\text{incident flux}} \quad (\text{D.1.18})$$

the simple exponential

$$\mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}}(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}) = \exp \left[-\frac{2}{\hbar} \int_{z_-}^{z_+} \kappa_z dz \right]. \quad (\text{D.1.19})$$

In order to derive from (D.1.18) the total rate of pair production in the electric field, it must be multiplied with the incident particle flux density at the entrance z_- of the tunnel. The particle velocity at that point is $v_z = \partial \mathcal{E} / \partial p_z$, where the relation between \mathcal{E} and z_- is given by Eq. (D.1.3):

$$-1 = \frac{\mathcal{E} - V(z_-)}{\sqrt{(cp_\perp)^2 + m_e^2 c^4}}. \quad (\text{D.1.20})$$

This must be multiplied with the particle density which is given by the phase space density $d^3 p / (2\pi\hbar)^3$. The incident flux density at the tunnel entrance is therefore

$$j_z(z_-) = D_s \int \frac{\partial \mathcal{E}}{\partial p_z} \frac{d^2 p_\perp}{(2\pi\hbar)^2} \frac{dp_z}{2\pi\hbar} = D_s \int \frac{d\mathcal{E}}{2\pi\hbar} \frac{d^2 p_\perp}{(2\pi\hbar)^2}, \quad (\text{D.1.21})$$

and the extra factor D_s is equal to 2 for electrons with two spin orientations¹.

It is useful to change the variable of integration from z to $\zeta(z)$ defined by

$$\zeta(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; z) \equiv \frac{\mathcal{E} - V(z)}{\sqrt{(cp_\perp)^2 + m_e^2 c^4}}, \quad (\text{D.1.22})$$

and to introduce the notation for the electric field $E(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; \zeta) \equiv E[\bar{z}(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; \zeta)]$, where $\bar{z}(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; \zeta)$ is the inverse function of (D.1.22), the equations in (D.1.3) reduce to

$$\zeta_-(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; z_-) = -1, \quad \zeta_+(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; z_+) = +1. \quad (\text{D.1.23})$$

In terms of the variable ζ , the JWKB transmission probability (D.1.19) can be rewritten as

$$\mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}}(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}) = \exp \left\{ -\frac{2m_e^2 c^3}{e\hbar E_0} \left[1 + \frac{(cp_\perp)^2}{m_e^2 c^4} \right] \int_{-1}^1 d\zeta \frac{\sqrt{1 - \zeta^2}}{E(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; \zeta)/E_0} \right\} \quad (\text{D.1.24})$$

Here a standard field strength E_0 has been introduced to make the integral in the exponent dimensionless, which is abbreviated by

$$G(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}) \equiv \frac{2}{\pi} \int_{-1}^1 d\zeta \frac{\sqrt{1 - \zeta^2}}{E(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; \zeta)/E_0}. \quad (\text{D.1.25})$$

The first term in the exponent of (D.1.24) is equal to $2E_c/E_0$.

At the semiclassical level, tunneling takes place only if the potential height is larger than $2m_e c^2$ and for energies \mathcal{E} for which there are two real turning points z_\pm . The total tunneling rate is obtained by integrating over all incoming momenta and the total area $V_\perp = \int dx dy$ of the incoming flux. The

¹By setting D_s equal to 1 one can obtain the tunneling result also for spin-0 particles although the Dirac picture is no longer applicable.

JWKB-rate per area is

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V_{\perp}} = D_s \int \frac{d\mathcal{E}}{2\pi\hbar} \int \frac{d^2 p_{\perp}}{(2\pi\hbar)^2} \mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}}(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}). \quad (\text{D.1.26})$$

Using the relation following from (D.1.20)

$$d\mathcal{E} = eE(z_-)dz_-, \quad (\text{D.1.27})$$

the alternative expression is obtained

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V_{\perp}} = D_s \int \frac{dz_-}{2\pi\hbar} \int \frac{d^2 p_{\perp}}{(2\pi\hbar)^2} e^{E(z_-)} \mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}}(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}(z_-)), \quad (\text{D.1.28})$$

where $\mathcal{E}(z_-)$ is obtained by solving the differential equation (D.1.27).

The integral over p_{\perp} cannot be done exactly. At the semiclassical level, this is fortunately not necessary. Since E_c is proportional to $1/\hbar$, the exponential in (D.1.24) restricts the transverse momentum p_{\perp} to be small of the order of $\sqrt{\hbar}$, so that the integral in (D.1.28) may be calculated from an expansion of $G(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E})$ up to the order p_{\perp}^2 :

$$\begin{aligned} G(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}) &\simeq \frac{2}{\pi} \int_{-1}^1 d\zeta \frac{\sqrt{1-\zeta^2}}{E(0, \mathcal{E}; \zeta)/E_0} \left[1 - \frac{1}{2} \frac{dE(0, \mathcal{E}, \zeta)/d\zeta}{E(0, \mathcal{E}, \zeta)} \zeta \delta + \dots \right] = \\ &= G(0, \mathcal{E}) + G_{\delta}(0, \mathcal{E})\delta + \dots, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.1.29})$$

where $\delta \equiv \delta(p_{\perp}) \equiv (cp_{\perp})^2/(m_e^2 c^4)$, and

$$\begin{aligned} G_{\delta}(0, \mathcal{E}) &\equiv -\frac{1}{\pi} \int_{-1}^1 d\zeta \frac{\zeta \sqrt{1-\zeta^2}}{E^2(0, \mathcal{E}; \zeta)/E_0} E'(0, \mathcal{E}; \zeta) \\ &= -\frac{1}{2} G(0, \mathcal{E}) + \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{-1}^1 d\zeta \frac{\zeta^2}{\sqrt{1-\zeta^2}} \frac{d\zeta}{E(0, \mathcal{E}, \zeta)/E_0}. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.1.30})$$

The integral over \mathbf{p}_{\perp} in (D.1.28) is approximately performed as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} &\int \frac{d^2 p_{\perp}}{(2\pi\hbar)^2} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)(1+\delta)[G(0, \mathcal{E})+G_{\delta}(0, \mathcal{E})\delta]} = \\ &= \frac{m_e^2 c^2}{4\pi\hbar^2} \int_0^{\infty} d\delta e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)[G(0, \mathcal{E})+\delta\tilde{G}(0, \mathcal{E})]} \approx \frac{eE_0}{4\pi^2\hbar c\tilde{G}(0, \mathcal{E})} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0, \mathcal{E})}, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.1.31})$$

where

$$\tilde{G}(0, \mathcal{E}) \equiv G(0, \mathcal{E}) + G_{\delta}(0, \mathcal{E}). \quad (\text{D.1.32})$$

The electric fields $E(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}; \zeta)$ at the tunnel entrance z_- in the prefactor of (D.1.28) can be expanded similarly to first order in δ . If z_-^0 denotes the solu-

tions of (D.1.20) at $p_{\perp} = 0$, it is found that for small δ :

$$\Delta z_{-} \equiv z_{-} - z_{-}^0 \approx \frac{m_e c^2}{E(z_{-}^0)} \frac{\delta}{2}. \quad (\text{D.1.33})$$

so that

$$E(z_{-}) \simeq E(z_{-}^0) - m_e c^2 \frac{E'(z_{-}^0)}{E(z_{-}^0)} \frac{\delta}{2}. \quad (\text{D.1.34})$$

Here the extra term proportional to δ can be neglected in the semiclassical limit since it gives a contribution to the prefactor of the order \hbar . Thus the JWKB-rate (D.1.28) of pair production per unit area is obtained

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V_{\perp}} \equiv \int dz \frac{\partial_z \Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}(z)}{V_{\perp}} \simeq \int dz \frac{D_s e^2 E_0 E(z)}{8\pi^3 \hbar^2 c \tilde{G}(0, \mathcal{E}(z))} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0, \mathcal{E}(z))} \quad (\text{D.1.35})$$

where z is short for z_{-}^0 . At this point it is useful to return from the integral $\int dz_{-} e E(z_{-})$ introduced in (D.1.28) to the original energy integral $\int d\mathcal{E}$ in (D.1.26), so that the final result is

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V_{\perp}} \equiv \int d\mathcal{E} \frac{\partial_{\mathcal{E}} \Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}(z)}{V_{\perp}} \simeq D_s \frac{e E_0}{4\pi^2 \hbar c} \int \frac{d\mathcal{E}}{2\pi \hbar} \frac{1}{\tilde{G}(0, \mathcal{E})} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0, \mathcal{E})} \quad (\text{D.1.36})$$

where \mathcal{E} -integration is over all crossing energy-levels.

These formula can be approximately applied to the 3-dimensional case of electric fields $\mathbf{E}(x, y, z)$ and potentials $V(x, y, z)$ at the points (x, y, z) where the tunneling length (A.4.6) is much smaller than the variation lengths δx_{\perp} of electric potentials $V(x, y, z)$ in the xy -plane,

$$\frac{1}{z_{+} - z_{-}} \gg \frac{1}{V} \frac{\delta V}{\delta x_{\perp}}. \quad (\text{D.1.37})$$

At these points (x, y, z) , one can arrange the tunneling path dz and momentum $p_z(x, y, z)$ in the direction of electric field, corresponding perpendicular area $d^2 V_{\perp} \equiv dx dy$ for incident flux and perpendicular momentum \mathbf{p}_{\perp} . It is then approximately reduced to a one-dimensional problem in the region of size $\mathcal{O}(a)$ around these points. The surfaces $z_{-}(x_{-}, y_{-}, \mathcal{E})$ and $z_{+} = (x_{+}, y_{+}, \mathcal{E})$ associated with the classical turning points are determined by Eqs. (D.1.22) and Eqs. (D.1.23) for a given energy \mathcal{E} . The JWKB-rate of pair production (D.1.35) can then be expressed as an volume integral over the rate density per volume element

$$\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}} = \int dx dy dz \frac{d^3 \Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{dx dy dz} = \int dt dx dy dz \frac{d^4 N_{\text{JWKB}}}{dt dx dy dz}. \quad (\text{D.1.38})$$

On the right-hand side one has found it useful to rewrite the rate Γ_{JWKB} as the time derivative of the number of pair creation events dN_{JWKB}/dt , so that one obtains an event density in four-space

$$\frac{d^4 N_{\text{JWKB}}}{dt dx dy dz} \approx D_s \frac{e^2 E_0 E(z)}{8\pi^3 \hbar \tilde{G}(0, \mathcal{E}(z))} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0, \mathcal{E}(z))}, \quad (\text{D.1.39})$$

Here x, y and z are related by the function $z = z_-(x, y, \mathcal{E})$ which is obtained by solving (D.1.27).

It is now useful to observe that the left-hand side of (D.1.39) is a Lorentz-invariant quantity. In addition, it is symmetric under the exchange of time and z , and this symmetry will be exploited in the next section to relate pair production processes in a z -dependent electric field $E(z)$ to those in a time-dependent field $E(t)$.

Attempts to go beyond the JWKB results (D.1.35) or (D.1.36) require a great amount of work. Corrections will come from three sources:

- I from the higher terms of order in $(\hbar)^n$ with $n > 1$ in the the expansion (D.1.8) solving the Riccati equation (D.1.6).
- II from the perturbative evaluation of the integral over \mathbf{p}_\perp in Eqs. (D.1.26) or (D.1.28) when going beyond the Gaussian approximation.
- III from perturbative corrections to the Gaussian energy integral (D.1.36) or the corresponding z -integral (D.1.35).

All these corrections contribute terms of higher order in \hbar .

D.1.3. Including a Smoothly Varying $\mathbf{B}(z)$ -Field Parallel to $\mathbf{E}(z)$

The above results can easily be extended to allow for the presence of a constant magnetic field \mathbf{B} parallel to $\mathbf{E}(z)$. Then the wave function factorizes into a Landau state and a spinor function first calculated by Sauter Sauter (1931a). In the JWKB approximation, the energy spectrum is still given by Eq. (D.1.1), but the squared transverse momenta p_\perp^2 is quantized and must be replaced by discrete values corresponding to the Landau energy levels. From the known nonrelativistic levels for the Hamiltonian $p_\perp^2/2m_e$ one extracts immediately the replacements (A.4.17). Apart from the replacement (A.4.17), the JWKB calculations remain the same. Thus one must only replace the integration over the transverse momenta $\int d^2 p_\perp / (2\pi\hbar)^2$ in Eq. (D.1.31) by the sum over all Landau levels with the degeneracy $eB/(2\pi\hbar c)$. Thus, the right-hand side

becomes

$$\frac{eB}{2\pi\hbar c} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0,\mathcal{E})} \sum_{n,\hat{\sigma}} e^{-\pi(B/E_0)(n+1/2+g\hat{\sigma})\tilde{G}(0,\mathcal{E})}, \quad (\text{D.1.40})$$

where g and $\hat{\sigma}$ are as in (A.4.17). The result is, for spin-0 and spin-1/2:

$$\frac{eE_0}{4\pi^2\hbar c\tilde{G}(0,\mathcal{E})} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0,\mathcal{E})} f_{0,1/2}(B\tilde{G}(0,\mathcal{E})/E_0) \quad (\text{D.1.41})$$

where

$$f_0(x) \equiv \frac{\pi x}{\sinh \pi x}, \quad f_{1/2}(x) \equiv 2 \frac{\pi x}{\sinh \pi x} \cosh \frac{\pi g x}{2} \quad (\text{D.1.42})$$

In the limit $B \rightarrow 0$, Eq. (A.4.20) reduces to Eq. (D.1.31).

The result remains approximately valid if the magnetic field has a smooth z -dependence varying little over a Compton wavelength λ_C .

In the following only on nonuniform electric fields without a magnetic field is focused.

D.2. Time-dependent electric fields

The above semiclassical considerations can be applied with little change to the different physical situation in which the electric field along the z -direction depends only on time rather than z . Instead of the time t itself one prefers working with the zeroth length coordinate $x_0 = ct$, as usual in relativistic calculations. As an intermediate step consider for a vector potential

$$A_\mu = (A_0(z), 0, 0, A_z(x_0)), \quad (\text{D.2.1})$$

with the electric field

$$E = -\partial_z A_0(z) - \partial_0 A_z(x_0), \quad x_0 \equiv ct. \quad (\text{D.2.2})$$

The associated Klein-Gordon equation (A.3.3) reads

$$\left\{ \left[i\hbar\partial_0 + \frac{e}{c}A_0(z) \right]^2 + \hbar^2\partial_{\mathbf{x}_\perp}^2 - \left[i\hbar\partial_z + \frac{e}{c}A_z(x_0) \right]^2 - m_e^2c^2 \right\} \phi(x) = 0. \quad (\text{D.2.3})$$

The previous discussion was valid under the assumption $A_z(x_0) = 0$, in which case the ansatz

$$\phi(x) = e^{-i\mathcal{E}t/\hbar} e^{i\mathbf{p}_\perp \cdot \mathbf{x}_\perp} \phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, \mathcal{E}}(z),$$

led to the field equation (D.1.4). For the present discussion it is useful to write the ansatz as $\phi(x) = e^{-ip_0 x_0/\hbar} e^{ip_\perp x_\perp/\hbar} \phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, p_0}(z)$ with $p_0 = \mathcal{E}/c$, and Eq. (D.1.4) in the form

$$\left\{ \frac{1}{c^2} \left[\mathcal{E} - e \int^z dz' E(z') \right]^2 - p_\perp^2 - m_e^2 c^2 + \hbar^2 \frac{d^2}{dz^2} \right\} \phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, p_0}(z) = 0. \quad (\text{D.2.4})$$

Now the electric field to depend only on $x_0 = ct$ is assumed. Then the ansatz $\phi(x) = e^{ip_z z/\hbar} e^{ip_\perp x_\perp/\hbar} \phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, p_z}(x_0)$ leads to the field equation

$$\left\{ -\hbar^2 \frac{d^2}{dx_0^2} - p_\perp^2 - m_e^2 c^2 - \left[-p_z - \frac{e}{c} \int^{x_0} dx'_0 E(x'_0) \right]^2 \right\} \phi_{\mathbf{p}_\perp, p_z}(x_0) = 0. \quad (\text{D.2.5})$$

If Eq. (D.2.5) is compared with (D.2.4) one realizes that one arises from the other by interchanging

$$z \leftrightarrow x_0, \quad p_\perp \rightarrow ip_\perp, \quad c \rightarrow ic, \quad E \rightarrow -iE. \quad (\text{D.2.6})$$

With these exchanges, it may easy to calculate the decay rate of the vacuum caused by a time-dependent electric field $E(x_0)$ using the above-derived formulas.

D.3. Applications

Now formulas (D.1.36) or (D.1.35) is applied to various external field configurations capable of producing electron-positron pairs.

D.3.1. Step-like electric field

First one checks the result for the original case of a constant electric field $E(z) \equiv eE_0$ where the potential energy is the linear function $V(z) = -eE_0 z$. Here the function (D.1.25) becomes trivial

$$G(0, \mathcal{E}) = \frac{2}{\pi} \int_{-1}^1 d\zeta \sqrt{1 - \zeta^2} = 1, \quad G_\delta(0, \mathcal{E}) = 0, \quad (\text{D.3.1})$$

which is independent of \mathcal{E} (or z_-). The JWKB-rate for pair-production per unit time and volume is found from Eq. (D.1.35) to be

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}^{\text{EH}}}{V} \simeq D_s \frac{\alpha E_0^2}{2\pi^2 \hbar} e^{-\pi E_c/E_0}. \quad (\text{D.3.2})$$

where $V \equiv dz_- V_\perp$. This expression contains the exponential $e^{-\pi E_c/E_0}$ found by Sauter Sauter (1931a), and the correct prefactor as calculated by Heisen-

berg and Euler Heisenberg and Euler (1936), and by Schwinger Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b).

In order to apply the translation table (D.2.6) to obtain the analogous result for the constant electric field in time, one can rewrite Eq. (D.3.2) as

$$\frac{dN_{\text{JWKB}}}{dx_0 V} \simeq D_s \frac{\alpha E_0^2}{2\pi^2 \hbar c} e^{-\pi E_c/E_0}, \quad (\text{D.3.3})$$

where $dN_{\text{JWKB}}/dx_0 = \Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}^{\text{EH}}/c$ and N_{JWKB} is the number of pairs produced. Applying the translation table (D.2.6) to Eq. (D.3.3), one obtains the same formula as Eq. (D.3.2).

D.3.2. Sauter electric field

Let us now consider the nontrivial Sauter electric field localized within finite slab in the xy -plane with the width ℓ in the $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ -direction. A field of this type can be produced, e.g., between two opposite charged conducting plates. The electric field $E(z)\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ in the z -direction and the associated potential energy $V(z)$ are given by

$$E(z) = E_0 / \cosh^2(z/\ell), \quad V(z) = -\sigma_s m_e c^2 \tanh(z/\ell), \quad (\text{D.3.4})$$

where

$$\sigma_s \equiv eE_0\ell/m_e c^2 = (\ell/\lambda_C)(E_0/E_c). \quad (\text{D.3.5})$$

From now on natural units, in which energies are measured in units of $m_e c^2$, is used. Figure D.1 shows the positive and negative-energy spectra $\mathcal{E}_\pm(z)$ of Eq. (D.1.1) for $p_z = p_\perp = 0$ to show the energy-gap and energy-level crossings. From Eq. (D.1.3) one finds the classical turning points

$$z_\pm = \ell \operatorname{arctanh} \frac{\mathcal{E} \pm \sqrt{1+\delta}}{\sigma_s} = \frac{\ell}{2} \ln \frac{\sigma_s + \mathcal{E} \pm \sqrt{1+\delta}}{\sigma_s - \mathcal{E} \mp \sqrt{1+\delta}}. \quad (\text{D.3.6})$$

Tunneling is possible for all energies satisfying

$$-\sqrt{1+\delta} + \sigma_s \geq \mathcal{E} \geq \sqrt{1+\delta} - \sigma_s, \quad (\text{D.3.7})$$

for the strength parameter $\sigma_s > \sqrt{1+\delta}$.

One may invert Eq. (D.1.22) to find the relation between ζ and z :

$$z = z(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; \zeta) = \ell \operatorname{arctanh} \frac{\mathcal{E} + \zeta \sqrt{1+\delta}}{\sigma_s} = \frac{\ell}{2} \ln \frac{\sigma_s + \mathcal{E} + \zeta \sqrt{1+\delta}}{\sigma_s - \mathcal{E} - \zeta \sqrt{1+\delta}}. \quad (\text{D.3.8})$$

In terms of the function $z(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; \zeta)$, the equation (D.3.6). reads simply $z_\pm = z(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}; \pm 1)$.

Inserting (D.3.8) into the equation for $E(z)$ in Eq. (D.3.4), one obtains

$$E(z) = E_0 \left[1 - \left(\frac{\zeta \sqrt{1+\delta} - \varepsilon}{\sigma_s} \right)^2 \right] \equiv E(p_\perp, \varepsilon; \zeta). \quad (\text{D.3.9})$$

$G(0, \varepsilon)$ and $G_\delta(0, \varepsilon)$ of Eqs. (D.1.25), (D.1.29) and (D.1.30) are calculated:

$$G(0, \varepsilon) = 2\sigma_s^2 - \sigma_s \left[(\sigma_s - \varepsilon)^2 - 1 \right]^{1/2} - \sigma_s \left[(\sigma_s + \varepsilon)^2 - 1 \right]^{1/2}, \quad (\text{D.3.10})$$

and

$$G(0, \varepsilon) + G_\delta(0, \varepsilon) = \frac{\sigma_s}{2} \left\{ \left[(\sigma_s - \varepsilon)^2 - 1 \right]^{-1/2} + \left[(\sigma_s + \varepsilon)^2 - 1 \right]^{-1/2} \right\} \quad (\text{D.3.11})$$

Substituting the functions $G(0, \varepsilon)$ and $G_\delta(0, \varepsilon)$ into Eqs. (D.1.35) and (D.1.36), one obtains the general expression for the pair-production rate per volume slice at a given tunnel entrance point $z_-(\varepsilon)$ or the associated energy $\varepsilon(z_-)$. The pair-production rate per area is obtained by integrating over all slices permitted by the energy inequality (D.3.7).

In Fig. D.2, the slice dependence of the integrand in the tunneling rate (D.1.35) for the Sauter potential (D.3.4) is shown and compared with the constant-field expression (D.3.2) of Euler and Heisenberg, if this is evaluated at the z -dependent electric field $E(z)$. This is done once as a function of the tunnel entrance point z and once as a function of the associated energy ε . On each plot, the difference between the two curves illustrates the nonlocality of the tunneling process². The integral is dominated by the region around $\varepsilon \sim 0$, where the tunneling length is shortest [see Fig. D.1] and tunneling probability is largest. Both functions $G(0, \varepsilon)$ and $G_\delta(0, \varepsilon)$ have a symmetric peak at $\varepsilon = 0$. Around the peak they can be expanded in powers of ε as

$$\begin{aligned} G(0, \varepsilon) &= 2[\sigma_s^2 - \sigma_s(\sigma_s^2 - 1)^{1/2}] + \frac{\sigma_s}{(\sigma_s^2 - 1)^{3/2}} \varepsilon^2 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^4) = \\ &= G_0(\sigma_s) + \frac{1}{2} G_2(\sigma_s) \varepsilon^2 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^4), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.3.12})$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} G(0, \varepsilon) + G_\delta(0, \varepsilon) &= \frac{\sigma_s}{(\sigma_s^2 - 1)^{1/2}} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{(1 + 2\sigma_s^2)}{(\sigma_s^2 - 1)^{5/2}} \varepsilon^2 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^4) = \\ &= \bar{G}_0(\sigma_s) + \frac{1}{2} \bar{G}_2(\sigma_s) \varepsilon^2 + \mathcal{O}(\varepsilon^4). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.3.13})$$

²Note that omitting the z -integral in the rate formula (D.1.35) does not justify calling the result a “local production rate”, as done in the abstract of Ref. Gies and Klingmüller (2005). The result is always nonlocal and depends on *all* gradients of the electric field.

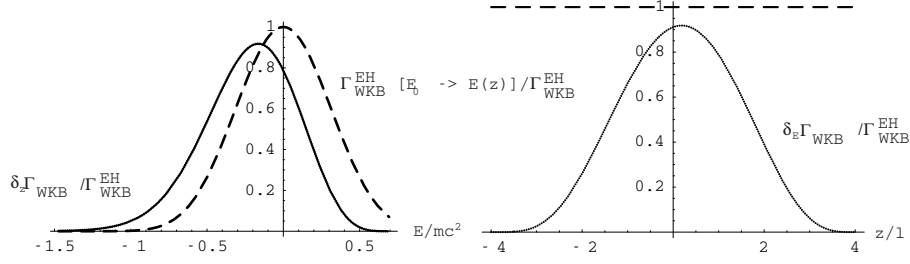


Figure D.2.: The slice dependence of the integrand in the tunneling rate (D.1.35) for the Sauter potential (D.3.4) is plotted: left, as a function of the tunnel entrance z (compare with numeric results plotted in Fig. 1 of Ref. Gies and Klingmüller (2005)); right, as a function of the associated energy \mathcal{E} , which is normalized by the Euler-Heisenberg rate (D.3.2). The dashed curve in left figure shows the Euler-Heisenberg expression (D.3.2) evaluated for the z -dependent field $E(z)$ to illustrate the nonlocality of the production rate. The dashed curve in right figure shows the Euler-Heisenberg expression (D.3.2) is independent of energy-level crossing \mathcal{E} . The dimensionless parameters are $\sigma_s = 5$, $E_0/E_c = 1$.

The exponential $e^{-\pi G(0,\mathcal{E})E_c/E_0}$ has a Gaussian peak around $\mathcal{E} = 0$ whose width is of the order of $1/E_c \propto \hbar$. This implies that in the semiclassical limit, one may perform only a Gaussian integral and neglect the \mathcal{E} -dependence of the prefactor in (D.1.36). Recalling that \mathcal{E} in this section is in natural units with $m_e c^2 = 1$, one must replace $\int d\mathcal{E}$ by $m_e c^2 \int d\mathcal{E}$ and can perform the integral over \mathcal{E} approximately as follows

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V_\perp} &\simeq D_s \frac{eE_0 m_e c^2}{4\pi^2 \hbar c} \frac{1}{G_0} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G_0} \int \frac{d\mathcal{E}}{2\pi\hbar} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G_0'' \mathcal{E}^2/2} = \\ &= D_s \frac{eE_0}{4\pi^2 \hbar c} \frac{1}{G_0} \frac{e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G_0}}{2\pi\hbar \sqrt{G_0'' E_c/2E_0}}. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.3.14})$$

For convenience, the limits of integration over E is extended from the interval $(-1 + \sigma_s, 1 - \sigma_s)$ to $(-\infty, \infty)$. This introduces exponentially small errors and can be ignored.

Using the relation (D.3.5) one may replace $eE_0 m_e c^2 / \hbar c$ by $e^2 E_0^2 2\ell / \sigma_s$, and obtain

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}[\text{total}]}{V_\perp \ell} \simeq D_s \frac{\alpha E_0^2}{2\pi^2 \hbar} \sqrt{\frac{E_0}{E_c}} \frac{(\sigma_s^2 - 1)^{5/4}}{\sigma_s^{5/2}} e^{-\pi G_0(\sigma_s) E_c/E_0}. \quad (\text{D.3.15})$$

This approximate result agrees³ with that obtained before with a different,

³See Eq. (63) of Dunne and Schubert (2005), and replace there $\tilde{\gamma} \rightarrow$

somewhat more complicated technique proposed by Dunne and Schubert Dunne and Schubert (2005) after the fluctuation determinant was calculated exactly in Dunne et al. (2006) with the help of the Gelfand-Yaglom method, see Sec. 2.2 in Ref. Kleinert (2004). The advantage of knowing the exact fluctuation determinant could not, however, be fully exploited since the remaining integral was calculated only in the saddle point approximation. The rate (D.3.15) agrees with the leading term of the expansion (42) of Kim and Page Kim and Page (2007). Note that the higher expansion terms calculated by the latter authors do not yet lead to proper higher-order results since they are only of type II and III in the list after Eq. (D.1.39). The terms of equal order in \hbar in the expansion (D.1.8) of the solution of the Riccati equation are still missing.

Using the translation table (D.2.6), it is straightforward to obtain the pair-production rate of the Sauter-type of electric field depending on time rather than space. According to the translation table (D.2.6), one has to replace $\ell \rightarrow c\delta T$, where δT is the characteristic time over which the electric field acts—the analog of ℓ in (D.3.4). Thus the field (D.3.4) becomes

$$E(t) = E_0 / \cosh^2(t/\delta T), \quad V(t) = -\tilde{\sigma}_s m_e c^2 \tanh(t/\delta T). \quad (\text{D.3.16})$$

According to the same table, one must also replace $\sigma_s \rightarrow i\tilde{\sigma}_s$, where

$$\tilde{\sigma}_s \equiv eE_0\delta T/m_e c. \quad (\text{D.3.17})$$

This brings $G_0(\sigma_s)$ of Eq. (D.3.10) to the form

$$G_0(\sigma_s) \rightarrow G_0^t(\tilde{\sigma}_s) = 2[\tilde{\sigma}_s(\tilde{\sigma}_s^2 - 1)^{1/2} - \tilde{\sigma}_s^2], \quad (\text{D.3.18})$$

and yields the pair-production rate

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}^z[\text{total}]}{V_\perp \delta T} \simeq D_s \frac{\alpha E_0^2}{2\pi^2 \hbar} \sqrt{\frac{E_0}{E_c}} \left(\frac{\tilde{\sigma}_s^2 + 1}{\tilde{\sigma}_s^2} \right)^{5/4} e^{-\pi G_0^t(\tilde{\sigma}_s) E_c / E_0}, \quad (\text{D.3.19})$$

where $\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}^z[\text{total}] = \partial N_{\text{JWKB}} / \partial z$ is the number of pairs produced per unit thickness in a spatial shell parallel to the xy -plane. This agrees with Ref. Dunne et al. (2006).

Note also that the constant-field result (D.3.2) of Euler and Heisenberg cannot be deduced from (D.3.15) by simply taking the limit $\ell \rightarrow \infty$ as one might have expected. The reason is that the saddle point approximation (D.3.14) to the integral (D.1.36) becomes invalid in this limit. Indeed, if $\ell \propto \sigma_s$ is large in

¹/ σ_s . It agrees also with the later paper by Dunne et al. Dunne et al. (2006) apart from a factor 2.

Eqs. (D.3.10) and (D.3.11), these become

$$G(0, \mathcal{E}) \rightarrow G(0, \mathcal{E}) + G_\delta(0, \mathcal{E}) \rightarrow \frac{1}{1 - \mathcal{E}^2/\sigma_s^2}, \quad (\text{D.3.20})$$

and the integral in (D.1.36) becomes approximately

$$e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)} \int_{-\sigma_s}^{+\sigma_s} \frac{d\mathcal{E}}{2\pi\hbar} \left(1 - \mathcal{E}^2/\sigma_s^2\right) e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)(\mathcal{E}^2/\sigma_s^2)} \quad (\text{D.3.21})$$

For not too large $\ell \propto \sigma_s$, the integral can be evaluated in the leading Gaussian approximation

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{d\mathcal{E}}{2\pi\hbar} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)(\mathcal{E}^2/\sigma_s^2)} = \frac{1}{2\pi\hbar} \sqrt{\frac{E_0}{E_c}} \sigma_s, \quad (\text{D.3.22})$$

corresponding to the previous result (D.3.15) for large- σ_s . For a constant field, however, where the integrand becomes flat, the Gaussian approximation is no longer applicable. Instead one must first set $\sigma_s \rightarrow \infty$ in the integrand of (D.3.21), making it constant. Then the integral (D.3.21) becomes⁴

$$e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)} 2\sigma_s/2\pi\hbar = e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)} 2\ell e E_0/m_e c^2 2\pi\hbar. \quad (\text{D.3.23})$$

Inserting this into (D.1.36) one recovers the constant-field result (D.3.2). One must replace 2ℓ by L to comply with the relation (D.1.27) from which one obtains

$$\int d\mathcal{E} = \int dz e E(z) = e E_0 \int dz / \cosh^2(z/\ell) = 2\ell e E_0 = L e E_0.$$

In order to see the boundary effect on the pair-production rate, this section is closed with a comparison between pair-production rates in the constant field (D.3.2) and Sauter field (D.3.15) for the same field strength E_0 in the volume $V_\perp \ell$. The ratio R_{rate} of pair-production rates (D.3.15) and (D.3.2) in the volume $V_\perp \ell$ is defined as

$$R_{\text{rate}} = \sqrt{\frac{E_0}{E_c}} e^{\pi E_c/E_0} \frac{(\sigma_s^2 - 1)^{5/4}}{\sigma_s^{5/2}} e^{-\pi G_0(\sigma_s) E_c/E_0}. \quad (\text{D.3.24})$$

The soft boundary of the Sauter field (D.3.4) reduces its pair-production rate with respect to the pair-production rate (D.3.2) computed in a constant field of width $L = 2\ell$. The reduction is shown quantitatively in Fig. D.3, where curves are plotted for the rates (D.3.2) and (D.3.15), and for their ratio

⁴This treatment is analogous to that of the translational degree of freedom in instanton calculations in Section 17.3.1 of Kleinert (2004) [see in particular Eq. (17.112)].

(D.3.24) at $E_0 = E_c$ and $\sigma_s = \ell/\lambda_C$ [recall (D.3.5)]. One can see that the reduction is significant if the width of the field slab shrinks to the size of a Compton wavelength λ_C .

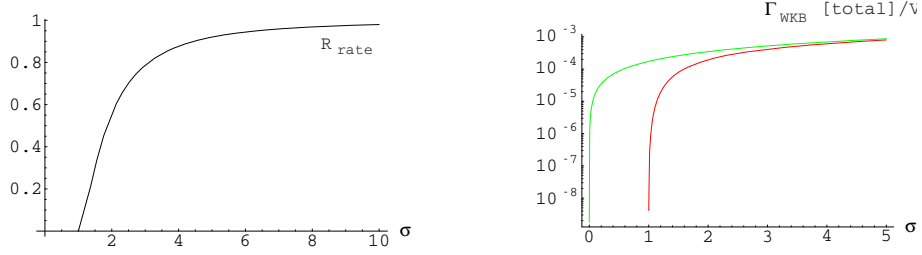


Figure D.3.: Left: Ratio R_{rate} defined in Eq. (D.3.24) is plotted as function of σ_s in the left figure. Right: Number of pairs created in slab of Compton width per area and time as functions of σ_s . Upper curve is for the constant field (D.3.2), lower for the Sauter field (D.3.15)). Both plots are for $E_0 = E_c$ and $\sigma_s = \ell/\lambda_C$.

D.3.3. Constant electric field in half space

As a second application consider an electric field which is zero for $z < 0$ and goes to $-E_0$ over a distance ℓ as follows:

$$E(z) = -\frac{E_0}{2} \left[\tanh\left(\frac{z}{\ell}\right) + 1 \right], \quad V(z) = -\frac{\sigma_s}{2} m_e c^2 \left\{ \ln \cosh\left(\frac{z}{\ell}\right) + \frac{z}{\ell} \right\} \quad (\text{D.3.25})$$

where $\sigma_s \equiv eE_0\ell/m_e c^2$. In Fig. D.4, the positive and negative-energy spectra $\mathcal{E}_{\pm}(z)$ defined by Eq. (D.1.1) for $p_z = p_{\perp} = 0$ are plotted to show energy gap and level crossing. From Eq. (D.1.3) one finds now the classical turning points [instead of (D.3.6)]

$$z_{\pm} = \frac{\ell}{2} \ln \left[2e^{(\mathcal{E} \pm \sqrt{1+\delta})/\sigma_s} - 1 \right]. \quad (\text{D.3.26})$$

For tunneling to take place, the energy \mathcal{E} has to satisfy

$$\mathcal{E} \leq \sqrt{1+\delta} - \sigma_s \ln 2, \quad (\text{D.3.27})$$

and σ_s must be larger than $\sqrt{1+\delta}\zeta$. Expressing z/ℓ in terms of ζ as

$$z = z(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}; \zeta) = \frac{\ell}{2} \ln \left[2e^{(\mathcal{E} + \zeta \sqrt{1+\delta})/\sigma_s} - 1 \right], \quad (\text{D.3.28})$$

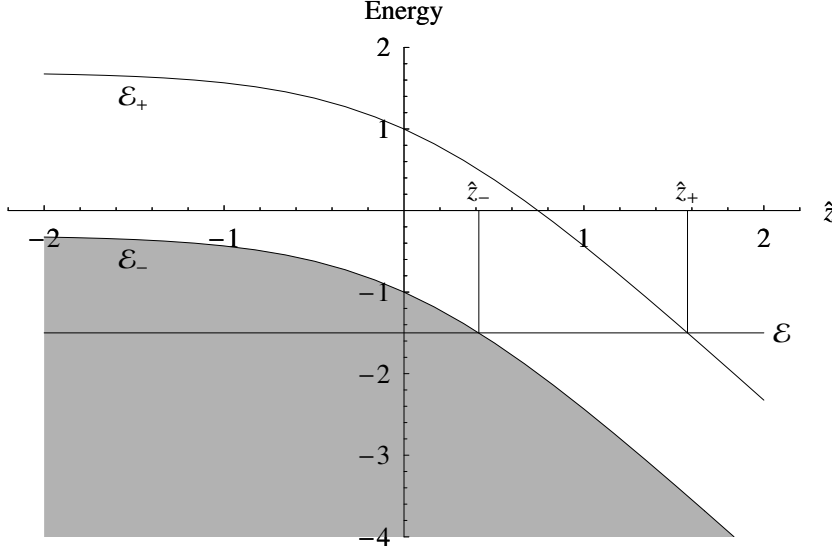


Figure D.4.: Energies (D.1.1) for a soft electric field step $E(z)$ of Eq. (D.3.25) and the potentials $V_{\pm}(z)$ (D.3.25) for $\sigma_s = 5$. Positive and negative-energies $\mathcal{E}_{\pm}(z)$ of Eq. (D.1.1) are plotted for $p_z = p_{\perp} = 0$ as functions of $\hat{z} = z/\ell$.

so that $z_{\pm} = z(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}; \pm 1)$, one finds the electric field in the form

$$E(z) = E_0 \left[1 - \frac{1}{2} e^{(\zeta \sqrt{1+\delta} - \mathcal{E})/\sigma_s} \right] \equiv E(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}; \zeta). \quad (\text{D.3.29})$$

Inserting this into Eq. (D.1.25) and expanding $E_0/E(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}; \zeta)$ in powers one obtains

$$\begin{aligned} G(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}) &= 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{e^{-n\mathcal{E}/\sigma_s}}{2^n} \frac{2}{\pi} \int_{-1}^1 d\zeta \sqrt{1-\zeta^2} e^{n\zeta/\sigma_s} = \\ &= 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} e^{-n\mathcal{E}/\sigma_s} I_1(n\sqrt{1+\delta}/\sigma_s), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.3.30})$$

where $I_1(x)$ is a modified Bessel function. Expanding $I_1(n\sqrt{1+\delta}/\sigma_s)$ in powers of δ :

$$I_1(n\sqrt{1+\delta}/\sigma_s) = I_1(n/\sigma_s) + (n/4\sigma_s)[I_0(n/\sigma_s) + I_2(n/\sigma_s)]\delta + \dots \quad (\text{D.3.31})$$

one can identify

$$G(0, \mathcal{E}) = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} e^{-n\mathcal{E}/\sigma_s} I_1(n/\sigma_s), \quad (\text{D.3.32})$$

$$G(0, \mathcal{E}) + G_\delta(0, \mathcal{E}) = 1 + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} e^{-n\mathcal{E}/\sigma_s} [(n/\sigma_s) I_0(n/\sigma_s) - I_1(n/\sigma_s)]. \quad (\text{D.3.33})$$

The integral over \mathcal{E} in Eq. (D.1.36) starts at $\mathcal{E}_< = 1 - \sigma_s \log 2$ where the integrand rises from 0 to 1 as \mathcal{E} exceeds a few units of σ_s . The derivative of $e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0,\mathcal{E})}$ drops from 1 to $e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)}$ over this interval. Hence the derivative $\partial_{\mathcal{E}} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0,\mathcal{E})}$ is peaked around some value $\bar{\mathcal{E}}$. Thus the integral $\int d\mathcal{E} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0,\mathcal{E})}$ is performed by parts as

$$\int d\mathcal{E} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0,\mathcal{E})} = \mathcal{E} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0,\mathcal{E})} \Big|_{\mathcal{E}_<}^{\infty} - \int d\mathcal{E} \mathcal{E} \partial_{\mathcal{E}} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0,\mathcal{E})}. \quad (\text{D.3.34})$$

The first term can be rewritten with the help of $d\mathcal{E} = eE_0 dz$ as $e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)} |eE_0| \ell/2$, thus giving rise to the decay rate (D.3.2) in the volume $V_\perp \ell/2$, and the second term gives only a small correction to this. The second term in Eq. (D.3.34) shows that the boundary effects reduce the pair-production rate compared with the pair-production rate (D.3.2) in the constant field without any boundary.

D.4. Tunneling into Bound States

We turn now to the case in which instead of an outgoing wave as given (D.1.14) there is a bound state. A linearly rising electric field whose potential is harmonic is considered:

$$E(z) = E_0 \left(\frac{z}{\lambda_C} \right), \quad V(z) = \frac{eE_0 \lambda_C}{2} \left(\frac{z}{\lambda_C} \right)^2. \quad (\text{D.4.1})$$

It will be convenient to parametrize the field strength E_0 in terms of a dimensionless reduced electric field ϵ as $E_0 = e\hbar c / e\lambda_C^2 = \epsilon E_c$. In Fig. D.5, the positive and negative-energy spectra $\mathcal{E}_\pm(z)$ defined by Eq. (D.1.1) for $p_z = p_\perp = 0$ are plotted to show energy gap and level crossing for $\epsilon > 0$ (left) and $\epsilon < 0$ (right). If ϵ is positive, Eq. (D.1.3) yields for $z > 0$,

$$z_\pm = \lambda_C \sqrt{\frac{2}{\epsilon}} \left(\mathcal{E} \mp \sqrt{1 + \delta} \right)^{1/2}, \quad z_+ < z_-, \quad (\text{D.4.2})$$

and mirror-reflected turning points for $z < 0$, obtained by exchanging $z_\pm \rightarrow -z_\pm$ in (D.4.2). Negative-energy electrons tunnel into the potential well $-z_+ <$

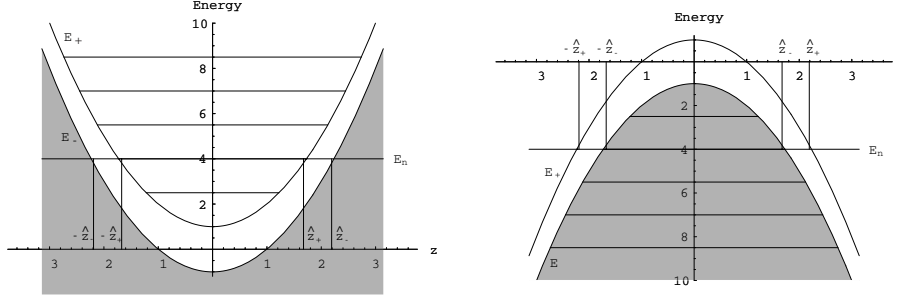


Figure D.5.: Positive- and negative-energy spectra $\mathcal{E}_{\pm}(z)$ of Eq. (D.1.1) for $p_z = p_{\perp} = 0$ as a function of $\hat{z} \equiv z/\lambda_C$ for the linearly rising electric field $E(z)$ with the harmonic potential (D.4.1). The reduced field strengths are $\epsilon = 2$ (left figure) and $\epsilon = -2$ (right figure). On the left, bound states are filled and positrons escape to $z = \pm\infty$. On the right, bound electrons with negative energy tunnel out of the well and escape with increasing energy to $z = \pm\infty$.

$z < +z_+$, where $\mathcal{E} \geq \mathcal{E}_+$, forming bound states. The associated positrons run off to infinity.

D.4.1. JWKB transmission probability

Due to the physical application to be discussed in the next section, here only the tunneling process for $\epsilon > 0$ on the left-hand side of Fig. D.5 will be studied. One can consider the regime $z < 0$ with the turning points $-z_- < -z_+$. The incident wave and flux for $z < -z_-$ pointing in the positive z -direction are given by Eqs. (D.1.13) and (D.1.16). The wave function for $-z_- < z < -z_+$ has the form Eq. (D.1.12) with the replacement $z_- \rightarrow -z_-$. The transmitted wave is now no longer freely propagating as in (D.1.14), but describes a bound state of a positive-energy electron:

$$\phi_{\mathcal{E}_n}(z) = \frac{\mathcal{B}}{(p_z)^{1/2}} \cos \left[\frac{1}{\hbar} \int_{-z_+}^z p_z dz - \frac{\pi}{4} \right]. \quad (\text{D.4.3})$$

The Sommerfeld quantization condition

$$\frac{1}{\hbar} \int_{-z_+}^{+z_+} p_z dz = \pi(n + \frac{1}{2}), \quad n = 0, 1, 2, \dots \quad (\text{D.4.4})$$

fixes the energies \mathcal{E}_n . The connection rules for the wave functions (D.1.12) and (D.4.3) at the turning point $-z_+$ determine

$$\mathcal{B} = \sqrt{2} \mathcal{C}_+ e^{-i\pi n} \exp \left[-\frac{1}{\hbar} \int_{-z_-}^{-z_+} \kappa_z dz \right]. \quad (\text{D.4.5})$$

Assuming the states $\phi_{\mathcal{E}_n}(z)$ to be initially unoccupied, the transmitted flux to these states at the classical turning point $-z_+$ is

$$\frac{\hbar}{m_e} \phi_{\mathcal{E}_n}(z) \partial_z \phi_{\mathcal{E}_n}^*(z) \Big|_{z \rightarrow -z_+} = \frac{|\mathcal{B}|^2}{(2m_e)} = \frac{|\mathcal{C}_+|^2}{m_e} \exp \left[-\frac{2}{\hbar} \int_{-z_-}^{-z_+} \kappa_z dz \right]. \quad (\text{D.4.6})$$

From Eqs. (D.1.16), (D.4.6), and (D.1.18) one then finds the JWKB transmission probability for positrons to fill these bound states leaving a positron outside:

$$\mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}}(p_\perp, \mathcal{E}_n) = \exp \left[-\frac{2}{\hbar} \int_{-z_-}^{-z_+} \kappa_z dz \right], \quad (\text{D.4.7})$$

which has the same form as Eq. (A.4.10). The same result is obtained once more for $z > 0$ with turning points $z_+ < z_-$, which can be obtained from (D.4.7) by the mirror reflection $-z_\pm \leftrightarrow z_\pm$.

D.4.2. Energy spectrum of bound states

From Eq. (D.1.7) for p_z and Eq. (D.4.1) for the potential $V(z)$, the eikonal (D.4.4) is calculated to determine the energy spectrum \mathcal{E}_n of bound states

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{\hbar} \int_{-z_+}^{+z_+} p_z dz &= 2 \frac{\epsilon}{\lambda_C^3} \int_0^{z_+} \left[(z^2 - z_+^2)(z^2 - z_-^2) \right]^{1/2} dz \\ &= \frac{2\epsilon z_+}{3\lambda_C^3} \left[(z_+^2 + z_-^2)E(t) - (z_-^2 - z_+^2)K(t) \right], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.4.8})$$

where $E(t)$, $K(t)$ are complete elliptical integrals of the first and second kind, respectively, and $t \equiv z_+/z_-$. The Sommerfeld quantization rule (D.4.4) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{8}{3} \left[\frac{2(\mathcal{E}_n - \sqrt{1+\delta})}{\epsilon} \right]^{1/2} \left[\mathcal{E}_n E(t_n) - (\sqrt{1+\delta})K(t_n) \right] &= \pi \left(n + \frac{1}{2} \right) \\ t_n &\equiv \left(\frac{\mathcal{E}_n - \sqrt{1+\delta}}{\mathcal{E}_n + \sqrt{1+\delta}} \right)^{1/2}. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.4.9})$$

For any given transverse momentum $p_\perp = \sqrt{\delta}$, this determines the discrete energies \mathcal{E}_n .

D.4.3. Rate of pair production

By analogy with Eqs. (D.1.26) and (D.1.36), the transmission probability (D.4.7) must now be integrated over all incident particles with the flux (D.1.21) to

yield the rate of pair production:

$$\frac{\Gamma_{\text{JWKB}}}{V_{\perp}} = 2D_s \sum_n \frac{\omega_n}{2\pi} \int \frac{d^2 p_{\perp}}{(2\pi\hbar)^2} \mathcal{P}_{\text{JWKB}}(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}_n), \quad (\text{D.4.10})$$

$$\approx 2D_s \frac{|eE_0|}{4\pi^2\hbar c} \sum_n \frac{\omega_n}{2\pi} \frac{1}{G(0, \mathcal{E}_n) + G_{\delta}(0, \mathcal{E}_n)} e^{-\pi(E_c/E_0)G(0, \mathcal{E}_n)} \quad (\text{D.4.11})$$

In obtaining these expressions one has used the energy conservation law to perform the integral over \mathcal{E} . This receives only contributions for $\mathcal{E} = \mathcal{E}_n$ where $\int d\mathcal{E} = \omega_n\hbar \equiv \mathcal{E}_n - \mathcal{E}_{n-1}$. The factor 2 accounts for the equal contributions from the two regimes $z > 0$ and $z < 0$. The previous relation (D.1.27) is now replaced by

$$\omega_n\hbar = |eE(z_{-}^n)|\Delta z_{-}^n. \quad (\text{D.4.12})$$

Using Eq. (D.1.22) and expressing $z/\lambda_C > 0$ in terms of ζ as

$$z = z(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}_n; \zeta) = \lambda_C \sqrt{\frac{2}{\epsilon}} \left(\mathcal{E}_n - \zeta \sqrt{1 + \delta} \right)^{1/2}, \quad (\text{D.4.13})$$

one calculates $z_{\pm} = z(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}_n; \pm 1)$, and find the electric field in the form

$$E(z) = E_0 \sqrt{\frac{2}{\epsilon}} \left(\mathcal{E}_n - \zeta \sqrt{1 + \delta} \right)^{1/2} \equiv E(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}_n; \zeta). \quad (\text{D.4.14})$$

Inserting this into Eq. (D.1.25) one obtains

$$\begin{aligned} G(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}_n) &= \frac{2}{\pi} \sqrt{\frac{\epsilon}{2}} \int_{-1}^1 d\zeta \frac{\sqrt{1 - \zeta^2}}{[\mathcal{E}_n - \zeta \sqrt{1 + \delta}]^{1/2}}, \\ &= \frac{8}{3\pi} \sqrt{\frac{\epsilon}{2}} \frac{(\mathcal{E}_n^{\delta} + 1)^{1/2}}{(1 + \delta)^{1/4}} \left[(1 - \mathcal{E}_n^{\delta}) K(q_n^{\delta}) + \mathcal{E}_n^{\delta} E(q_n^{\delta}) \right] \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.4.15})$$

where $\mathcal{E}_n^{\delta} \equiv \mathcal{E}_n / (1 + \delta)^{1/2}$ and $q_n^{\delta} = \sqrt{2/(\mathcal{E}_n^{\delta} + 1)}$. Expanding $G(p_{\perp}, \mathcal{E}_n)$ in powers of δ one finds the zeroth order term

$$G(0, \mathcal{E}_n) = \frac{8}{3\pi} \sqrt{\frac{\epsilon}{2}} (\mathcal{E}_n + 1)^{1/2} [(1 - \mathcal{E}_n) K(q_n) + \mathcal{E}_n E(q_n)] \quad (\text{D.4.16})$$

and the derivative

$$\begin{aligned} G_{\delta}(0, \mathcal{E}_n) &= \frac{\sqrt{\epsilon}}{3\pi} \frac{q_n}{\mathcal{E}_n} q_n - 1 [(4 - 5q_n + \mathcal{E}_n(7 - 6q_n)) E(q_n) + \\ &+ (1 - \mathcal{E}_n - 7\mathcal{E}_n^2)(q_n - 1) K(q_n)] \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.4.17})$$

where $q_n \equiv \sqrt{2/(\mathcal{E}_n + 1)}$.

E. Phenomenology of electron-positron pair creation and annihilation

E.1. e^+e^- annihilation experiments in particle physics

The $e^+e^- \rightarrow \gamma + \gamma$ process predicted by Dirac was almost immediately observed Klemperer (1934). The e^+e^- annihilation experiments have since become possibly the most prolific field of research in the active domain of particle physics. The Dirac pair-annihilation process (A.0.1) has no energy threshold and the energy release in the e^+e^- collision is larger than $2m_e c^2$. This process is the only one in the limit of low energy. As the e^+e^- energy increases the collision produces not only photons through the Dirac process (E.3.2) but also other particles. For early work in this direction, predicting resonances for pions, K-mesons \dots , see Cabibbo and Gatto (1961). Production of such particles are achievable and precisely conceived in experimental particle physics, but hardly possible with the vacuum polarization process. In particular when the energy in the center of mass is larger than twice muon mass m_μ about 100 times electron mass, the electron and positron electromagnetically annihilate into two muons $e^+e^- \rightarrow \mu^+\mu^-$ via the intermediation of a virtual photon. The cross-section in the center of mass frame is given by Altarelli (1982)

$$\sigma_{e^+e^- \rightarrow \mu^+\mu^-} = \frac{16\pi^2\alpha^2(\hbar c)^2}{q_{\text{cm}}^2} \text{Im } \bar{\omega}_{\mu^+\mu^-}(q_{\text{cm}}^2) = \frac{4\pi\alpha^2(\hbar c)^2}{3q_{\text{cm}}^2} = \frac{86.8\text{nb}}{q_{\text{cm}}^2(\text{GeV})^2} \quad (\text{E.1.1})$$

where $\bar{\omega}_{\mu^+\mu^-}(q_{\text{cm}}^2)$ is the muon part of the vacuum polarization tensor and $q_{\text{cm}}^2 = c^2(p_+ + p_-)^2/4$ the square of energy of the center of mass frame, where p_\pm are four-momenta of positron and electron. At very high energy $m_\mu^2/q_{\text{cm}}^2 \rightarrow 0$, $\text{Im } \bar{\omega}_{\mu^+\mu^-}(q_{\text{cm}}^2) \rightarrow 1/(12\pi)$.

At very high energies of the order of several GeV, electron and positron electromagnetically annihilate into hadrons, whose cross-section has the same structure as the cross-section (E.1.1) with $\bar{\omega}_{\mu^+\mu^-}(q_{\text{cm}}^2)$ replaced by the hadron

part of the vacuum polarization tensor $\bar{\omega}_{\text{hadrons}}(q_{\text{cm}}^2)$,

$$\sigma_{e^+e^- \rightarrow \text{hadron}} = \frac{16\pi^2\alpha^2(\hbar c)^2}{q_{\text{cm}}^2} \text{Im } \bar{\omega}_{\text{hadrons}}(q_{\text{cm}}^2). \quad (\text{E.1.2})$$

The two cross-sections (E.1.1) and (E.1.2) are comparable, of the order of a few tens of nanobarns (10^{-33}cm^2). It is traditional to call R the ratio of hadronic to electromagnetic annihilation cross-sections Altarelli (1982),

$$R(q_{\text{cm}}^2) = \frac{\sigma_{e^+e^- \rightarrow \text{hadron}}}{\sigma_{e^+e^- \rightarrow \mu^+\mu^-}} = 12\pi \text{Im } \bar{\omega}_{\text{hadrons}}(q_{\text{cm}}^2). \quad (\text{E.1.3})$$

As the energy q_{cm}^2 of electron and positron collision increases and reaches the mass-energy thresholds of constituents of hadrons, which are now called “quarks”, narrow resonances occurs, see for example, the ratio R as a function of $\sqrt{q^2}$ measured at SLAC Schwitters and Strauch (1976). These resonances correspond to production of particles such as J/ψ , Y etc., see Fig. E.1. This

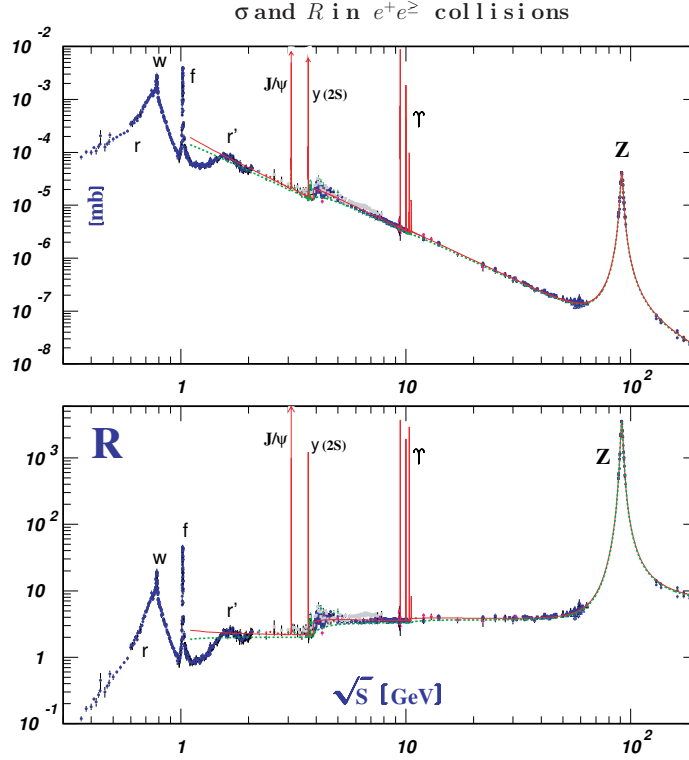


Figure E.1: The total cross section of $e^+e^- \rightarrow \text{hadron}$ (E.1.2) and the ratio $R = \sigma_{e^+e^- \rightarrow \text{hadron}} / \sigma_{e^+e^- \rightarrow \mu^+\mu^-}$ (E.1.3), where $s \equiv q_{\text{cm}}^2$.

provides a fruitful investigation of hadron physics.

As the center of mass energy q_{cm}^2 reaches the electroweak scale (several hundred GeVs), electron and positron annihilation process probes a rich domain of investigating electroweak physics, see for instance Refs. Murayama and Peskin (1996); Barklow et al. (1997). Recent experiments on e^+e^- collisions at LEP, SLAC and the Tevatron allowed precision tests of the electroweak Standard Model. In Grünewald (1999), Altarelli and Grünewald (2004) the results of these precision tests together with implications on parameters, in particular Higgs boson mass, as well as constraints for possible new physics effects are discussed.

Electron and positron collisions are used to produce many particles in the laboratory, which live too short to occur naturally. Several electron-positron colliders have been built and proposed for this purpose all over the world (CERN, SLAC, INP, DESY, KEK and IHEP), since the first electron-positron collider the “Anello d’Accumulazione” (AdA) was built by the theoretical proposal of Bruno Touschek in Frascati (Rome) in 1960 Bernardini (2004). Following the success of AdA (luminosity $\sim 10^{25}/(\text{cm}^2 \text{ sec})$, beam energy $\sim 0.25\text{GeV}$), it was decided to build in the Frascati National Laboratory a storage ring of the same kind, Adone and then Daphne (luminosity $\sim 10^{33}/(\text{cm}^2\text{sec})$, beam energy $\sim 0.51\text{GeV}$), with the aim of exploring the new energy range in sub-nuclear physics opened by the possibility of observing particle-antiparticle interactions with center of mass at rest. The biggest of all is CERN’s Large Electron Positron (LEP) collider L3C, which began operation in the summer of 1989 and have reached a massive collision energy of 206.5 GeV. The detectors around the LEP ring have been able to perform precise experiments, testing and extending our knowledge of particles and their strong, electromagnetic and weak interactions, as described by the Standard Model for elementary particle physics.

All these clearly show how the study of e^+e^- reaction introduced by Dirac have grown to be one of the most prolific field in particle physics and have received remarkable verification in energies up to TeV in a succession of machines increasing in energy.

E.2. The Breit-Wheeler process in laser physics and astrophysics

While the Dirac process (A.0.1) has been by far one of the most prolific in physics, the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2) has been one of the most elusive for direct observations. In Earth-bound experiments the major effort today is directed to evidence this phenomenon in very strong and coherent electromagnetic field in lasers. In this process collision of many photons may lead in the future to pair creation. This topic is discussed in the following Sections. Alternative evidence for the Breit-Wheeler process can come from optically

thick electron-positron plasma which may be created in the future either in Earth-bound experiments, or currently observed in astrophysics, see Chapter H. One additional way to probe the existence of the Breit-Wheeler process is by establishing in astrophysics an upper limits to observable high energy photons, as a function of distance, propagating in the Universe as pioneered by Nikishov (1961), see Sec. E.4.

We first briefly discuss the phenomenon of electron-positron pair production at the focus of an X-ray free electron laser, as given in the review article Ringwald (2001b,a, 2003). In the early 1970's, the question was raised whether intense laser beams could be used to produce a very strong electric field by focusing the laser beam onto a smaller spot of size of the laser wavelength λ , so as to possibly study electron-positron pair production in vacuum Bunkin and Tugov (1970); Brezin and Itzykson (1970). However, it was found that the power density of all available and conceivable optical lasers Perry and Mourou (1994) is too small to have a sizable pair production rate for observations Bunkin and Tugov (1970); Brezin and Itzykson (1970); Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b, 1971c, 1972b, 2001b); Troup and Perlman (1972); Popov (1972a); Marinov and Popov (1973, 1977); Narozhnyi and Nikishov (1974); Popov (1973a); Mostepanenko and Frolov (1974); Popov (1974); Marinov and Popov (1973, 1977), since the wavelength of optical lasers and the size of focusing spot are too large to have a strong enough electric field.

Definite projects for the construction of X-ray free electron lasers (XFEL) have been set up at both DESY and SLAC. Both are based on the principle pioneered by John Madey Deacon et al. (1977) of self-amplified spontaneous emission in an undulator, which results when charges interact with the synchrotron radiation they emit Tremaine et al. (2002). At DESY the project is called XFEL and is part of the design of the electron-positron collider TESLA Materlik and Tschentscher; Brinkmann et al.; Materlik and Wroblewski (1999); Badelek et al. (2004) but is now being build as a stand-alone facility. At SLAC the project so-called Linac Coherent Light Source (LCLS) has been proposed Arthur; Lindau et al. (1999); lcl. It has been pointed out by several authors Melissinos (1999); Chen and Pellegrini (1998); Chen and Tajima (1999); Tajima (2003) that having at hand an X-ray free electron laser, the experimental study and application of strong-field physics turn out to be possible. One will use not only the strong energy and transverse coherence of the X-ray laser beam, but also focus it onto a small spot hopefully with the size of the X-ray laser wavelength $\lambda \simeq O(0.1)\text{nm}$ Nuhn and Pellegrini (2000), and obtain a very large electric field $E \sim 1/\lambda$, much larger than those obtainable with any optical laser of the same power.

Using the X-ray laser, we can hopefully achieve a very strong electric field near to its critical value for observable electron-positron pair production in vacuum. Electron-positron pair production at the focus of an X-ray laser has been discussed in Ref. Melissinos (1999), and an estimate of the corresponding production rate has been presented in Ref. Chen and Pellegrini (1998). In

Ref. Ringwald (2001b,a, 2003), the critical laser parameters, such as the laser power and focus spot size, are determined in order for achieving an observable effect of pair production in vacuum.

The electric field produced by a single laser beam is the light-like static, spatially uniform electromagnetic field, and field invariants S and P (A.4.23) vanish Troup and Perlman (1972),

$$S = 0 \quad P = 0, \quad (\text{E.2.1})$$

which results field invariants (A.4.25) $\epsilon = \beta = 0$ and non pair producing Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b), this can be seen from Eqs. (A.4.23), (A.4.27) and (C.4.39). It is then required that two or more coherent laser beams form a standing wave at their intersection spot, where a strong electric field can hypothetically be produced without magnetic field.

We assume that each X-ray laser pulse is split into two equal parts and recombined to form a standing wave with a frequency ω , whose electromagnetic fields are then given by

$$\mathbf{E}(t) = [0, 0, E_{\text{peak}} \cos(\omega t)], \quad \mathbf{B}(t) = (0, 0, 0), \quad (\text{E.2.2})$$

where the peak electric field is Ringwald (2001b,a, 2003),

$$E_{\text{peak}} = \sqrt{\frac{P_{\text{laser}}}{\pi \sigma_{\text{laser}}^2}} \simeq 1.1 \cdot 10^{17} \left(\frac{P_{\text{laser}}}{1 \text{ TW}} \right)^{1/2} \left(\frac{0.1 \text{ nm}}{\sigma_{\text{laser}}} \right) \frac{\text{V}}{\text{m}}, \quad (\text{E.2.3})$$

as expressed in terms of the laser power P_{laser} (1 TW=10¹²W), the focus spot radius σ_{laser} . Eq. (E.2.3) shows that the peak electric energy-density $E_{\text{peak}}^2/2$ is created in a spot of area $\pi \sigma_{\text{laser}}^2$ by an X-ray laser of power P_{laser} . The laser beam intensity on the focused spot is then given by

$$I_{\text{laser}} = \frac{P_{\text{laser}}}{\pi \sigma_{\text{laser}}^2} \simeq \frac{c}{4\pi} E_{\text{peak}}^2.$$

For a laser pulse with wavelength λ about $1 \mu\text{m}$ and the theoretical diffraction limit $\sigma_{\text{laser}} \simeq \lambda$ being reached, the critical intensity laser beam can be defined as,

$$I_{\text{laser}}^c = \frac{c}{4\pi} E_c^2 \simeq 4.6 \cdot 10^{29} \text{ W/cm}^2, \quad (\text{E.2.4})$$

which corresponds to the peak electric field approximately equal to the critical value E_c (3.2.1).

E.2.1. Phenomenology of pair production in alternating fields

To compute pair-production rate in an alternating electric field (E.2.2) of laser wave in a semi classical manner, one assumes the conditions that the peak electric field E_{peak} is much smaller than the critical field E_c (3.2.1) and the energy $\hbar\omega$ of the laser photons is much smaller than the rest energy of electron $m_e c^2$,

$$E_{\text{peak}} \ll E_c, \quad \omega \hbar \ll m_e c^2. \quad (\text{E.2.5})$$

These conditions are well satisfied at realistic optical as well as X-ray lasers Ringwald (2001b,a, 2003).

The phenomenon of electron-positron pair production in alternating electric fields was studied in Refs. Brezin and Itzykson (1970); Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b, 1971c, 1972b, 2001b, 1972a); Marinov and Popov (1973, 1977); Narozhnyi and Nikishov (1974); Popov (1973a); Mostepanenko and Frolov (1974); Popov (1974); Marinov and Popov (1973, 1977); Dunne and Hall (1998). By using generalized JWKB method Brezin and Itzykson (1970) and imaginary time method Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b, 1971c, 1972b, 2001b, 1973a, 1974) the rate of pair production was computed. In Ref. Brezin and Itzykson (1970), the rate of pair production was estimated to be (see Sec. C.5),

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}} = \frac{c}{4\pi^3 \lambda_C^4} \left(\frac{E_{\text{peak}}}{E_c} \right)^2 \frac{\pi}{g(\eta) + \frac{1}{2\eta} g'(\eta)} \exp \left[-\pi \frac{E_{\text{peak}}}{E_c} g(\eta) \right], \quad (\text{E.2.6})$$

where the complex function $g(\eta)$ is given in Refs. Brezin and Itzykson (1970); Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b) (see Eq. (C.5.24)),

$$g(\eta) = \frac{4}{\pi} \int_0^1 du \left[\frac{1-u^2}{1+\eta^{-2}u^2} \right]^{1/2} = \begin{cases} 1 - \frac{1}{8\eta^3} + O(\eta^{-4}), & \eta \gg 1 \\ \frac{4\eta}{\pi} \ln \left(\frac{4}{e\eta} \right) + O(\eta^3), & \eta \ll 1 \end{cases} \quad (\text{E.2.7})$$

and the parameter η is defined as the work done by the electric force eE_{peak} in the Compton wavelength λ_C in unit of laser photon energy $\hbar\omega$,

$$\eta = \frac{eE_{\text{peak}}\lambda_C}{\hbar\omega} = \frac{m_e c^2}{\hbar\omega} \frac{E_{\text{peak}}}{E_c}. \quad (\text{E.2.8})$$

which is the same as η (C.5.23) in Sec. C.5 and agrees with its time-average (E.3.4), (E.3.5) over one period of laser wave. The exponential factor in Eq. (E.2.6) has been confirmed by later works Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b, 1973a, 1974), which determine more accurately the pre-exponential factor by taking into account also interference effects. The parameter η is related to the adiabaticity parameter $\gamma = 1/\eta$.

In the strong-field and low-frequency limit ($\eta \gg 1$), formula (E.2.6) agrees to the Schwinger non perturbative result (C.4.25) for a static and spatially uni-

form field, apart from an “inessential” (see Ref. Brezin and Itzykson (1970)) pre-exponential factor of π . This is similar to the adiabatic approximation of a slowly varying electric field that we discussed in Sec. E.5.5. On the other hand, for $\eta \ll 1$ high-frequency and weak-field limit, Eq. (E.2.6) yields Brezin and Itzykson (1970),

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}} \simeq \frac{c}{4\pi^3\lambda_C^4} \left(\frac{\hbar\omega}{m_e c^2} \right)^2 \frac{\pi\eta}{2\ln(4/\eta)} \left(\frac{e\eta}{4} \right)^{2\frac{m_e c^2}{\hbar\omega}} \left[1 + O(\eta^2) \right], \quad (\text{E.2.9})$$

corresponding to the n th order perturbative result, where n is the minimum number of quanta of laser field required to create an e^+e^- pair:

$$n \gtrsim \frac{2m_e c^2}{\hbar\omega} \gg 1. \quad (\text{E.2.10})$$

The pair production rate (E.2.6) interpolates analytically between the adiabatic, non perturbative tunneling mechanism (C.4.25) ($\eta \gg 1, \gamma \ll 1$) and the anti-adiabatic, perturbative multi-photon production mechanism (E.2.9) ($\eta \ll 1, \gamma \gg 1$).

In Refs. Popov (1973a, 1974), it was found that the pair-production rate, under the condition (E.2.5), can be expressed as a sum of probabilities w_n of many-photon processes,

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_p = \sum_{n>n_0} w_n, \quad \text{with} \quad n_0 = \frac{m_e c^2}{\hbar\omega} \Delta_m, \quad (\text{E.2.11})$$

where Δ_m indicates an effective energy gap $m_e c^2 \Delta_m$, due to the transverse oscillations of the electron propagating in a laser wave (see Sec. C.6 and Eq. (C.6.11)). In the limiting cases of small and large η , the result is given by Popov (1974),

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}}_p \simeq \frac{c}{4\pi^3\lambda_C^4} \begin{cases} \frac{\sqrt{2}}{\pi} \left(\frac{E_{\text{peak}}}{E_c} \right)^{5/2} \exp \left[-\pi \left(\frac{E_c}{E_{\text{peak}}} \right) \left(1 - \frac{1}{8\eta^2} + O(\eta^{-4}) \right) \right], & \eta \gg 1 \\ \frac{\sqrt{2}}{2} \left(\frac{\hbar\omega}{m_e c^2} \right)^{5/2} \sum_n \left(\frac{e\eta}{4} \right)^{2n} e^{-\phi} \text{Erfi}(\phi^{1/2}), & \eta \ll 1, \end{cases} \quad (\text{E.2.12})$$

where $n > (2m_e c^2 / \hbar\omega)$, $\phi = 2(n - \frac{2m_e c^2}{\hbar\omega})$ and $\text{Erfi}(x)$ is the imaginary error function Bateman (1955). The range of validity of results (E.2.6), (E.2.9), (E.2.11) and (E.2.12) is indicated by the conditions (E.2.5).

E.2.2. Pair production in X-ray free electron lasers

According to Eq. (E.2.3) for the electric field E of an X-ray laser, in order to obtain an observable effect of pair production we need to have a large power

P , a small laser focusing spot radius σ_{laser} and a long duration time Δt of the coherent laser pulse. The power of an X-ray free electron laser is limited by the current laser technology. The focusing spot radii σ_{laser} are limited by the theoretical diffraction of the order of the X-ray laser beam wavelength. In Ref. Ringwald (2001b,a, 2003), it was estimated that to produce at least one pair of electron and positron, we need the minimum power of the X-ray laser to be $\sim 2.5 - 4.5\text{TW}$ corresponding to an electric field of $\sim 1.7 - 2.3 \cdot 10^{15}\text{V/cm} \sim 0.1E_c$, provided the laser wavelength is $\lambda \sim 0.1\text{nm}$ and the theoretical diffraction limit $\sigma_{\text{laser}} \simeq \lambda$ is actually reached and the laser coherent duration time $\Delta t \sim 10^{-(13 \sim 16)}$ second. Based on these estimations, Ringwald concluded Ringwald (2001b,a, 2003) that with present available techniques, the power density and electric fields of X-ray laser are far too small to produce a sizable Sauter-Euler-Heisenberg-Schwinger effect. If the techniques for X-ray free electron laser are considerably improved, so that the XFEL power can reach the terawatt regime and the focusing spot radii can reach the theoretical diffraction limit, we will still have the possibility of investigating the Sauter-Euler-Heisenberg-Schwinger phenomenon by a future XFEL.

E.2.3. Pair production by a circularly polarized laser beam

Instead of a time-varying electric field (E.2.2) that is created by an intersection of more than two coherent laser beams, one considered Bulanov (2004); Narozhny et al. (2004) a focused circularly polarized laser beam to have non vanishing field invariants S, P (A.4.23) and strong electromagnetic fields \mathbf{E}, \mathbf{B} for pair production. It is well known that the electromagnetic field of a focused light beam is not transverse, however, one can always represent the field of a focused beam as a superposition of fields with transverse either electric (e -polarized) field or magnetic (h -polarized) field only, see e.g., Born and Wolf (1980).

In Ref. Narozhny et al. (2004), the e -polarized electric and magnetic fields ($\mathbf{E}^e, \mathbf{B}^e$) propagating in the $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ direction is described by the following exact solution of Maxwell equations Narozhny and Fofanov (2000),

$$\mathbf{E}^e = iE_{\text{peak}}e^{-i\psi} \left[F_1(\mathbf{e}_x \pm \mathbf{e}_y) - F_2e^{\pm 2i\phi}(\mathbf{e}_x \mp \mathbf{e}_y) \right]; \quad (\text{E.2.13})$$

$$\mathbf{B}^e = \pm E_{\text{peak}}e^{-i\psi} \left\{ \left(1 - i\delta^2 \frac{\partial}{\partial \chi} \right) \left[F_1(\mathbf{e}_x \pm \mathbf{e}_y) + F_2e^{\pm 2i\phi}(\mathbf{e}_x \mp \mathbf{e}_y) \right] + 2i\Delta e^{\pm 2i\phi} \frac{\partial F_1}{\partial \xi} \mathbf{e}_z \right\}, \quad (\text{E.2.14})$$

where $\psi = \omega(t - z/c)$, $e^{\pm 2i\phi} = (x + iy)/\rho$, $\chi = z\Delta/R$, $\xi = \rho/R$ and $\rho = \sqrt{x^2 + y^2}$. The focusing parameter $\Delta = \lambda/(2\pi R)$ is expressed in terms of laser's wavelength λ and the focal spot radius R . The functions $F_{1,2}(\xi, \chi, \Delta)$

obey differential equations Narozhny and Fofanov (2000), go to zero sufficiently fast when $\xi, |\chi| \rightarrow \infty$ and conditions $F_1(0, 0, \Delta) = 1; F_2(0, 0, \Delta) = 0$ for $\Delta \rightarrow 0$ Narozhny et al. (2004). The h -polarized electric and magnetic fields $\mathbf{E}^h = \pm i\mathbf{B}^e$ and $\mathbf{B}^h = \mp i\mathbf{E}^e$ Narozhny and Fofanov (2000).

Corresponding to electromagnetic fields (E.2.13), (E.2.14), field invariants S^e, P^e are given by Eq. (A.4.23) and ε, β by Eq. (A.4.25) in Sec. A.4. The total number of electron and positron pairs is given by Eq. (C.4.39) for $n = 1$ (see also Eq. (C.4.41),

$$N_{e^+e^-} \simeq \frac{\alpha}{\pi} \int_V dV \int_0^\tau dt \varepsilon \beta \coth \frac{\pi \beta}{\varepsilon} \exp \left(-\frac{\pi E_c}{\varepsilon} \right), \quad (\text{E.2.15})$$

where the integral over the volume V and duration τ of the laser pulse. The qualitative estimations and numerical calculations of total number $N_{e^+e^-}$ of electron and positron pairs in terms of laser intensity I_{laser} and focusing parameter Δ are presented in Ref. Narozhny et al. (2004). Two examples for e -polarized electromagnetic fields are as follow,

1. for $E_{\text{peak}} = E_c$, $\lambda = 1\mu\text{m}$, $\tau = 10\text{fs}$ and $\Delta = 0.1$ (the theoretical diffraction limit), the laser beam intensity $I_{\text{laser}} \simeq 1.5 \cdot 10^{29} \text{W/cm}^2 \simeq 0.31 I_{\text{laser}}^c$ the critical intensity (E.2.4). The total number of pairs created $N_{e^+e^-} \simeq 5 \cdot 10^{20}$ according to the Schwinger formula Eq. (E.2.15) for pair-production rate;
2. with the same values of laser parameters Δ , λ and τ , while the laser pulse intensity $I_{\text{laser}} \simeq 5 \cdot 10^{27} \text{W/cm}^2 \sim 10^{-2} I_{\text{laser}}^c$ corresponding to $E_{\text{peak}} \sim 0.18 E_c$, Eq. (E.2.15) gives $N_{e^+e^-} \sim 20$.

Because the volume V and duration τ of the laser pulse is much larger than the Compton volume and time occupied by one pair, the average number of pairs $N_{e^+e^-} \simeq 20$ is large and possibly observable even the peak value of electric field is only 18% of the critical value. In addition, pair production is much more effective by the e -polarized electric and magnetic fields $\mathbf{E}^e, \mathbf{B}^e$ than by the h -polarized fields $\mathbf{E}^h, \mathbf{B}^h$. The detailed analysis of the dependence of the number of pairs $N_{e^+e^-}$ on the laser intensity I_{laser} and focusing parameter Δ is given in a recent article Bulanov et al. (2006), and results is presented in Fig. (E.2). In particular, it is shown that for the case of two counter-propagating focused laser-pulses with circular polarizations, pair production becomes experimentally observable when the laser intensity $I_{\text{laser}} \sim 10^{26} \text{W/cm}^2$ for each beam, which is about $1 \sim 2$ orders of magnitude lower than for a single focused laser-pulse, and more than 3 orders of magnitude lower than the critical intensity (E.2.4). Recently the process of electron-positron pair creation in the superposition of a nuclear Coulomb and a strong laser field was studied in Milstein et al. (2006).

It was pointed Narozhny et al. (2004); Bulanov et al. (2006) that the exploited method becomes inconsistent and one should take into account back

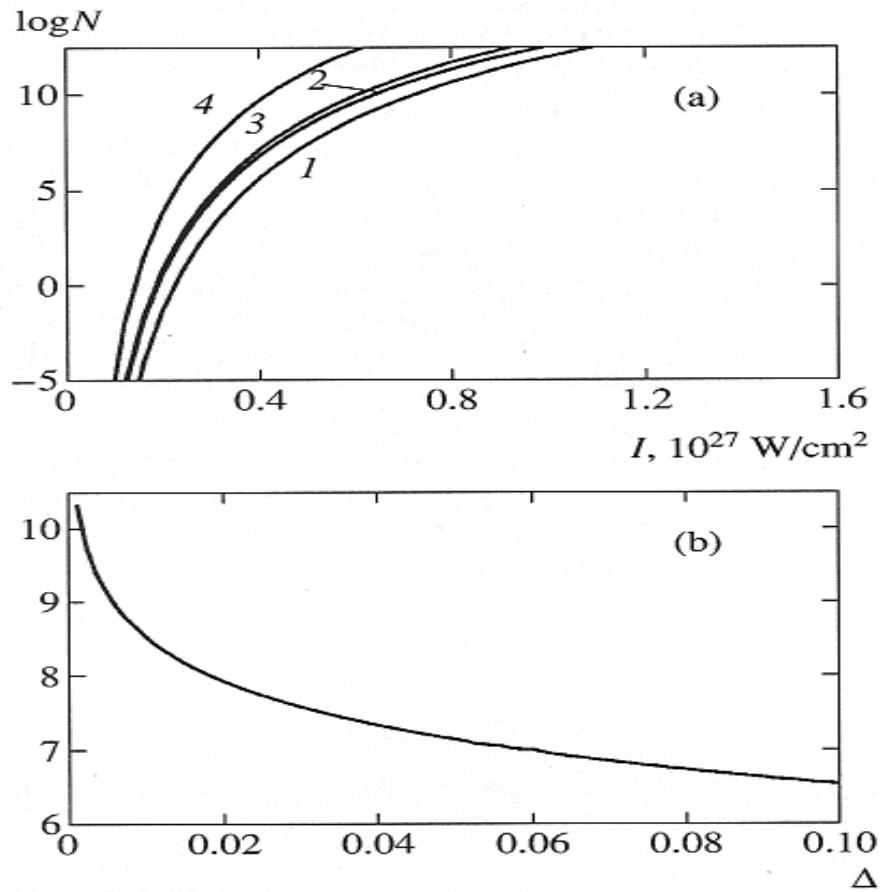


Figure E.2.: Logarithm of the number of pairs $N_{e^+e^-}$ produced by the field of two counter-propagating laser-pulses (circular polarization) is shown as functions of: (a) the beam intensity I_{laser} for the focusing parameters $\Delta = 0.1, 0.075, 0.05$ and 0.01 (the curves 1, 2, 3 and 4 correspondingly); (b) the focusing parameter Δ for the beam intensity $I_{\text{laser}} = 4 \cdot 10^{26} \text{ W/cm}^2$ and laser-pulse duration $\tau = 10^{-14}$ sec. This figure is reproduced from Fig. 6 in Ref. Bulanov et al. (2006).

reaction of the pair production effect on the process of laser pulse focusing at such high laser intensity and $E_{\text{peak}} \sim E_c$. It has already been argued in Refs. Marinov and Popov (1973, 1977); Popov (1973a, 1974) that for the super-strong field regime $E \gtrsim 0.1E_c$, such back reaction of the produced electron-positron pairs on the external field and the mutual interactions between these particles have to be considered. These back reaction effects on pair production by laser beams leading to the formation of plasma oscillation have been recently studied in Refs. Roberts et al. (2002); Alkofer et al. (2001); Bulanov et al. (2005). Our recent studies Ruffini et al. (2003c, 2007b) show that the plasma oscillation and electron-positron-photon collision are important for electric fields $E \gtrsim 0.1E_c$, see Sec. G.7.

E.2.4. Availability of laser technology for pair production

There are several ways to increase the electromagnetic fields of a laser beam. One way is to increase the frequency of the laser radiation and then focus it onto a tiny region. X-ray lasers can be used Ringwald (2001b,a, 2003); Alkofer et al. (2001); Tajima (2003). Another way is, again, to increase the intensities of laser beams. The recent development of laser technology and the invention of the chirped pulse amplification (CPA) method have led to a stunning increase of the light intensity ($10^{22}\text{W}/\text{cm}^2$) in a laser focal spot Tajima and Mourou (2002); Mourou et al. (1998). To achieve intensities of the order $10^{24-25}\text{W}/\text{cm}^2$, a scheme was suggested in Ref. Shen and Yu (2002), where a quasi-soliton wave between two foils is pumped by the external laser field up to an ultrahigh magnitude. Using the method based on the simultaneous laser frequency upshifting and pulse compression, another scheme for reaching critical intensities has also been suggested in Ref. Bulanov et al. (2003, 2004), where the interaction of the laser pulse with electron density modulations in a plasma produced by a counter propagating breaking wake plasma wave, results in the frequency up-shift and pulse focusing. In addition, it has been suggested Tajima and Mourou (2002) a path to reach the extremely high-intensity level of $10^{26-28}\text{W}/\text{cm}^2$ already in the coming decade. Such field intensities are very close to the value of critical intensity I_{laser}^c (E.2.4). For a recent review, see Ref. Mourou et al. (2006) This technological situation has attracted the attention of the theorists who involved in physics in strong electromagnetic fields.

E.3. Phenomenology of pair production in electron beam-laser collisions

In Sec. A.2, we have discussed the Breit-Wheeler process Breit and Wheeler (1934) in which that an electron-positron pair is produced in the collision of

two real photons $\gamma_1 + \gamma_2 \rightarrow e^+ + e^-$ (A.0.2). The cross-section they obtained is $O(r_e^2)$, where the classical electron radius r_e , see Eq. (A.2.10). This lowest-order photon-photon pair-production cross-section is so small that it is difficult to observe creation of pairs in the collision of two high-energy photon beams, even if their center-of-mass energy is larger than the energy-threshold $2m_e c^2 = 1.02$ MeV.

In the previous Sections we have seen that in strong electromagnetic fields in lasers the effective non-linear terms (C.4.61) become significant and therefore, the interaction needs not to be limited to initial states of two photons Reiss (1962, 1971). A collective state of many interacting laser photons occurs.

We turn now to two important processes Bula et al. (1996); Burke et al. (1997) emerging in the interaction of an ultra relativistic electron beam with a terawatt laser pulse, performed at SLAC Kotseroglou et al. (1996), when strong electromagnetic fields are involved. The first process is the nonlinear Compton scattering, in which an ultra relativistic electron absorbs multiple photons from the laser field, but emits only a single photon via the process

$$e + n\omega \rightarrow e' + \gamma, \quad (\text{E.3.1})$$

where ω represents photons from the strong electromagnetic wave of the laser beam (its frequency being ω), n indicates the number of absorbed photons and γ represents a high-energy emitted photon (see Eq. (E.3.2) for *cross symmetry*). The theory of this nonlinear Compton effect (E.3.1) is given in Sec. C.6. The same process (E.3.1) has been expressed by Bamber et al. Bamber et al. (1999) in a semi-classical framework. The second is the Breit-Wheeler process

$$\gamma + n\omega \rightarrow e^+ + e^-. \quad (\text{E.3.2})$$

between this very high energy photon γ and multiple laser photons: the high-energy photon γ , created in the first process, propagates through the laser field and interacts with laser photons $n\omega$ to produce an electron-positron pair Burke et al. (1997).

In the electric field E of a high dense laser beam, an electron oscillates with the frequency ω of the laser and its maximum velocity in unit of the speed of light is given by

$$v_{\max} = \frac{eE}{m\omega}. \quad (\text{E.3.3})$$

In the case of weak electric field, $v_{\max} \ll 1$ and the non-relativistic electron emits the *dipole* radiation well-described in linear and perturbative QED. On the other hand, in the case of strong electric fields, $v_{\max} \rightarrow 1$ and the ultra relativistically oscillating electron emits *multi-pole* radiation. The radiated power is then a nonlinear function of the intensity of the incident laser beam. Using the maximum velocity v_{\max} of oscillating electrons in the electric field

of laser beam, one can characterize the effect of nonlinear Compton scattering by the dimensionless parameter

$$\eta = v_{\max} = \frac{eE_{\text{rms}}}{m\omega} = \frac{m_e c^2}{\omega \hbar} \frac{E_{\text{rms}}}{E_c}, \quad (\text{E.3.4})$$

where the subscript ‘rms’ means root-mean-square, with respect to the number of interacting laser photons with scattered electron. The parameter η can be expressed as a Lorentz invariant,

$$\eta^2 = \frac{e^2 |\langle A_\mu A^\mu \rangle|}{m_e^2}, \quad (\text{E.3.5})$$

where A_μ is the gauge potential of laser wave, $\partial^\mu A_\mu = 0$ and the time-average is taken over one period of laser wave, $\langle A_\mu \rangle = 0$ and

$$\langle A_\mu A^\mu \rangle = \langle (A_\mu - \langle A_\mu \rangle)^2 \rangle. \quad (\text{E.3.6})$$

Eq. (E.3.5) shows that η^2 is the intensity parameter of laser fields, and η (E.3.4) coincides with the parameter η introduced in Eq. (C.5.23) for the pair-production in an alternating electric field (see Sec. C.5).

E.3.1. Experiment of electron beam-laser collisions

After the availability of high dense and powerful laser beams, the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2) has been reconsidered in Refs. Reiss (1962, 1971); Nikishov and Ritus (1964a,b, 1965a, 1967, 1979, 1965b) for high-energy multiple photon collisions. The phenomenon of e^+e^- pair production in multi photon light-by-light scattering has been reported in recent papers Bula et al. (1996); Burke et al. (1997); Melissinos (1999); Bamber et al. (1999) on the experiment SLAC-E-144 SLA; Kotseroglou et al. (1996).

As described in Ref. Burke et al. (1997), such a large center-of-mass energy ($2m_e c^2 = 1.02$ MeV) can be possibly achieved in the collision of a laser beam against another high-energy photon beam. With a laser beam of energy 2.35 eV, a high-energy photon beam of energy 111 GeV is required for the Breit-Wheeler reaction (A.0.2) to be feasible. Such a high-energy photon beam can be created for instance by backscattering the laser beam off a high-energy electron beam, i.e., by inverse Compton-scattering. With a laser beam of energy 2.35 eV (wavelength 527nm) backscattering off a high-energy electron beam of energy 46.6 GeV, as available at SLAC Kotseroglou et al. (1996), the maximum energy acquired by Compton-backscattered photon beam is only 29.2GeV. This is still not enough for the Breit-Wheeler reaction (A.0.2) to occur, since such photon energy is four times smaller than the needed energetic threshold.

Nevertheless in strong electromagnetic fields and a long coherent time-duration $\Delta t = 2\pi/\omega$ of the laser pulse, the number n of laser photons interacting with scattered electron becomes large, when the intensity parameter of laser fields η (E.3.4) approaches or even exceeds unity. Once this number n is larger than the critical number n_0 (C.6.11) in Sec. E.3, pair production by the Breit-Wheeler reaction (E.3.2) for high-energy multiple photon collisions becomes feasible.

The probability of pair production by the processes (E.3.1) and (E.3.2) is given by Eqs. (C.6.9) and (C.6.11) for any values of η in Sec. C.6. In high-frequency and weak-field limit $\eta \ll 1$, the probability $\mathcal{P}_{e\gamma}$ (C.6.9) and $\mathcal{P}_{\gamma\gamma}$ (C.6.11) for fairly small n are proportional to η^{2n} , i.e.

$$\mathcal{P}_{e\gamma} \propto \eta^{2n}, \quad \mathcal{P}_{\gamma\gamma} \propto \eta^{2n} \quad (\text{E.3.7})$$

(see Eqs. (E.2.9), (E.2.12)). This corresponds to the anti-adiabatic, perturbative multi-photon production mechanism (E.2.9), (E.2.12) for ($\eta \ll 1$). In low-frequency and strong field limit $\eta \gg 1$, it essentially refers to process in a constant and uniform field where \mathbf{E} and \mathbf{B} are orthogonal and equal in magnitude. This corresponds the adiabatic limit of a slowly varying electromagnetic field discussed in Sec. E.2.1.

For $n \geq 5$ laser photons of energy 2.35eV colliding with a photon of energy 29 GeV, the process of Breit-Wheeler pair production becomes energetically accessible. In Refs. Bula et al. (1996); Burke et al. (1997); Bamber et al. (1999), it is reported that nonlinear Compton scattering (E.3.1) and Breit-Wheeler electron-positron pair production (E.3.2) have been observed in the collision of 46.6 GeV and 49.1 GeV electrons of the Final Focus Test Beam at SLAC with terawatt pulse of 1053 nm (1.18 eV) and 527 nm (2.35 eV) wavelengths from a Nd:glass laser. The rate of pair production, i.e., R_{e+} of positrons/(laser shot) is measured in terms of the parameter η ($\eta \ll 1$), as shown in Fig. E.3, where line is a power law fit to the data and gives Burke et al. (1997),

$$R_{e+} \propto \eta^{2n}, \quad \text{with } n = 5.1 \pm 0.2(\text{stat})_{-0.8}^{+0.5}(\text{syst}). \quad (\text{E.3.8})$$

These experimental results are found to be in agreement with theoretical predictions (E.3.7), i.e., (C.6.9), (C.6.11) for small η ; as well as with (E.2.12) and (E.2.9) for $\omega \rightarrow \gamma\omega$ in the frame of reference where the electron beam is at rest. This shows that the pair production of Breit-Wheeler type by the anti-adiabatic, perturbative multi-photon production mechanism, described by Eqs. (C.6.9), (C.6.11) or (E.2.9), (E.2.12) for small $\eta \ll 1$, has been experimentally confirmed. However, one has not yet experimentally observed the pair production by the adiabatic, non-perturbative tunneling mechanism, described by Eqs. (C.6.9), (C.6.11) or (E.2.9), (E.2.12) for large $\eta \gg 1$, i.e. for static and constant electromagnetic fields. Nevertheless, pair production probabilities Eqs. (E.2.6), (E.2.12) and Eqs. (C.6.9), (C.6.11) interpolates between both

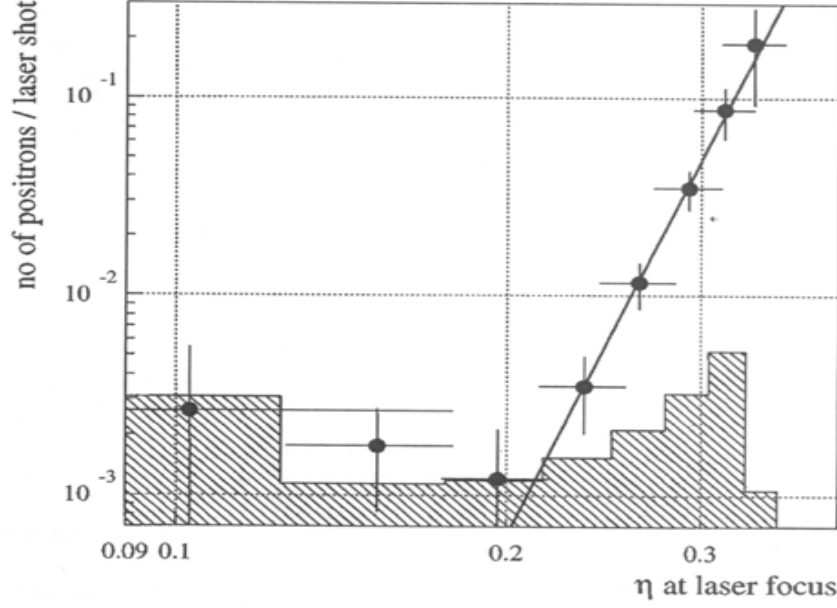


Figure E.3.: Dependence of the positron rate per laser shot on the laser field-strength parameter η . The line shows a power law fit to the data. The shaded distribution is the 95% confidence limit on the residual background from showers of lost beam particles after subtracting the laser-off positron rate. This figure is reproduced from Fig. 4 in Ref. Burke et al. (1997)

$\eta \ll 1$ and $\eta \gg 1$ regimes. Based on such analyticity of these probability functions in terms of the laser intensity parameter η , we expect the pair production to be observed in $\eta \gg 1$ regime.

E.3.2. Pair production viewed in the rest frame of electron beam

In the frame of reference where the electron beam is at rest, one can discuss Melissinos (1999) pair production in the processes (E.3.1) and (E.3.2) by using pair-production rate Eqs. (E.2.6), (E.2.9), (E.2.12) in Sec. E.2 for X-ray laser case. In the experiment of colliding 46.6 GeV electron beam with 2.35 eV (527 nm) laser wave, the field strength in the laboratory is $E_{\text{lab}} \simeq 6 \cdot 10^{10} \text{ V/cm}$ and intensity $I \simeq 10^{19} \text{ W/cm}^2$ for $\eta = 1$ Burke et al. (1997). The Lorentz gamma factor of the electron beam $\gamma = \mathcal{E}_e / m_e c^2 \simeq 9.32 \cdot 10^4$ for $\mathcal{E}_e \simeq 46.6 \text{ GeV}$. In the rest frame of the electron beam, the electric field is given by

$$\mathbf{E}_{\text{rest}} = \gamma(\mathbf{E}_{\text{lab}} + \mathbf{v} \times \mathbf{B}_{\text{lab}}) = \gamma \mathbf{E}_{\text{lab}}(1 + |\mathbf{v}|) \simeq 2\gamma \mathbf{E}_{\text{lab}} \quad (\text{E.3.9})$$

where laser's electromagnetic fields $\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{B} = 0$, $|\mathbf{E}| = |\mathbf{B}|$, $\mathbf{B} \times \hat{\mathbf{k}} = \mathbf{E}$, and laser's wave-vector $\hat{\mathbf{k}} = -\hat{\mathbf{v}}$, thus one has

$$E_{\text{rest}} \simeq 2\gamma E_{\text{lab}} \simeq 2 \cdot 10^5 E_{\text{lab}} \sim 0.86 E_c. \quad (\text{E.3.10})$$

The field of 2.35eV laser wave is well-defined coherent wave field with wavelength $\lambda_{\text{lab}} = 5.27 \cdot 10^{-5} \text{cm}$ and frequency $\omega_{\text{lab}} = 3.57 \cdot 10^{15} / \text{sec}$ (the period $\Delta t_{\text{lab}} = 2\pi/\omega = 1.76 \cdot 10^{-15} \text{sec}$). In the rest frame of electron beam, $\lambda_{\text{rest}} = \gamma \lambda_{\text{lab}} = 4.91 \text{cm}$ and $\Delta t_{\text{rest}} = \Delta t_{\text{lab}}/\gamma = 1.9 \cdot 10^{-20} \text{sec}$. Comparing these wavelength and frequency of laser wave field with the spatial length $\hbar/m_e c = 3.86 \cdot 10^{-11} \text{cm}$ and time scale $\hbar/m_e c^2 = 1.29 \cdot 10^{-21} \text{sec}$ of spontaneous pair-production in vacuum, we are allowed to apply the homogenous and adiabatic approximation discussed in Sec. E.5.5, and use the rate of pair production (E.2.6), (E.2.9), (E.2.12) in Sec. E.2 for X-ray laser case.

E.4. The Breit-Wheeler cutoff in high-energy γ -rays

Having determined the theoretical basis as well as attempts to verify experimentally the Breit-Wheeler formula we turn in Sec. E.4 to a most important application of the Breit-Wheeler process in the framework of cosmology. As pointed out by Nikishov Nikishov (1961) the existence of background photons in cosmology puts a stringent cutoff on the maximum trajectory of the high energy photons in cosmology.

The Breit-Wheeler process for the photon-photon pair production is one of most relevant elementary processes in high energy astrophysics. In addition to the importance of this process in dense radiation fields of compact objects Bonometto and Rees (1971), the essential role of this process in the context of intergalactic absorption of high-energy γ -rays was first pointed out by Nikishov Nikishov (1961); Gould and Schröder (1967). The spectra of TeV radiation observed from distant ($d > 100 \text{Mpc}$) extragalactic objects suffer essential deformation during the passage through the intergalactic medium, caused by energy-dependent absorption of primary γ -rays at interactions with the diffuse extragalactic background radiation, for the optical depth $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}$ most likely significantly exceeding one Gould and Schröder (1967); Stecker et al. (1992); Vassiliev (2000); Coppi and Aharonian (1999). A relevant broad-band information about the cosmic background radiation (CBR) is important for the interpretation of the observed high-energy γ spectra Aharonian (2000); Kneiske et al. (2002); Dwek and Krennrich (2005); Aharonian et al. (2006). For details, readers are referred to Refs. Hauser and Dwek (2001); Aharonian (2003). In this section, we are particularly interested in such absorption effect of high-energy γ -ray, originated from cosmological sources, interacting with the Cosmic Microwave Background (CMB) photons. Fazio and Stecker Fazio

and Stecker (1970); Stecker et al. (1977) were the first who calculated the cutoff energy versus redshift for cosmological γ -rays. This calculation was applied to further study of the optical depth of the Universe to high-energy γ -rays MacMinn and Primack (1996); Kneiske et al. (2004); Stecker et al. (2006). With the Fermi telescope, such study turns out to be important to understand the spectrum of high-energy γ -ray originated from GRBs' sources at cosmological distance, we therefore offer the details of theoretical analysis as follow Ruffini et al. (2008).

We study the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2) to the case that high-energy GRB photons ω_1 , originated from GRBs sources at cosmological distance z , on their way traveling to us, collide with CMB photons ω_2 in the rest frame of CMB photons, leading to electron-positron pair production. We calculate the opacity and mean free-path of these high-energy GRB photons, find the energy-range of absorption as a function of the cosmological red-shift z .

In general, a high-energy GRB photon with a give energy ω_1 , collides with background photons in all possible energies ω_2 . We assume that i -type background photons have the spectrum distribution $f_i(\omega_2)$, the opacity is then given by

$$\tau_{\gamma\gamma}^i(\omega_1, z) = \int_0^z \frac{dz'}{H(z')} \int_{m_e^2 c^4 / \omega_1}^{\infty} \frac{\omega_2^2 d\omega_2}{\pi^2} f_i(\omega_2) \sigma_{\gamma\gamma} \left(\frac{\omega_1 \omega_2}{m_e^2 c^4} \right), \quad (\text{E.4.1})$$

where $m_e^2 c^4 / \omega_1$ is the energy-threshold (A.2.8) above which the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2) can occur and the cross-section $\sigma_{\gamma\gamma}$ is given by Eqs. (A.2.9); $H(z)$ is the Hubble function, obeyed the Friedmann equation

$$H(z) = H_0 [\Omega_M (z+1)^3 + \Omega_\Lambda]^{1/2}. \quad (\text{E.4.2})$$

We will assume $\Omega_M \simeq 0.3$ and $\Omega_\Lambda \simeq 0.7$ and $H_0 = 75 \text{ Km/s/Mpc}$. The total opacity is then given by

$$\tau_{\gamma\gamma}^{\text{total}}(\omega_1, z) = \sum_i \tau_{\gamma\gamma}^i(\omega_1, z), \quad (\text{E.4.3})$$

which the sum is over all types of photon backgrounds in the Universe.

In the case of CMB photons the distribution is black-body one $f_{\text{CMB}}(\omega_2/T) = 1/(e^{\omega_2/T} - 1)$ with the CMB temperature T , the opacity is given by

$$\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1, z) = \int_0^z \frac{dz'}{H(z')} \int_{m_e^2 c^4 / \omega_1}^{\infty} \frac{d\omega_2}{\pi^2} \frac{\omega_2^2}{e^{\omega_2/T} - 1} \sigma_{\gamma\gamma} \left(\frac{\omega_1 \omega_2}{m_e^2 c^4} \right), \quad (\text{E.4.4})$$

where the Boltzmann constant $k_B = 1$. To simply Eq. (E.4.4), we set $x = \frac{\omega_1 \omega_2}{m_e^2 c^4}$. In terms of CMB temperature and GRB-photons energy at the present time,

$$T = (z+1)T^0; \quad \omega_{1,2} = (z+1)\omega_{1,2}^0, \quad (\text{E.4.5})$$

we obtain,

$$\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) = \frac{1}{R_0} \int_0^z \frac{dz'}{H(z') (z+1)^3} \left(\frac{m_e^2 c^4}{\omega_1^0} \right)^3 \int_1^\infty \frac{dx}{\pi^2 \exp(x/\theta) - 1} \sigma_{\gamma\gamma}(x), \quad (\text{E.4.6})$$

where

$$\theta = x^0(z+1)^2; \quad x^0 = \frac{\omega_1^0 T^0}{m_e^2 c^4}, \quad (\text{E.4.7})$$

and x^0 is the energy ω_1^0 in unit of $m_e c^2 (m_e c^2 / T^0) = 1.11 \cdot 10^{15} \text{eV}$.

The $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) = 1$ gives the relationship $\omega_1^0 = \omega_1^0(z)$ that separates the optically thick $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) > 1$ and optically thin $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) < 1$ regimes in the $\omega_1^0 - z$ plane.

The integral (E.4.6) is evaluated numerically and the result is presented in Fig. E.4. It clearly shows the following properties:

1. for the redshift z smaller than a critical value $z_c \simeq 0.1$ ($z < z_c$), the CMB is transparent to GRB photons with arbitrary energy, this indicates a minimal mean-free path of GRB photons;
2. for the redshift z larger than the value ($z > z_c$), there are two branches of solutions for $\tau_{\gamma\gamma}(\omega_1^0, z) = 1$, respectively corresponding to the different energy-dependence of the cross-section (A.2.9): the cross-section $\sigma_{\gamma\gamma}(x)$ increases with the center of mass energy $x = \omega_1 \omega_2^2 / (m_e c^2)^2$ from the energy-threshold $x = 1$ to $x \simeq 1.97$, and decreases (A.2.10) from $x \simeq 1.97$ to $x \rightarrow \infty$. The energy of the CMB photon corresponding to the critical redshift $z \simeq 0.1$, ω_1^0 is $\simeq 1.15 \cdot 10^{15} \text{eV}$ which separates two branches of the solution. The position of this point in Fig. E.4 is determined by the maximal cross-section at $x \simeq 1.97$. Due to these existence of these two solutions for a given redshift z , GRB photons having energies in the grey region of Fig. E.4 cannot reach the observer, while photons from the white region of Fig. E.4 are observable.
3. above the critical redshift z_c low-energy GRB photons can reach due to their energies are below the energetic threshold for the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2). In addition, large-energy GRB photons are also observable due to the fact that the cross-section of Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2) decreases with increasing energy of photons. For large redshifts $z \sim 10^3$, the Universe is opaque and we disregard this regime.

Due to the fact that there are other radiation backgrounds contributing into (E.4.3), the background of CMB photons gives the lower limit for opacity for GRB photons with respect to the Breit-Wheeler process (A.0.2). Finally, we point out that the small-energy solution for large redshift in Fig. (E.4) agrees with the one found by Fazio and Stecker Fazio and Stecker (1970); Stecker et al. (1977).

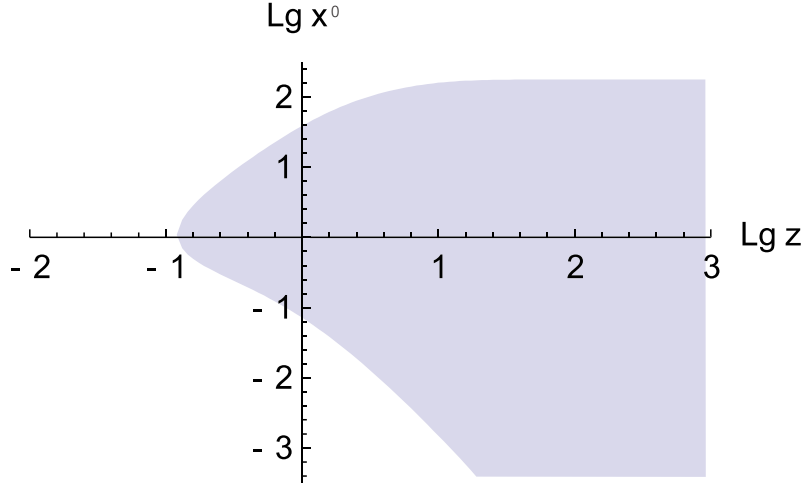


Figure E.4.: This is a Log-Log plot for GRB photon energy x^0 vs redshift z . The grey region represents optically thick case, while the white one is for optically thin case. The boundary between the two is the two-branch solution of Eq. E.4.6 for $\tau_{\gamma\gamma} = 1$. There is a critical redshift $z_c \simeq 0.1$ for GRB photons with arbitrary energy, which can reach the observer. The value of the GRB photon energy corresponding to this critical redshift is $\omega_1^0 \simeq 1.11 \cdot 10^{15} \text{eV}$.

E.5. Theory of pair production in Coulomb potential

By far the major attention to build a critical electric field has occurred in the physics of heavy nuclei and in heavy ion collisions. We recall in the following some of the basic ideas, calculations, as well as experimental attempts to obtain the pair creation process in nuclear physics.

E.5.1. The $Z = 137$ catastrophe

Soon after the Dirac equation for a relativistic electron was discovered Dirac (1928, 1947), Gordon Gordon (1928a,b) (for all $Z < 137$) and Darwin Darwin (1928) (for $Z = 1$) found its solution in the point-like Coulomb potential $V(r) = -Z\alpha/r$, $0 < r < \infty$. Solving the differential equations for the Dirac wave function, they obtained the well-known Sommerfeld's formula Sommerfeld (1916) for the energy-spectrum,

$$\mathcal{E}(n, j) = m_e c^2 \left[1 + \left(\frac{Z\alpha}{n - |K| + (K^2 - Z^2\alpha^2)^{1/2}} \right)^2 \right]^{-1/2}. \quad (\text{E.5.1})$$

Here the principle quantum number $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ and

$$K = \begin{cases} -(j + 1/2) = -(l + 1), & \text{if } j = l + \frac{1}{2}, \quad l \geq 0 \\ (j + 1/2) = l, & \text{if } j = l - \frac{1}{2}, \quad l \geq 1 \end{cases} \quad (\text{E.5.2})$$

where $l = 0, 1, 2, \dots$ is the orbital angular momentum corresponding to the upper component of Dirac bi-spinor, j is the total angular momentum, and the states with $K = \mp 1, \mp 2, \mp 3, \dots, \mp(n - 1)$ are doubly degenerate, while the state $K = -n$ is a singlet Gordon (1928a,b); Darwin (1928). The integer values n and K label bound states whose energies are $\mathcal{E}(n, j) \in (0, m_e c^2)$. For the example, in the case of the lowest energy states, one has

$$\mathcal{E}(1S_{\frac{1}{2}}) = m_e c^2 \sqrt{1 - (Z\alpha)^2}, \quad (\text{E.5.3})$$

$$\mathcal{E}(2S_{\frac{1}{2}}) = \mathcal{E}(2P_{\frac{1}{2}}) = m_e c^2 \sqrt{\frac{1 + \sqrt{1 - (Z\alpha)^2}}{2}}, \quad (\text{E.5.4})$$

$$\mathcal{E}(2P_{\frac{3}{2}}) = m_e c^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{1}{4}(Z\alpha)^2}. \quad (\text{E.5.5})$$

For all states of the discrete spectrum, the binding energy $m_e c^2 - \mathcal{E}(n, j)$ increases as the nuclear charge Z increases, as shown in Fig. E.5. When $Z = 137$, $\mathcal{E}(1S_{1/2}) = 0$, $\mathcal{E}(2S_{1/2}) = \mathcal{E}(2P_{1/2}) = (m_e c^2)/\sqrt{2}$ and $\mathcal{E}(2S_{3/2}) = m_e c^2 \sqrt{3}/2$.

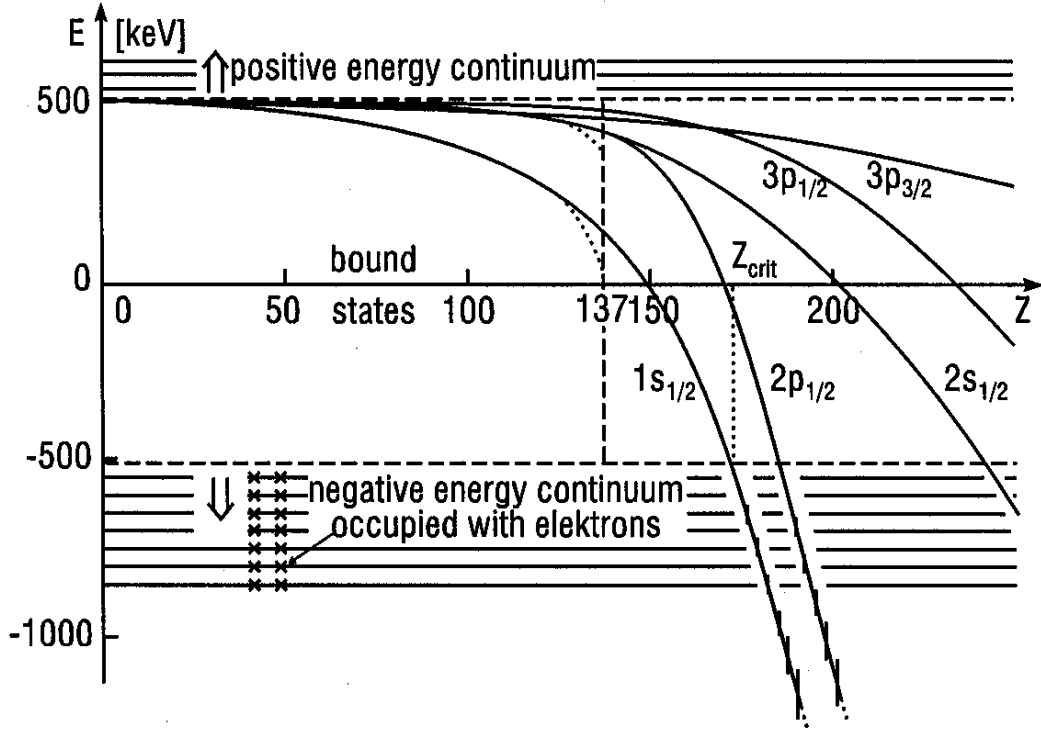


Figure E.5.: Atomic binding energies as function of nuclear charge Z . This figure is reproduced from Fig. 1 in Ref. Greiner and Reinhardt (1999).

Gordon noticed in his pioneer paper Gordon (1928a,b) that no regular solutions with $n = 1, j = 1/2, l = 0$, and $K = -1$ (the $1s_{1/2}$ ground state) are found beyond $Z = 137$. This phenomenon is the so-called “ $Z = 137$ catastrophe” and it is associated with the assumption that the nucleus is point-like in calculating the electronic energy-spectrum.

In fact, it was shown since the pioneering work of Pomeranchuk Pomeranchuk and Smorodinskii (1945) that in nature there cannot be a point-like charged object with effective coupling constant $Z\alpha > 1$ since the entire electron shell will collapse to the center.

E.5.2. Semi-Classical description

In order to have further understanding of this phenomenon, we study it in the semi-classical scenario. Setting the origin of spherical coordinates (r, θ, ϕ) at the point-like charge, we introduce the vector potential $A_\mu = (\mathbf{A}, A_0)$, where $\mathbf{A} = 0$ and A_0 is the Coulomb potential. The motion of a relativistic “electron” (scalar particle) with mass m and charge e is described by its radial

momentum p_r , angular momenta p_ϕ and the Hamiltonian,

$$H_{\pm} = \pm m_e c^2 \sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{p_r}{m_e c}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{p_\phi}{m_e c r}\right)^2} - V(r), \quad (\text{E.5.6})$$

where the potential energy $V(r) = eA_0$, and \pm corresponds for positive and negative solutions. The states corresponding to negative energy solutions are fully occupied. The angular momentum p_ϕ is conserved, for the Hamiltonian is spherically symmetric. For a given angular momentum p_ϕ , the Hamiltonian (E.5.6) describes electron's radial motion in the following the effective potential

$$E_{\pm} = \pm m_e c^2 \sqrt{1 + \left(\frac{p_\phi}{m_e c r}\right)^2} - V(r). \quad (\text{E.5.7})$$

The Coulomb potential energy $V(r)$ is given by

$$V(r) = \frac{Ze^2}{r}. \quad (\text{E.5.8})$$

In the classical scenario, given different values of angular momenta p_ϕ , the stable circulating orbits (states) are determined by the minimum of the effective potential $E_+(r)$ (E.5.7). Using $dE_+(r)/dr = 0$, we obtain the stable orbit location at the radius R_L in the unit of the Compton length λ_C ,

$$R_L(p_\phi) = Z\alpha\lambda_C \sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{Z\alpha}{p_\phi/\hbar}\right)^2}, \quad (\text{E.5.9})$$

where $\alpha = e^2/\hbar c$ and $p_\phi > Z\alpha$. Substituting Eq. (E.5.9) into Eq. (E.5.7), we find the energy of the electron at each stable orbit,

$$\mathcal{E}(p_\phi) \equiv \min(E_+) = m_e c^2 \sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{Z\alpha}{p_\phi/\hbar}\right)^2}. \quad (\text{E.5.10})$$

The last stable orbits (minimal energy) are given by

$$p_\phi \rightarrow Z\alpha\hbar + 0^+, \quad R_L(p_\phi) \rightarrow 0^+, \quad \mathcal{E}(p_\phi) \rightarrow 0^+. \quad (\text{E.5.11})$$

For stable orbits for $p_\phi/\hbar \gg 1$, the radii $R_L/\lambda_C \gg 1$ and energies $\mathcal{E} \rightarrow m_e c^2 + 0^-$; electrons in these orbits are critically bound since their banding energy goes to zero. As the energy-spectrum (E.5.1), see Eqs. (E.5.3, E.5.4, E.5.5), Eq. (E.5.10) shows, only positive or null energy solutions (states) exist in the presence of a point-like nucleus.

In the semi-classical scenario, the discrete values of angular momentum p_ϕ

are selected by the Bohr-Sommerfeld quantization rule

$$\int p_\phi d\phi \simeq h(l + \frac{1}{2}), \quad \Rightarrow \quad p_\phi(l) \simeq \hbar(l + \frac{1}{2}), \quad l = 0, 1, 2, 3, \dots \quad (\text{E.5.12})$$

describing the semi-classical states of radius and energy

$$R_L(l) \simeq (Z\alpha)^{-1} \lambda_C \sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{2Z\alpha}{2l+1} \right)^2}, \quad (\text{E.5.13})$$

$$\mathcal{E}(l) \simeq m_e c^2 \sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{2Z\alpha}{2l+1} \right)^2}. \quad (\text{E.5.14})$$

Other values of angular momentum p_ϕ , radius R_L and energy \mathcal{E} given by Eqs. (E.5.9, E.5.10) in the classical scenario are not allowed. When these semi-classical states are not occupied as required by the

Pauli Principle, the transition from one state to another with different discrete values (l_1, l_2 and $\Delta l = l_2 - l_1 = \pm 1$) is made by emission or absorption of a spin-1 (\hbar) photon. Following the energy and angular-momentum conservations, photon emitted or absorbed in the transition have angular momenta $p_\phi(l_2) - p_\phi(l_1) = \hbar(l_2 - l_1) = \pm \hbar$ and energy $\mathcal{E}(l_2) - \mathcal{E}(l_1)$. As required by the Heisenberg indeterminacy principle $\Delta\phi \Delta p_\phi \simeq 4\pi p_\phi(l) \gtrsim \hbar$, the absolute ground state for minimal energy and angular momentum is given by the $l = 0$ state, $p_\phi \sim \hbar/2$, $R_L \sim Z\alpha \lambda_C \sqrt{1 - (2Z\alpha)^2} > 0$ and $\mathcal{E} \sim m_e c^2 \sqrt{1 - (2Z\alpha)^2} > 0$ for $Z\alpha \leq 1/2$. Thus the stability of all semi-classical states $l > 0$ is guaranteed by the Pauli principle. In contrast for $Z\alpha > 1/2$, there is not an absolute ground state in the semi-classical scenario.

We see now how the lowest energy states are selected by the quantization rule in the semi-classical scenario out of the last stable orbits (E.5.11) in the classical scenario. For the case of $Z\alpha \leq 1/2$, equating Eq. (E.5.11) to $p_\phi = \hbar(l + 1/2)$ (E.5.12), we find the selected state $l = 0$ is only possible solution so that the ground state $l = 0$ in the semi-classical scenario corresponds to the last stable orbits (E.5.11) in the classical scenario. On the other hand for the case $Z\alpha > 1/2$, equating Eq. (E.5.11) to $p_\phi = \hbar(l + 1/2)$ (E.5.12), we find the selected state $l = \tilde{l} \equiv (Z\alpha - 1)/2 > 0$ in the semi-classical scenario corresponds to the last stable orbits (E.5.11) in the classical scenario. This state $l = \tilde{l} > 0$ is not protected by the Heisenberg indeterminacy principle from quantum-mechanically decaying in \hbar -steps to the states with lower angular momentum and energy (correspondingly smaller radius R_L (E.5.13)) via photon emissions. This clearly shows that the “ $Z = 137$ -catastrophe” corresponds to $R_L \rightarrow 0$, falling to the center of the Coulomb potential and all semi-classical states (l) are unstable.

E.5.3. The critical value of the nuclear charge $Z_{cr} = 173$

A very different situation is encountered when considering the fact the nucleus is not point-like and has an extended charge distribution Pomeranchuk and Smorodinskii (1945); Case (1950); Werner and Wheeler (1958); Voronkov and Kolesnikov (1961); Popov (1970a,b, 1971b,a); Zeldovich and Popov (1971). When doing so, the $Z = 137$ catastrophe disappears and the energy-levels $\mathcal{E}(n, j)$ of the bound states $1S$, $2P$ and $2S$, \dots smoothly continue to drop toward the negative energy continuum as Z increases to values larger than 137, as shown in Fig. E.5. The reason is that the finite size R of the nucleus charge distribution provides a cutoff for the boundary condition at the origin $r \rightarrow 0$ and the energy-levels $\mathcal{E}(n, j)$ of the Dirac equation are shifted due to this cutoff. In order to determine the critical value Z_{cr} when the negative energy continuum ($\mathcal{E} < -m_e c^2$) is encountered (see Fig. E.5), Zeldovich and Popov (1970a,b, 1971b,a); Zeldovich and Popov (1971) solved the Dirac equation corresponding to a nucleus of finite extended charge distribution, i.e., the Coulomb potential is modified as

$$V(r) = \begin{cases} -\frac{Ze^2}{r}, & r > R, \\ -\frac{Ze^2}{R} f\left(\frac{r}{R}\right), & r < R, \end{cases} \quad (\text{E.5.15})$$

where $R \sim 10^{-12} \text{cm}$ is the size of the nucleus. The form of the cutoff function $f(x)$ depends on the distribution of the electric charge over the volume of the nucleus ($x = r/R, 0 < x < 1$, with $f(1) = 1$). Thus, $f(x) = (3 - x^2)/2$ corresponds to a constant volume density of charge.

Solving the Dirac equation with the modified Coulomb potential (E.5.15) and calculating the corresponding perturbative shift $\Delta\mathcal{E}_R$ of the lowest energy level (E.5.3) Popov (1970a); Zeldovich and Popov (1971)

$$\Delta\mathcal{E}_R = m_e c^2 \frac{(\xi)^2 (2\xi e^{-\Lambda})^{2\gamma_z}}{\gamma_z(1 + 2\gamma_z)} \left[1 - 2\gamma_z \int_0^1 f(x) x^{2\gamma_z} dx \right], \quad (\text{E.5.16})$$

where $\xi = Z\alpha$, $\gamma_z = \sqrt{1 - \xi^2}$ and $\Lambda = \ln(\hbar/m_e c R) \gg 1$ is a logarithmic parameter in the problem under consideration. The asymptotic expressions for the $1S_{1/2}$ energy that were obtained are Popov (1971a); Zeldovich and Popov (1971)

$$\mathcal{E}(1S_{1/2}) = m_e c^2 \begin{cases} \sqrt{1 - \xi^2} \coth(\Lambda \sqrt{1 - \xi^2}), & 0 < \xi < 1, \\ \Lambda^{-1}, & \xi = 1, \\ \sqrt{\xi^2 - 1} \cot(\Lambda \sqrt{\xi^2 - 1}), & \xi > 1. \end{cases} \quad (\text{E.5.17})$$

As a result, the “ $Z = 137$ catastrophe” in Eq. (E.5.1) disappears and $\mathcal{E}(1S_{1/2}) =$

0 gives

$$\xi_0 = 1 + \frac{\pi^2}{8\Lambda} + \mathcal{O}(\Lambda^{-4}); \quad (\text{E.5.18})$$

the state $1S_{1/2}$ energy continuously goes down to the negative energy continuum since $Z\alpha > 1$, and $\mathcal{E}(1S_{1/2}) = -1$ gives

$$\xi_{cr} = 1 + \frac{\pi^2}{2\Lambda(\Lambda + 2)} + \mathcal{O}(\Lambda^{-4}) \quad (\text{E.5.19})$$

as shown in Fig. E.5. In Ref. Popov (1970a); Zeldovich and Popov (1971) Popov and Zeldovich found that the critical value $\xi_c^{(n)} = Z_c\alpha$ for the energy-levels $nS_{1/2}$ and $nP_{1/2}$ to reach the negative energy continuum is equal to

$$\xi_c^{(n)} = 1 + \frac{n^2\pi^2}{2\Lambda^2} + \mathcal{O}(\Lambda^{-3}). \quad (\text{E.5.20})$$

The critical value increases rapidly with increasing n . As a result, it is found that $Z_{cr} \simeq 173$ is a critical value at which the lowest energy-level of the bound state $1S_{1/2}$ encounters the negative energy continuum, while other bound states encounter the negative energy continuum at $Z_{cr} > 173$ (see also Ref. Werner and Wheeler (1958) for a numerical estimation of the same spectrum). The change in the vacuum polarization near a high- Z nucleus arising from the finite extent of the nuclear charge density was computed in Brown et al. (1975a,b,c) with all calculations done analytically, and to all orders in $Z\alpha$. Note that two nuclei with charges Z_1 and Z_2 respectively, if $Z_1 > Z_2$ and K -shell of the Z_1 -nucleus is empty, then Z_2 may be neutral atom. In this case two nuclei make a quasi molecular state for which the ground term ($1s\sigma$) is unoccupied by electrons: so spontaneous production of positrons is also possible Gershtein and Popov (1973); Popov (1973b). We refer the readers to Ref. Popov (1970a,b, 1971b,a); Zeldovich and Popov (1971); Popov (2001a) for mathematical and numerical details.

When $Z > Z_{cr} = 173$, the lowest energy-level of the bound state $1S_{1/2}$ enters the negative energy continuum. Its energy-level can be estimated as follows

$$\mathcal{E}(1S_{1/2}) = m_e c^2 - \frac{Z\alpha}{\bar{r}} < -m_e c^2, \quad (\text{E.5.21})$$

where \bar{r} is the average radius of the $1S_{1/2}$ state's orbit, and the binding energy of this state satisfies $Z\alpha/\bar{r} > 2m_e c^2$. If this bound state is unoccupied, the bare nucleus gains a binding energy $Z\alpha/\bar{r}$ larger than $2m_e c^2$, and becomes unstable against the production of an electron-positron pair. Assuming this pair-production occurs around the radius \bar{r} , we have energies for the electron

(ϵ_-) and positron (ϵ_+) given by

$$\epsilon_- = \sqrt{|c\mathbf{p}_-|^2 + m_e^2 c^4} - \frac{Z\alpha}{\bar{r}}; \quad \epsilon_+ = \sqrt{|c\mathbf{p}_+|^2 + m_e^2 c^4} + \frac{Z\alpha}{\bar{r}}, \quad (\text{E.5.22})$$

where \mathbf{p}_\pm are electron and positron momenta, and $\mathbf{p}_- = -\mathbf{p}_+$. The total energy required for the production of a pair is

$$\epsilon_{-+} = \epsilon_- + \epsilon_+ = 2\sqrt{|c\mathbf{p}_-|^2 + m_e^2 c^4}, \quad (\text{E.5.23})$$

which is independent of the potential $V(\bar{r})$. The potential energies $\pm eV(\bar{r})$ of the electron and positron cancel each other out and do not contribute to the total energy (E.5.23) required for pair production. This energy (E.5.23) is acquired from the binding energy ($Z\alpha/\bar{r} > 2m_e c^2$) by the electron filling into the bound state $1S_{1/2}$. A part of the binding energy becomes the kinetic energy of positron that goes out. This is analogous to the familiar case that a proton ($Z = 1$) catches an electron into the ground state $1S_{1/2}$, and a photon is emitted with the energy not less than 13.6 eV. In the same way, more electron-positron pairs are produced, when $Z \gg Z_{cr} = 173$ the energy-levels of the next bound states $2P_{1/2}, 2S_{3/2}, \dots$ enter the negative energy continuum, provided these bound states of the bare nucleus are unoccupied.

E.5.4. Positron production

Gershtein and Zeldovich Gershtein and Zeldovich (1969); Gershtein and Zeldovich (1969) proposed that when $Z > Z_{cr}$ the bare nucleus produces spontaneously pairs of electrons and positrons: the two positrons¹ go off to infinity and the effective charge of the bare nucleus decreases by two electrons, which corresponds exactly to filling the K-shell². A more detailed investigation was made for the solution of the Dirac equation at $Z \sim Z_{cr}$, when the lowest electron level $1S_{1/2}$ merges with the negative energy continuum, in Refs. Popov (1970a,b, 1971b,a,d). It was there further clarified the situation, showing that at $Z \gtrsim Z_{cr}$, an imaginary resonance energy of Dirac equation appears,

$$\epsilon = \epsilon_0 - i \frac{\Gamma_{\text{nucl}}}{2}, \quad (\text{E.5.24})$$

¹Hyperfine structure of $1S_{1/2}$ state: single and triplet.

²The supposition was made in Ref. Gershtein and Zeldovich (1969); Gershtein and Zeldovich (1969) that the electron density of $1S_{1/2}$ state, as well as the vacuum polarization density, is delocalized at $Z \rightarrow Z_{cr}$. Further it was proved to be incorrect Popov (1970b, 1971b)-Zeldovich and Popov (1971).

where

$$\epsilon_0 = -m_e - a(Z - Z_{cr}), \quad (\text{E.5.25})$$

$$\Gamma_{\text{nucl}} \sim \theta(Z - Z_{cr}) \exp \left(-b \sqrt{\frac{Z_{cr}}{Z - Z_{cr}}} \right), \quad (\text{E.5.26})$$

and a, b are constants, depending on the cutoff Λ (for example, $b = 1.73$ for $Z = Z_{cr} = 173$ Popov (1970b, 1971b); Zeldovich and Popov (1971)). The energy and momentum of emitted positrons are $|\epsilon_0|$ and $|\mathbf{p}| = \sqrt{|\epsilon_0| - m_e c^2}$.

The kinetic energy of the two positrons at infinity is given by

$$\epsilon_p = |\epsilon_0| - m_e c^2 = a(Z - Z_{cr}) + \dots, \quad (\text{E.5.27})$$

which is proportional to $Z - Z_{cr}$ (so long as $(Z - Z_{cr}) \ll Z_{cr}$) and tends to zero as $Z \rightarrow Z_{cr}$. The pair-production resonance at the energy (E.5.24) is extremely narrow and practically all positrons are emitted with almost same kinetic energy for $Z \sim Z_{cr}$, i.e. nearly mono-energetic spectra (sharp line structure). Apart from a pre-exponential factor, Γ_{nucl} in Eq. (E.5.26) coincides with the probability of positron production, i.e., the penetrability of the Coulomb barrier (see Sec. A.4). The related problems of vacuum charge density due to electrons filling into the K-shell and charge renormalization due to the change of wave function of electron states are discussed in Refs. Zeldovich and Rabinovich (1960); Shnol (1971); Baz' et al. (1966); Migdal et al. (1971); Perelomov and Popov (1971). An extensive and detailed review on this theoretical issue can be found in Refs. Zeldovich and Popov (1971); Popov (2001a); Greiner and Reinhardt (2003, 1999).

On the other hand, some theoretical work has been done studying the possibility that pair production, due to bound states encountering the negative energy continuum, is prevented from occurring by higher order processes of quantum field theory, such as charge renormalization, electron self-energy and nonlinearities in electrodynamics and even Dirac field itself Muller (1976); Reinhardt and Greiner (1977); Rafelski et al. (1978a); Brodsky and Mohr (1978); Gyulassy (1975); Rinker and Wilets (1975); Soff et al. (1982). However, these studies show that various effects modify Z_{cr} by a few percent, but have no way to prevent the binding energy from increasing to $2m_e c^2$ as Z increases, without simultaneously contradicting the existing precise experimental data on stable atoms Greenberg and Greiner (1982). Contrary claim Dietz et al. (1993) according to which bound states are repelled by the lower continuum through some kind of self screening appear to be unfounded Greiner and Reinhardt (1999).

It is worth noting that an over critical nucleus ($Z \geq Z_{cr}$) can be formed for example in the collision of two heavy nuclei Voronkov and Kolesnikov (1961); Popov (1971d); Gershtein and Zeldovich (1969); Gershtein and Zel-

dovich (1969); Pieper and Greiner (1969); Müller et al. (1972a,c,b). To observe the emission of positrons originated from pair production occurring near to an overcritical nucleus temporally formed by two nuclei, the following necessary conditions have to be full filled: (i) the atomic number of an over critical nucleus is larger than $Z_{cr} = 173$; (ii) the lifetime of the over critical nucleus must be much longer than the characteristic time ($\hbar/m_e c^2$) of pair production; (iii) the inner shells (K-shell) of the over critical nucleus should be unoccupied.

However, we notice that the condition (ii) is crucial and cannot be fulfilled in heavy ion collisions. In fact, in order to overcome the Coulomb repulsion the ion must have relativistic speed and consequently the characteristic time of approach when the supercritical condition is reached last a time $\Delta t \sim \hbar/(m_\pi c^2)$ which is much smaller than the characteristic time of pair production. There has been up to now various unsuccessful attempts to broaden this time of encounter by 'sticking' phenomena. Similarly, the condition (iii) is not sufficient for pair production, since electrons that occupied outer shells of high energies must undergo a rapid transmission to occupy inner shells of lower energies, which is supposed to be vacant and encountering the negative energy continuum. If such transmission and occupation take place faster than pair production, the pair-production process is blocked. As a consequence, it needs a larger value of $Z > Z_{cr} = 173$ to have stronger electric field for vacant out shells encountering the negative energy continuum (see Eq. (E.5.20)) so that electrons produced in pair productions can occupy outer shells. This makes pair production even less probable to be observed, unless the overcritical charged nucleus is bare, i.e. all shells are vacant.

E.5.5. Homogeneous and adiabatic approximation

There is a certain analogy between positron production by a nucleus with $Z > Z_{cr}$ and pair production in a homogeneous electrostatic field. We note that in a Coulomb potential of a nucleus with $Z = Z_{cr}$ the corresponding electric field $E_{cr} = Z_{cr}|e|/r^2$ is comparable with the critical electric field E_c , (3.2.1), when $r \sim \lambda_C$. However, the condition $E > E_c$ is certainly the necessary condition in order to have the pair creation but not a sufficient one: the spatial extent of the region where $E > E_c$ occurs must be larger than the De Broglie wavelength of the created electron-positron pair. If a pair production takes place, electrons should be bound into the K-shell nucleus and positrons should go off to infinity. This intuitive reasoning builds the connection between the phenomena of pair production in the Coulomb potential at charge $Z > Z_{cr}$ and the one in an external constant electric field which was treated in Sec. E. The exact formula for pair production probability W in an over critical Coulomb potential has not yet been obtained in the framework of QED. We cannot expect a literal coincidence of formulas for the probability W of

pair production in these different cases, since the Schwinger formula (C.4.25) is exactly derived for a homogeneous field, while the Coulomb potential is strongly inhomogeneous at small distances. Some progress in the treatment of this problem is presented in Sec. D.

All the discussions dealing with pair production in an external homogeneous electric field or a Coulomb potential assume that the electric field be static. Without the feedback of the particles created on the field this will clearly lead to a divergence of the number of pairs created. In the real description of the phenomenon at $t \rightarrow -\infty$ we have an initial empty vacuum state. We then have the turned on of an overcritical electric field and ongoing process of pair creation with their feedback on a time on the electric field and a final state at remote future $t \rightarrow +\infty$ with the electron and positron created and the remaining subcritical electric field. To describe this very different regimes a simplified “adiabatic approximation” can be adopted by assuming the existence of a homogeneous field only during a finite time interval $[-\mathcal{T}, \mathcal{T}]$. That time \mathcal{T} should be of course shorter than the feedback time. During that time interval the Schwinger formula (C.4.25) is assumed to be applicable and it is appropriate to remark that the overcritical electric fields are related to very high energy-densities: $E_c^2/2 = 9.53 \cdot 10^{26} \text{ ergs/cm}^3$. In the adiabatic approximation an effective spatial limitation to the electric field is also imposed. Therefore the constant overcritical electric field and the application of the Schwinger formula is limited both in space and time. Progress in this direction has been presented in Ruffini et al. (2007b), see Sec. G.8. A significant amount of pairs is only produced if the finite lifetime of the overcritical electric field is larger than the characteristic time of pair production ($\hbar/m_e c^2$) and the spatial extent of the electric field is larger than the tunneling length a (A.4.6).

We have already discussed in Secs. E.2 and E.3 the experimental status of electron-positron pair creation in X-ray free-electron laser and an electron beam-laser collision, respectively. We now turn in Sec. E.6 to the multiyear attempts in creating electron-positron pairs in heavy-ion collisions.

E.6. Pair production in heavy-ion collisions

E.6.1. A transient super heavy “quasimolecules”

There has been a multiyear effort to observe positrons from pair production associated with the overcritical field of two colliding nuclei, in heavy-ion collisions Popov (1971d); Greenberg and Greiner (1982); Gershtein and Zeldovich (1969); Gershtein and Zeldovich (1969); Müller et al. (1972c,b); Gyulassy (1974). The hope was to use heavy-ion collisions to form transient super heavy “quasimolecules”: a long-lived metastable nuclear complex with $Z > Z_{cr}$. It was expected that the two heavy ions of charges respectively Z_1

and Z_2 with $Z_1 + Z_2 > Z_{cr}$ would reach small inter-nuclear distances well within the electron's orbiting radii. The electrons would not distinguish between the two nuclear centers and they would evolve as if they were bounded by nuclear-"quasimolecules" with nuclear charge $Z_1 + Z_2$. Therefore, it was expected that electrons would evolve quasi statically through a series of well defined nuclear-"quasimolecules" states in the two-center field of the nuclei as the inter-nuclear separation decreases and then increases again.

When heavy-ion collision occurs the two nuclei come into contact and some deep inelastic reaction occurs determining the duration Δt_s of this contact. Such "sticking time" is expected to depend on the nuclei involved in the reaction and on the beam energy. Theoretical attempts have been proposed to study the nuclear aspects of heavy-ion collisions at energies very close to the Coulomb barrier and search for conditions, which would serve as a trigger for prolonged nuclear reaction times, to enhance the amplitude of pair production. The sticking time Δt_s should be larger than $1 \sim 2 \cdot 10^{-21}$ sec Greiner and Reinhardt (1999) in order to have significant pair production. Up to now no success has been achieved in justifying theoretically such a long sticking time. In reality the characteristic sticking time has been found of the order of $\Delta t \sim 10^{-23}$ sec, hundred times shorter than the needed to activate the pair creation process. Moreover, it is recognized that several other dynamical processes can make the existence of a sharp line corresponding to an electron-positron annihilation very unlikely Greiner and Reinhardt (1999); Greenberg and Greiner (1982); Rafelski et al. (1978b); Reinhardt et al. (1981); Graf et al. (1988).

It is worth noting that several other dynamical processes contribute to the production of positrons in undercritical as well as in overcritical collision systems Muller (1976); Reinhardt and Greiner (1977); Rafelski et al. (1978a); Brodsky and Mohr (1978). Due to the time-energy uncertainty relation (collision broadening), the energy-spectrum of such positrons has a rather broad and oscillating structure, considerably different from a sharp line structure that we would expect from pair-production positron emission alone.

E.6.2. Experiments

As remarked above, if the sticking time Δt_s could be prolonged, the probability of pair production in vacuum around the super heavy nucleus would be enhanced. As a consequence, the spectrum of emitted positrons is expected to develop a sharp line structure, indicating the spontaneous vacuum decay caused by the overcritical electric field of a forming super heavy nuclear system with $Z \geq Z_{cr}$. If the sticking time Δt_s is not long enough and the sharp line of pair production positrons has not yet well-developed, in the observed positron spectrum it is difficult to distinguish the pair production positrons from positrons created through other different mechanisms. Pro-

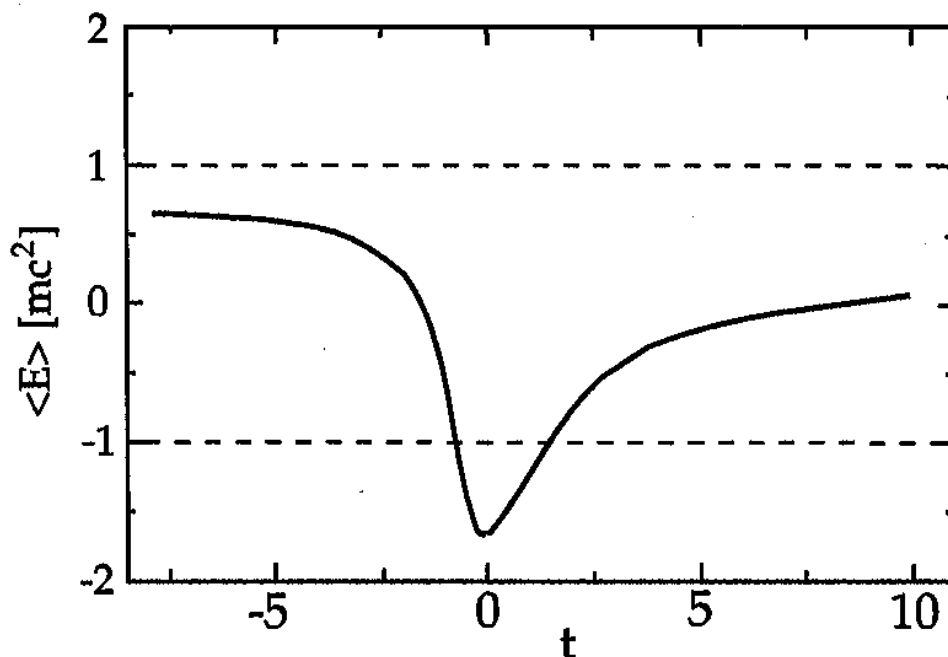


Figure E.6.: Energy expectation values of the $1s\sigma$ state in a U+U collision at 10 GeV/nucleon. The unit of time is $\hbar/m_e c^2$. This figure is reproduced from Fig. 4 in Ref. Greiner and Reinhardt (1999).

longing the “sticking time” and identifying pair production positrons among all other particles Kozhuharov (1982); Vincent et al. (1983) created in the collision process has been an object of a very large experimental campaign in recent years Kienle et al. (1983); Kienle (1981); Greenberg (1980); Backe et al. (1978); Kozhuharov et al. (1979); Müller et al. (1983); Bokemeyer (1983); Backe (1983).

For nearly 20 years the study of atomic excitation processes and in particular of positron creation in heavy-ion collisions has been a major research topic at GSI (Darmstadt) Schweppe et al. (1983); Ganz et al. (1996); Leinberger et al. (1997); Heinz et al. (1998). The Orange and Epos groups at GSI (Darmstadt) discovered narrow line structures (see Fig. E.7) of unexplained origin, first in the single positron energy spectra and later in coincident electron-positron pair emission. Studying more collision systems with a wider range of the combined nuclear charge $Z = Z_1 + Z_2$ they found that narrow line structures were essentially independent of Z . This has ruled out the explanation of a pair-production positron, since the line was expected at the position of the $1s\sigma$ resonance, i.e., at a kinetic energy given by Eq. (E.5.27), which is strongly Z dependent. Attempts to link this positron line to spontaneous pair production have failed. Other attempts to explain this positron line in term of atomic physics and new particle scenario were not successful as well Greiner

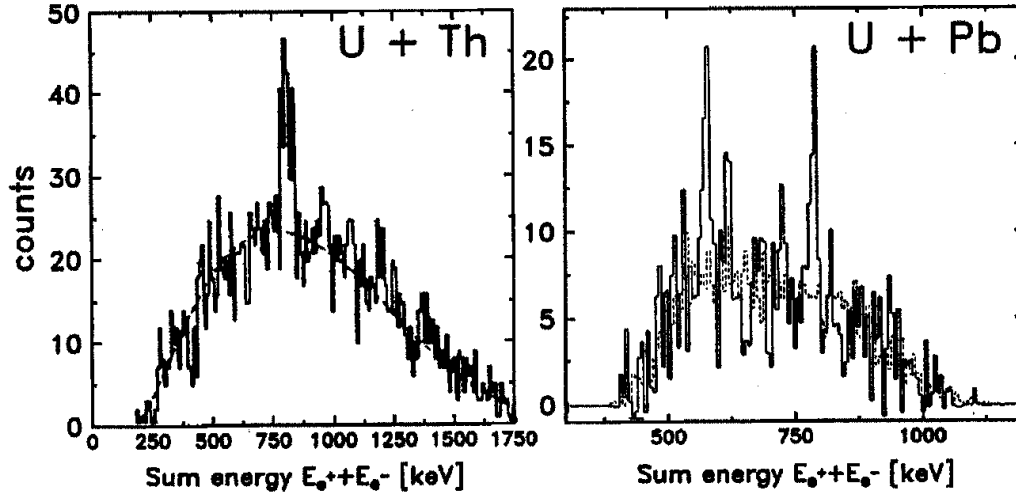


Figure E.7.: Two typical example of coincident electron-positron spectra measured by the Epose group in the system U+Th (left) and by the Orange group in U+Pb collisions (right). When plotted as a function of the total energy of the electron and positron, very narrow line structures were observed. This figure is reproduced from Fig. 7 in Ref. Greiner and Reinhardt (1999).

and Reinhardt (1999).

The anomalous positron line problem has perplexed experimentalists and theorists alike for more than a decade. Moreover, later results obtained by the Apex collaboration at Argonne National Laboratory showed no statistically significant positron line structures Ahmad et al. (1995, 1997). This is in strong contradiction with the former results obtained by the Orange and Epos groups. However, the analysis of Apex data was challenged in the comment by Ref. Cowan and Greenberg (1996); Ahmad et al. (1996) for the Apex measurement would have been less sensitive to extremely narrow positron lines. A new generation of experiments (Apex at Argonne and the new Epos and Orange setups at GSI) with much improved counting statistics has failed to reproduce the earlier results Greiner and Reinhardt (1999).

To overcome the problem posed by the short time scale of pair production (10^{-21} sec), hopes rest on the idea to select collision systems in which a nuclear reaction with sufficient sticking time occurs. Whether such a situation can be realized still is an open question Greiner and Reinhardt (1999). In addition, the anomalous positron line problem and its experimental contradiction overshadow the field of the pair production in heavy ion collisions. In summary, clear experimental signals for electron-positron pair production in heavy ion collisions are still missing Greiner and Reinhardt (1999) at the present time. For more recent information on the pair production in the heavy-ion collisions see Krekora et al. (2005); Zagrebaev et al. (2006); Zagrebaev and Greiner (2007) and for complete references the resource letter

Greiner and Schramm (2008). Having reviewed the situation of electron-positron pair creation by vacuum polarization in Earth-bound experiments we turn now to the corresponding problems in the realm of astrophysics. The obvious case is the one of black holes where the existence of critical field is clearly predicted by the analytic solutions of the Einstein-Maxwell field equations.

F. The extraction of blackholic energy from a black hole by vacuum polarization processes

It is becoming more and more clear that the theoretical description of the gravitational collapse process to a Kerr-Newman black hole, with all the aspects of nuclear physics and electrodynamics involved, is likely the most complex problem in physics and astrophysics. Specific to this report is the opportunity given by the process of gravitational collapse to study for the first time the above mentioned three quantum processes simultaneously at work under ultrarelativistic special and general relativistic regimes. The process of gravitational collapse is characterized by the gravitational timescale $\Delta t_g = GM/c^3 \simeq 5 \cdot 10^{-6} (M/M_\odot)$ sec and the energy involved are of the order of $\Delta E = 10^{54} M/M_\odot$ ergs. This is one of the most energetic and most transient phenomena in physics and astrophysics and needs for its correct description the identification of the basic constitutive processes occurring in a highly time varying regime. Our approach in Chapter F is to proceed with an idealized model which can give us estimates of the basic energetics and some leading features of the real phenomenon. We shall describe: 1) the basic energetic process of an already formed black hole; 2) the vacuum polarization process a la Schwinger of an already formed Kerr-Newman black hole; 3) the basic formula of the dynamics of the gravitational collapse. We shall in particular recover the Tolman-Oppenheimer-Snyder solutions in a more explicit form and give exact analytic solution for the description of the gravitational collapse of charged and uncharged shells. This will allow, among others, to recall the mass formula of the black hole, to clarify the special role of the irreducible mass in that formula, and to have a general derivation of the maximum extractable energy in the process of gravitational collapse. We will as well address some conceptual issues between general relativity and thermodynamics which have been of interest to theoretical physicists in the last forty years. Of course in these brief chapter we will be only recalling some of these essential themes and refer to the literature where in-depth analysis can be found.

We recall here the basic steps leading to the study of the electrodynamics of a Kerr-Newman black hole, indicating the relevant references. In this Chapter we use the system of units $c = G = \hbar = 1$.

F.1. Test particles in Kerr-Newmann geometries

According to the uniqueness theorem for stationary, regular black holes (see Ref. Carter (1999)), the process of gravitational collapse of a core whose mass is larger than the neutron star critical mass Rhoades and Ruffini (1974) will generally lead to a black hole characterized by *all* the three fundamental parameters: the mass-energy M , the angular momentum L , and the charge Q (see Ruffini and Wheeler (1971a)). The creation of critical electric fields and consequent process of pair creation by vacuum polarization are expected to occur in the late phases of gravitational collapse when the gravitational energy of the collapsing core is transformed into an electromagnetic energy and eventually in electron-positron pairs. As of today no process of the gravitational collapse either to a neutron star or to a black hol has reached a satisfactory theoretical understanding. It is a fact that even the theory of a gravitational collapse to a neutron star via a supernova is not able to explain even the ejection of a supernova remnant Mezzacappa (2006). In order to estimate the fundamental energetics of this transient phenomena we recall first the metric of a Kerr-Newman black hole, the role of the reversible and irreversible transformations in reaching the mass formula as well as the role of the positive and negative energy states in a quantum analogue. We will then estimate the energy emission due to vacuum polarization process. As we will see, such a process occurs on characteristic quantum timescale of $t \sim \hbar/(m_e c^2) \sim 10^{-21}$ sec, which is many orders of magnitude shorter than the characteristic gravitational collapse timescale. Of course the astrophysical progenitor of the black hole will be a neutral one, as all the astrophysical systems. Only during the process of the gravitational collapse and for the above mentioned characteristic gravitational timescale a process of charge separation will occur. The positively charged core would give rise to the electrodynamical process approaching asymptotically in time the horizon of a Kerr-Newman black hole.

A generally charged and rotating, black hole has been considered whose curved space-time is described by the Kerr-Newman geometry Newman et al. (1965). In Kerr-Newman coordinates (u, r, θ, ϕ) the line element takes the form,

$$ds^2 = \Sigma d\theta^2 - 2a \sin^2 \theta dr d\phi + 2dr du - 2a \Sigma^{-1} (2Mr - Q^2) \sin^2 \theta d\phi du \\ + \Sigma^{-1} [(r^2 + a^2)^2 - \Delta a^2 \sin^2 \theta] \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2 - [(1 - \Sigma^{-1} (2Mr - Q^2))] du^2 \quad (\text{F.1.1})$$

where $\Delta = r^2 - 2Mr + a^2 + Q^2$ and $\Sigma = r^2 + a^2 \cos^2 \theta$, $a = L/M$ being the angular momentum per unit mass of the black hole. The Reissner-Nordström and Kerr geometries are particular cases for a non-rotating, $a = 0$, and uncharged, $Q = 0$, black holes respectively. The Kerr-Newman space-time has

a horizon at

$$r = r_+ = M + (M^2 - Q^2 - a^2)^{1/2} \quad (\text{F.1.2})$$

where $\Delta = 0$.

The electromagnetic vector potential around the Kerr-Newman black hole is given by Newman et al. (1965)

$$\mathbf{A} = -\Sigma^{-1}Qr(du - a \sin^2 \theta d\phi), \quad (\text{F.1.3})$$

the electromagnetic field tensor is then

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F} = d\mathbf{A} = 2Q\Sigma^{-2}[(r^2 - a^2 \cos^2 \theta)dr \wedge du - 2a^2r \cos \theta \sin \theta d\theta \wedge du \\ - a \sin^2 \theta(r^2 - a^2 \cos^2 \theta)dr \wedge d\phi + 2ar(r^2 + a^2) \cos \theta \sin \theta d\theta \wedge d\phi]. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.1.4})$$

The equation of motion of a test particle of mass m and charge e in the Kerr-Newman geometry reads

$$u^\mu \nabla_\mu u^\nu = (e/m)u^\mu F_\mu{}^\nu, \quad (\text{F.1.5})$$

where u^μ is the 4-velocity of the particle. These equations may be derived from the Lagrangian

$$L = \frac{1}{2}mg_{\mu\nu}u^\mu u^\nu + eA_\mu u^\mu, \quad (\text{F.1.6})$$

or, equivalently, from the Hamiltonian

$$H = \frac{1}{2}g^{\mu\nu}(p_\mu - eA_\mu)(p_\nu - eA_\nu), \quad (\text{F.1.7})$$

where we have introduced the 4-momentum of the particle

$$p_\mu = mu_\mu + eA_\mu. \quad (\text{F.1.8})$$

Note that Hamiltonian (F.1.7) is subject to the constraint

$$H = -\frac{1}{2}m^2. \quad (\text{F.1.9})$$

Carter (1968) firstly recognized that the corresponding Hamilton-Jacobi equations

$$g^{\alpha\beta} \left(\frac{\partial S}{\partial x^\alpha} + eA_\alpha \right) \left(\frac{\partial S}{\partial x^\beta} + eA_\beta \right) + m^2 = 0, \quad (\text{F.1.10})$$

are separable. Correspondingly four integrals of the equation of motion (F.1.5) can be found. Indeed, in addition to the constant of motion (F.1.9) which corresponds to conservation of the rest mass we have the two first integrals

$$p_u = -\mathcal{E} \quad (\text{F.1.11})$$

$$p_\phi = \Phi \quad (\text{F.1.12})$$

associated with the stationarity and the axial symmetry of Kerr-Newman space-time respectively. \mathcal{E} and Φ are naturally interpreted as the energy and the angular momentum about the symmetry axis of the test particle. It follows from the separability of Eq. (F.1.10) that the quantities

$$p_\theta^2 + (a\mathcal{E} \sin \theta - \Phi \sin^{-1} \theta)^2 + a^2 m^2 \cos^2 \theta = K \quad (\text{F.1.13})$$

$$\Delta p_r^2 - 2[(r^2 + a^2)\mathcal{E} + eQr - a\Phi]p_r + m^2 r^2 = -K \quad (\text{F.1.14})$$

are conserved as well. Together with \mathcal{E} and Φ they form a complete set of first integrals of the motion and allow one to integrate Eq. (F.1.5). As an example consider the proper time derivative \dot{r} of the radial coordinate of the test particle. It follows from Eqs. (F.1.11), (F.1.12), (F.1.13) and (F.1.14), that

$$\Sigma^2 \dot{r}^2 = (\mathcal{E}(r^2 + a^2) + eQr - \Phi a)^2 - \Delta(m^2 r^2 + K) \quad (\text{F.1.15})$$

which can be numerically integrated using the effective potential technique Ruffini (1973).

F.2. Reversible and irreversible transformations of a black hole: the Christodoulou-Ruffini mass formula

In 1969 Roger Penrose Penrose (1969) pointed out for the first time the possibility to extract rotational energy from a Kerr black hole. The first example of such an energy extraction was obtained by Ruffini and Wheeler who also introduced the concept of the ergosphere Rees et al. (1974); Ruffini (2009); Ruffini and Wheeler (1971a). It makes use of the *ergosphere* Ruffini and Wheeler (1971a), the region between the horizon of the black hole and the surface of infinite redshift. These works has been generalized by Denardo and Ruffini in 1973 Denardo and Ruffini (1973) and Denardo, Hively and Ruffini in 1974 Denardo et al. (1974) to the case of a Kerr-Newman black hole. The process described by Denardo, Hively and Ruffini can be described as follows. A neutral particle P_0 approaches the black hole with positive energy \mathcal{E}_0 and decays into two oppositely charged particles P_1 and P_2 whose energies are $\mathcal{E}_1 < 0$ and $\mathcal{E}_2 > \mathcal{E}_0$ respectively. P_1 falls into the black hole while P_2 is accelerated towards spatial infinity. Correspondingly, a positive energy

$$\delta\mathcal{E} = \mathcal{E}_2 - \mathcal{E}_0 \quad (\text{F.2.1})$$

has been extracted from the black hole and deposited on P_2 . The region around the black hole where the energy extraction processes can occur is named *effective ergosphere* in Refs. Denardo and Ruffini (1973), Denardo et al.

(1974). Note that, as the particle P_1 is swallowed, the black hole undergoes a transformation since its energy, angular-momentum and charge change accordingly. When is the extracted energy maximal? In order to answer this question note that the energy \mathcal{E} of a particle of angular momentum Φ , charge e and rest mass m moving around a Kerr-Newman black hole and having a turning point at r is given by (see Eq. (F.1.15)) the quadratic equation

$$(r^2 + a^2)^2 \mathcal{E}^2 + 2(eQr - \Phi a)(r^2 + a^2)\mathcal{E} + (eQr - \Phi a)^2 - \Delta(m^2 r^2 + K) = 0. \quad (\text{F.2.2})$$

As recalled in Landau and Lifshitz (1975), p.352, in the case of $Q = 0$ which corresponds to a pure Kerr solution, the explicit integration of this equation was performed by Ruffini and Wheeler Ruffini and Wheeler (1971b). They introduced the effective potential energy defined by

$$(r^2 + a^2)^2 \mathcal{E}^2 - 2(\Phi a)(r^2 + a^2)\mathcal{E} + (\Phi a)^2 - \Delta(m^2 r^2 + K) = 0. \quad (\text{F.2.3})$$

The radii of stable orbits are determined by minimum of function $\mathcal{E}(r)$, i.e. by simultaneous solution of equations $\mathcal{E}(r) = \mathcal{E}_0$, $\mathcal{E}'(r) = 0$ for $\mathcal{E}''(r) > 0$. The orbit closest to the center corresponds to $\mathcal{E}''(r)_{\min} = 0$; for $r < r_{\min}$, the function $\mathcal{E}(r)$ has no minima. As a result

- When $\Phi < 0$ (motion opposite to the direction of rotation of the collapsar)

$$\frac{r_{\min}}{2M} = \frac{9}{2}, \quad \frac{\mathcal{E}_0}{m} = \frac{5}{3\sqrt{3}}, \quad \frac{\Phi}{2mM} = \frac{11}{3\sqrt{3}}. \quad (\text{F.2.4})$$

- For $\Phi > 0$ (motion in the direction of rotation of the collapsar) as $a \rightarrow M$ the radius r_{\min} tends towards the radius of the horizon. Setting $a = M(1 + \delta)$, we find $\delta \rightarrow 0$:

$$\frac{r_{\text{hor}}}{2M} = \frac{1}{2}(1 + \sqrt{2\delta}), \quad \frac{r_{\min}}{2m} = \frac{1}{2}[1 + (4\delta)^{1/3}]. \quad (\text{F.2.5})$$

Then

$$\frac{\mathcal{E}_0}{m} = \frac{\Phi}{2mM} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}[1 + (4\delta)^{1/3}]. \quad (\text{F.2.6})$$

We call attention to the fact that r_{\min}/r_{hor} remains greater than one throughout, i.e. the orbit does not go inside the horizon. This is as it should be: the horizon is a null hypersurface, and no timelike world lines of moving particles can lie on it. Although no general formula exists in the case of the Kerr-Newman geometry the energy and the angular velocity of a test particle in a circular orbit with radius R in the Reissner-Nordström geometry has

been given by Ruffini and Zerilli Ruffini (1973)

$$\dot{\phi}^2 = \frac{M}{R^3} - \frac{Q^2}{R^4} - \frac{e}{m} \frac{Q}{R^3} \left[\frac{e}{m} \frac{Q}{2R} + \left(1 - \frac{3M}{R} + \frac{2Q^2}{R^2} + \frac{e}{m} \frac{Q^2}{4R^2} \right)^{1/2} \right], \quad (\text{F.2.7})$$

$$\frac{\mathcal{E}}{m} = \left(1 - \frac{2M}{R} + \frac{Q^2}{R^2} \right) / \left[\frac{e}{m} \frac{Q}{2R} + \left(1 - \frac{3M}{R} + \frac{2Q^2}{R^2} + \frac{e}{m} \frac{Q^2}{4R^2} \right)^{1/2} \right] \quad (\text{F.2.8})$$

$$+ \frac{q}{m} \frac{Q}{R},$$

and the limiting cases are there treated.

Eq. (F.2.2) is not only relevant for understanding the fully relativistic stable circular orbit but it is also very new since it defines the “positive-root states” and the “negative-root states” for the particle Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971). Such states were first interpreted as limits of states of a quantum field by Deruelle and Ruffini Deruelle and Ruffini (1974). Such an interpretation will be discussed in the next section. Note that in the case $eQr - \Phi a < 0$ there can exist negative energy states of positive root solutions and, as a direct consequence, energy can be extracted from a Kerr-Newman black hole via the Denardo-Ruffini process. Such a process is most efficient when the reduction of mass is greatest for a given reduction in angular momentum. To meet this requirement the energy \mathcal{E}_1 must be as negative as possible. This happens when $r = r_+$, that is the particle has a turning point at the horizon of the black hole. When $r = r_+$, $\Delta = 0$ and the separation between negative and positive-root states vanishes. This implies that capture processes from such an orbit are reversible since they can be inverted bringing the black hole to its original state. Correspondingly the energy of the incoming particle is

$$\mathcal{E}_1 = \frac{a\Phi + eQr_+}{a^2 + r_+^2}. \quad (\text{F.2.9})$$

If we apply the conservation of energy, angular momentum and charge to the capture of the particle P_1 by the black hole, we find that M , L and Q change as for the quantities

$$dM = \mathcal{E}_1, \quad dL = \Phi, \quad dQ = e. \quad (\text{F.2.10})$$

Thus Eq. (F.2.9) reads

$$dM = \frac{adL + r_+ Q dQ}{a^2 + r_+^2}. \quad (\text{F.2.11})$$

Integration of Eq. (F.2.11) gives

$$M^2 c^4 = \left(M_{\text{ir}} c^2 + \frac{c^2 Q^2}{4GM_{\text{ir}}} \right)^2 + \frac{L^2 c^8}{4G^2 M_{\text{ir}}^2}, \quad (\text{F.2.12})$$

provided the condition is satisfied

$$\left(\frac{c^2}{16G^2 M_{\text{ir}}^4} \right) (Q^4 + 4L^2 c^4) \leq 1, \quad (\text{F.2.13})$$

where M_{ir} is an integration constant and we restored the physical constants c and G . Eq. (F.2.12) is the Christodoulou–Ruffini mass formula Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971) and express the contributions to the total energy of the black hole. Extreme black holes satisfy equality (F.2.13). The irreducible mass M_{ir} satisfies the equation Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971)

$$S_a = \frac{16\pi G^2 M_{\text{ir}}^2}{c^4} \quad (\text{F.2.14})$$

where S_a is the surface area of the horizon of the black hole, and cannot be decreased by classical processes. Any transformation of the black hole which leaves fixed the irreducible mass (for instance, as we have seen, the capture of a particle having a turning point at the horizon of the black hole) is called reversible Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971). Any transformation of the black hole which increases its irreducible mass, for instance, the capture of a particle with non zero radial momentum at the horizon, is called irreversible. In irreversible transformations there is always some kinetic energy that is irretrievably lost behind the horizon. Note that energy can be extracted approaching arbitrarily close to reversible transformations which are the most efficient ones. Namely, from Eq. (F.2.12) it follows that up to 29% of the mass-energy of an extreme Kerr black hole ($M^2 = a^2$) can be stored in its rotational energy term $\frac{Lc^4}{2GM_{\text{ir}}}$ and can in principle be extracted. Gedanken experiments have been conceived to extract such energy Penrose (1969); Ruffini and Wilson (1975); Blandford and Znajek (1977); Damour et al. (1978); Price and Thorne (1986). The first specific example of a process of energy extraction from a black hole can be found in R. Ruffini and J. A. Wheeler, as quoted in Christodoulou (1970), see also Penrose and Floyd (1971). Other processes of rotational energy extraction of astrophysical interest based on magnetohydrodynamic mechanism occurring around a rotating Black Hole have also been advanced Ruffini and Wilson (1975); Blandford and Znajek (1977); Damour et al. (1978); Price and Thorne (1986) though their reversibility as defined in Ref. Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971), and consequently their efficiency of energy extraction, has not been assessed. From the same mass formula (F.2.12) follows that up to 50% of the mass energy of an extreme black hole with ($Q = M$) can be stored in the electromagnetic term $\frac{c^2 Q^2}{4GM_{\text{ir}}}$ and can be in principle extracted. This extractable energies either rotational or electromagnetic will be indicated in the following as blackholic energy and they can be the source of some of the most energetic phenomena in the Universe like jets from active galactic nuclei and GRBs.

F.3. Positive and negative root states as limits of quantum field states

In 1974 Deruelle and Ruffini Deruelle and Ruffini (1974) pointed out that negative root solutions of Eq. (F.2.2) can be interpreted in the framework of a fully relativistic quantum field theory as classical limits of antimatter solutions. In this section we briefly review their analysis. The equation of motion of a test particle in a Kerr-Newman geometry can be derived by the Hamilton–Jacobi Eq. (F.1.10). The first quantized corresponding theory can be obtained substituting the Hamilton–Jacoby equation with the generalized Klein–Gordon equation

$$g^{\alpha\beta} (\nabla_\alpha + ieA_\alpha) (\nabla_\beta + ieA_\beta) \Phi + m^2\Phi = 0 \quad (\text{F.3.1})$$

for the wave function Φ . For simplicity we restrict to the Kerr case: $Q = 0$, when Eq. (F.3.1) reduces to

$$g^{\alpha\beta} \nabla_\alpha \nabla_\beta \Phi + m^2\Phi = 0. \quad (\text{F.3.2})$$

In order to solve Eq. (F.3.2) we can separate the variables as follows:

$$\Phi = e^{-imEt} e^{ik\phi} S_{kl}(\theta) R(r) \quad (\text{F.3.3})$$

where $S_{kl}(\theta)$ are spheroidal harmonics. We thus obtain the radial equation

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d^2 u}{dr^{*2}} = & \left\{ -E^2 m^2 \left(1 + \frac{a^2}{r^2} + \frac{2Ma^2}{r^3} \right) + \frac{4MakEm}{r^3} + m^2 \left(1 - \frac{2M}{r} + \frac{a^2}{r^2} \right) - mk \frac{2M}{r^3} \right. \\ & \left. - \frac{1}{r^2} - \frac{a^2}{r^4} - \frac{k^2 a^2}{r^4} + \frac{2}{r^6} \left[Mr^3 - r^2(a^2 + 2M^2) + 3Ma^2 r - a^4 \right] \right\} u, \end{aligned}$$

where $u = R(r)r$ and $dr/dr^* = \Delta/r^2$. Corresponding to classical bound states (circular or elliptic orbits) it is natural to look for “resonances” states of the Klein–Gordon equation. Then, impose as boundary conditions a) an exponential decay of the wave function for $r \rightarrow \infty$ and b) a purely ingoing wave at the horizon $r \rightarrow r_+$. The solutions of the corresponding problem can be found numerically Deruelle and Ruffini (1974). The main conclusions of the integration can be summarized as follows:

1. The continuum spectrum of the classical stable bound states is replaced by a discrete spectrum of resonances with tunneling through the potential barrier giving the finite probability of the particle to be captured by the horizon.
2. In the classical limit $(GM/c^2)/(\hbar/m_e c) \rightarrow \infty$ the separation of the energy levels of the resonances tends to zero. The leakage toward the horizon also decreases and the width of the resonance tends to zero.

3. The negative root solutions of Eq. (F.2.2) correspond to the classical limit $(GM/c^2)/(\hbar/m_e c) \rightarrow \infty$ of the negative energy solutions of the Klein-Gordon Eq. (F.3.2) and consequently they can be thought of as antimatter solutions with an appropriate interchange of the sign of charge, the direction of time and the angular momentum.
4. We can have positive root states of negative energy in the ergosphere, see e.g. Rees et al. (1974). In particular we can have crossing of positive and negative energy root states. This corresponds, at the second quantized theory level to the possibility of particle pair creation à la Klein, Sauter, Heisenberg, Euler and Schwinger Klein (1929); Sauter (1931b,a); Heisenberg and Euler (1936); Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b).

Similar considerations can be made in the Kerr-Newman case, $Q \neq 0$, when the generalized Klein Gordon Eq. (F.3.1) has to be integrated. The resonance states can be obtained imposing the same boundary conditions as above. Once again we can have level crossing inside the effective ergosphere Denardo and Ruffini (1973); Denardo et al. (1974) and therefore possible pair creation.

F.4. Vacuum polarization in Kerr-Newman geometries

We discussed in the previous chapters the phenomenon of electron-positron pair production in a strong electric field in a flat space-time. We study the same phenomenon occurring around a black hole endowed with mass M , charge Q and the angular momentum a .

The spacetime of a Kerr-Newman geometry is described by a metric which in Boyer-Lindquist coordinates (t, r, θ, ϕ) acquires the form

$$ds^2 = \frac{\Sigma}{\Delta} dr^2 + \Sigma d\theta^2 - \frac{\Delta}{\Sigma} (dt - a \sin^2 \theta d\phi)^2 + \frac{\sin^2 \theta}{\Sigma} \left[(r^2 + a^2) d\phi - a dt \right]^2, \quad (\text{F.4.1})$$

where Δ and Σ are defined following (F.1.1). We recall that the Reissner-Nordström geometry is the particular case $a = 0$ of a non-rotating black hole.

The electromagnetic vector potential around the Kerr-Newman black hole is given in Boyer-Lindquist coordinates by

$$\mathbf{A} = -Q\Sigma^{-1}r(dt - a \sin^2 \theta d\phi). \quad (\text{F.4.2})$$

The electromagnetic field tensor is then

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F} = d\mathbf{A} = 2Q\Sigma^{-2}[(r^2 - a^2 \cos^2 \theta)dr \wedge dt - 2a^2r \cos \theta \sin \theta d\theta \wedge dt \\ - a \sin^2 \theta (r^2 - a^2 \cos^2 \theta)dr \wedge d\phi + 2ar(r^2 + a^2) \cos \theta \sin \theta d\theta \wedge d\phi]. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.4.3})$$

After some preliminary work in Refs. Zeldovich (1972); Starobinskiĭ (1973); Unruh (1976), the occurrence of pair production in a Kerr-Newman geometry was addressed by Deruelle Deruelle (1977). In a Reissner-Nordström geometry, QED pair production has been studied by Zaumen Zaumen (1974) and GibbonsGibbons (1975). The corresponding problem of QED pair production in the Kerr-Newman geometry was addressed by Damour and Ruffini Damour and Ruffini (1975), who obtained the rate of pair production with particular emphasis on:

- the limitations imposed by pair production on the strength of the electromagnetic field of a black hole Ruffini (1973);
- the efficiency of extracting rotational and Coulomb energy (the “blackholic” energy) from a black hole by pair production;
- the possibility of having observational consequences of astrophysical interest.

The third point was in fact a far-reaching prevision of possible energy sources for GRBs that are now one of the most important phenomena under current theoretical and observational study. In the following, we recall the main results of the work by Damour and Ruffini.

In order to study the pair production in the Kerr-Newman geometry, they introduced at each event (t, r, θ, ϕ) a local Lorentz frame associated with a stationary observer \mathcal{O} at the event (t, r, θ, ϕ) . A convenient frame is defined by the following orthogonal tetrad Carter (1968)

$$\omega^{(0)} = (\Delta/\Sigma)^{1/2}(dt - a \sin^2 \theta d\phi), \quad (\text{F.4.4})$$

$$\omega^{(1)} = (\Sigma/\Delta)^{1/2}dr, \quad (\text{F.4.5})$$

$$\omega^{(2)} = \Sigma^{1/2}d\theta, \quad (\text{F.4.6})$$

$$\omega^{(3)} = \sin \theta \Sigma^{-1/2}((r^2 + a^2)d\phi -adt). \quad (\text{F.4.7})$$

In this Lorentz frame, the electric potential A_0 , the electric field \mathbf{E} and the magnetic field \mathbf{B} are given by the following formulas (c.e.g. Ref. Misner et al.

(1973)),

$$\begin{aligned} A_0 &= \omega_a^{(0)} A^a, \\ \mathbf{E}^\alpha &= \omega_\beta^{(0)} F^{\alpha\beta}, \\ \mathbf{B}^\beta &= \frac{1}{2} \omega_\gamma^{(0)} \epsilon^{\alpha\gamma\delta\beta} F_{\gamma\delta}. \end{aligned}$$

We then obtain

$$A_0 = -Qr(\Sigma\Delta)^{-1/2}, \quad (\text{F.4.8})$$

while the electromagnetic fields \mathbf{E} and \mathbf{B} are parallel to the direction of $\omega^{(1)}$ and have strengths given by

$$E_{(1)} = Q\Sigma^{-2}(r^2 - a^2 \cos^2 \theta), \quad (\text{F.4.9})$$

$$B_{(1)} = Q\Sigma^{-2}2ar \cos \theta, \quad (\text{F.4.10})$$

respectively. The maximal strength E_{\max} of the electric field is obtained in the case $a = 0$ at the horizon of the black hole: $r = r_+$. We have

$$E_{\max} = Q/r_+^2. \quad (\text{F.4.11})$$

Equating the maximal electric field strength (F.4.11) to the critical value (3.2.1), one obtains the maximal black hole mass $M_{\max} \simeq 7.2 \cdot 10^6 M_\odot$ for pair production to occur. For any black hole with mass smaller than M_{\max} , the pair production process can drastically modify its electromagnetic structure.

Both the gravitational and the electromagnetic background fields of the Kerr-Newman black hole are stationary when considering the quantum field of the electron. Since $m_e M \simeq 10^{14} \gg 1$ the gravitational field of the background black hole is practically constant over the Compton wavelength of the electron characterizing the quantum field. As far as purely QED phenomena such as pair production are concerned, it is possible to consider the electric and magnetic fields defined by Eqs. (F.4.9, F.4.10) as constants in the neighborhood of a few wavelengths around any events (r, θ, ϕ, t) . Thus, the analysis and discussion on the Sauter-Euler-Heisenberg-Schwinger process over a flat space-time can be locally applied to the case of the curved Kerr-Newman geometry, based on the equivalence principle.

The rate of pair production around a Kerr-Newman black hole can be obtained from the Schwinger formula (C.4.39) for parallel electromagnetic fields $\varepsilon = E_{(1)}$ and $\beta = B_{(1)}$ as:

$$\frac{\tilde{\Gamma}}{V} = \frac{\alpha E_{(1)} B_{(1)}}{4\pi^2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n} \coth \left(\frac{n\pi B_{(1)}}{E_{(1)}} \right) \exp \left(-\frac{n\pi E_c}{E_{(1)}} \right). \quad (\text{F.4.12})$$

The total number of pairs produced in a region D of the space-time is

$$N = \int_D d^4x \sqrt{-g} \frac{\tilde{\Gamma}}{V}, \quad (\text{F.4.13})$$

where $\sqrt{-g} = \Sigma \sin \theta$. In Ref. Damour and Ruffini (1975), it was assumed that for each created pair the particle (or antiparticle) with the same sign of charge as the black hole was expelled to infinity with charge e , energy ω and angular momentum l_ϕ while the antiparticle was absorbed by the black hole. This implies the decrease of charge, mass and angular momentum of the black hole and a corresponding extraction of all three quantities. This considerations, however, were profoundly modified later by the introduction of the concept of Dyadosphere which is presented in the next section. The rates of change of the charge, mass and angular momentum were estimated by

$$\begin{aligned} \dot{Q} &= -Re, \\ \dot{M} &= -R\langle\omega\rangle, \\ \dot{L} &= -R\langle l_\phi\rangle, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.4.14})$$

where $R = \dot{N}$ is the rate of pair production and $\langle\omega\rangle$ and $\langle l_\phi\rangle$ represent some suitable mean values for the energy and angular momentum carried by the pairs.

Supposing the maximal variation of black hole charge to be $\Delta Q = -Q$, one can estimate the maximal number of pairs created and the maximal mass-energy variation. It was concluded in Ref. Damour and Ruffini (1975) that the maximal mass-energy variation in the pair production process is larger than 10^{41} erg and up to 10^{58} erg, depending on the black hole mass, see Table 1 in Damour and Ruffini (1975). They concluded at the time “*this work naturally leads to a most simple model for the explanation of the recently discovered γ -ray bursts*”.

F.5. The “Dyadosphere” in Reissner- Nordström geometry

After the discovery in 1997 of the afterglow of GRBs Costa et al. (1997) and the determination of the cosmological distance of their sources, it was noticed Ruffini (1998) the coincidence between their observed energetics and the one theoretically predicted by Damour and Ruffini Damour and Ruffini (1975). Ruffini and collaborators therefore returned to these theoretical results with renewed interest developing some additional basic theoretical concepts Ruffini (1998); Preparata et al. (2003, 1998); Ruffini et al. (1999, 2000)

such as the dyadosphere and, more recently, the dyadotorus. In this Section we restore constants G , c and \hbar for clarity.

As a first simplifying assumption the case of absence of rotation was considered. The space-time is then described by the Reissner-Nordström geometry, see (F.4.1) whose spherically symmetric metric is given by

$$d^2s = g_{tt}(r)d^2t + g_{rr}(r)d^2r + r^2d^2\theta + r^2\sin^2\theta d^2\phi, \quad (\text{F.5.1})$$

where $g_{tt}(r) = -\left[1 - \frac{2GM}{c^2r} + \frac{Q^2G}{c^4r^2}\right] \equiv -\alpha^2(r)$ and $g_{rr}(r) = \alpha^{-2}(r)$.

The first result obtained is that the pair creation process does not occur at the horizon of the black hole: it extends over the entire region outside the horizon in which the electric field exceeds the value E^* of the order of magnitude of the critical value given by Eq. (3.2.1). We recall the pair creation process is a quantum tunneling between the positive and negative energy states, which needs a level crossing, can occur for $E^* < E_c$ if the field extent to spatial dimension D^* such that $D^*E^* = 2m_e c^2/e$. The probability of such pair creation process will be exponentially damped by $\exp(-\pi D^*/\lambda_c)$. Clearly, very intense process of pair creation will occur for $E^* > E_c$. In order to give a scale of the phenomenon, and for definiteness, in Ref. Preparata et al. (1998) it was considered the case of $E^* \equiv E_c$. Since the electric field in the Reissner-Nordström geometry has only a radial component given by Ruffini (1978)

$$E(r) = \frac{Q}{r^2}, \quad (\text{F.5.2})$$

this region extends from the horizon radius

$$r_+ = 1.47 \cdot 10^5 \mu (1 + \sqrt{1 - \xi^2}) \text{ cm} \quad (\text{F.5.3})$$

out to an outer radius Ruffini (1998)

$$\begin{aligned} r^* &= \left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c}\right)^{1/2} \left(\frac{GM}{c^2}\right)^{1/2} \left(\frac{m_p}{m_e}\right)^{1/2} \left(\frac{e}{q_p}\right)^{1/2} \left(\frac{Q}{\sqrt{GM}}\right)^{1/2} = \\ &= 1.12 \cdot 10^8 \sqrt{\mu \xi} \text{ cm}, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.5.4})$$

where we have introduced the dimensionless mass and charge parameters $\mu = \frac{M}{M_\odot}$, $\xi = \frac{Q}{(M\sqrt{G})} \leq 1$, see Fig. F.2.

The second result gave the local number density of electron and positron pairs created in this region as a function of radius

$$n_{e^+e^-}(r) = \frac{Q}{4\pi r^2 \left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c}\right) e} \left[1 - \left(\frac{r}{r^*}\right)^2\right], \quad (\text{F.5.5})$$

and consequently the total number of electron and positron pairs in this region is

$$N_{e^+e^-}^\circ \simeq \frac{Q - Q_c}{e} \left[1 + \frac{(r^* - r_+)}{\frac{\hbar}{m_e c}} \right], \quad (\text{F.5.6})$$

where $Q_c = E_c r_+^2$.

The total number of pairs is larger by an enormous factor $r^* / (\hbar / m_e c) > 10^{18}$ than the value Q/e which a naive estimate of the discharge of the black hole would have predicted. Due to this enormous amplification factor in the number of pairs created, the region between the horizon and r^* is dominated by an essentially high density neutral plasma of electron-positron pairs. This region was defined Ruffini (1998) as the Dyadosphere of the black hole from the Greek *duas*, *duados* for pairs. Consequently we have called r^* the Dyadosphere radius $r^* \equiv r_{\text{ds}}$ Ruffini (1998); Preparata et al. (2003, 1998). The vacuum polarization process occurs as if the entire Dyadosphere is subdivided into a concentric set of shells of capacitors each of thickness $\hbar / m_e c$ and each producing a number of e^+e^- pairs on the order of $\sim Q/e$ (see Fig. F.2). The energy density of the electron-positron pairs is there given by

$$\epsilon(r) = \frac{Q^2}{8\pi r^4} \left(1 - \left(\frac{r}{r_{\text{ds}}} \right)^4 \right), \quad (\text{F.5.7})$$

(see Figs. 2–3 of Ref. Preparata et al. (2003)). The total energy of pairs converted from the static electric energy and deposited within the Dyadosphere is then

$$\mathcal{E}_{\text{dya}} = \frac{1}{2} \frac{Q^2}{r_+} \left(1 - \frac{r_+}{r_{\text{ds}}} \right) \left[1 - \left(\frac{r_+}{r_{\text{ds}}} \right)^4 \right]. \quad (\text{F.5.8})$$

In the limit $\frac{r_+}{r_{\text{ds}}} \rightarrow 0$, Eq. (F.5.8) leads to $\mathcal{E}_{\text{dya}} \rightarrow \frac{1}{2} \frac{Q^2}{r_+}$, which coincides with the energy extractable from black holes by reversible processes ($M_{\text{ir}} = \text{const.}$), namely $\mathcal{E}_{\text{BH}} - M_{\text{ir}} = \frac{1}{2} \frac{Q^2}{r_+}$ Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971), see Fig. F.1. Due to the very large pair density given by Eq. (F.5.5) and to the sizes of the cross-sections for the process $e^+e^- \leftrightarrow \gamma + \gamma$, the system has been assumed to thermalize to a plasma configuration for which

$$n_{e^+} = n_{e^-} \sim n_\gamma \sim n_{e^+e^-}^\circ, \quad (\text{F.5.9})$$

where $n_{e^+e^-}^\circ$ is the total number density of e^+e^- -pairs created in the Dyadosphere Preparata et al. (2003, 1998). This assumption has been in the meantime rigorously proven by Aksenov, Ruffini and Vereshchagin Aksenov et al. (2007), see Chapter H.

The third result, again introduced for simplicity, is that for a given \mathcal{E}_{dya} it was assumed either a constant average energy density over the entire Dyado-

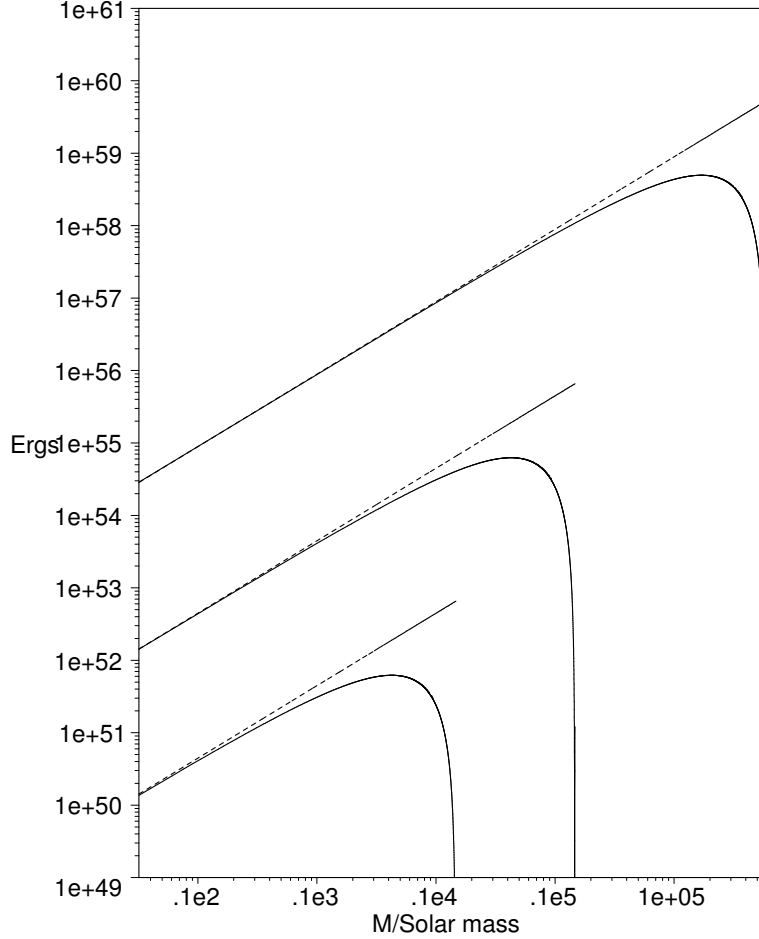


Figure F.1.: The energy extracted by the process of vacuum polarization is plotted (solid lines) as a function of the mass M in solar mass units for selected values of the charge parameter $\xi = 1, 0.1, 0.01$ (from top to bottom) for a Reissner-Nordström black hole, the case $\xi = 1$ reachable only as a limiting process. For comparison we have also plotted the maximum energy extractable from a black hole (dotted lines) given by Eq. (F.2.12). Details in Ref. Preparata et al. (2003).

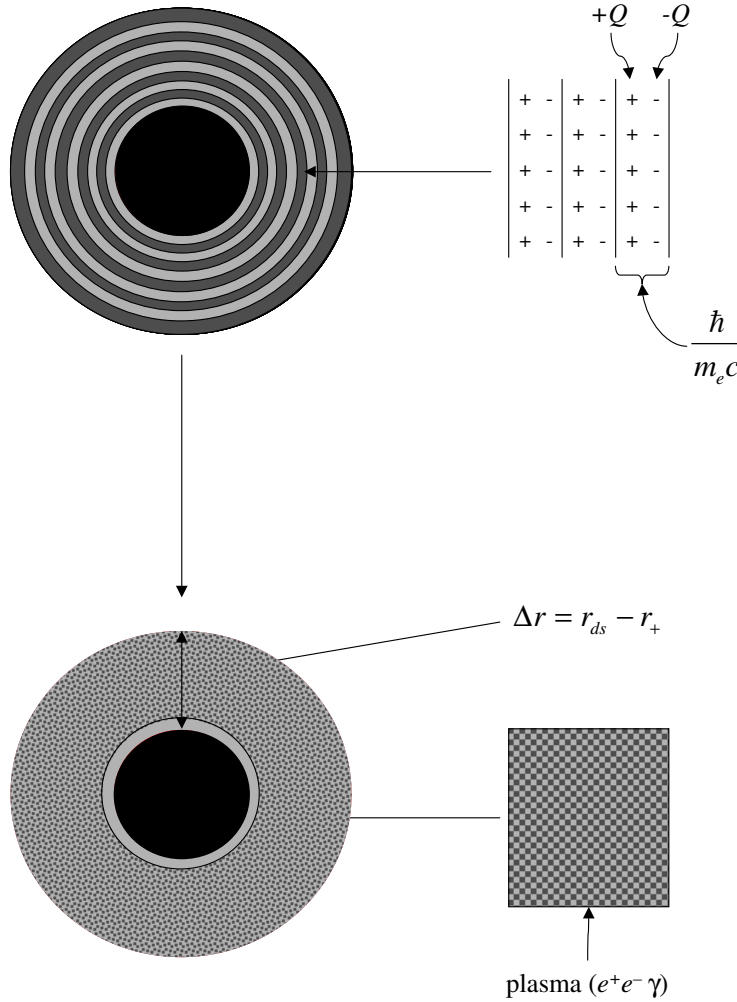


Figure F.2.: The dyadosphere of a Reissner-Nordström black hole can be represented as equivalent to a concentric set of capacitor shells, each one of thickness $\hbar/m_e c$ and producing a number of e^+e^- pairs of the order of $\sim Q/e$ on a time scale of 10^{-21} s, where Q is the black hole charge. The shells extend in a region of thickness Δr , from the horizon r_+ out to the Dyadosphere outer radius r_{ds} (see text). The system evolves to a thermalized plasma configuration.

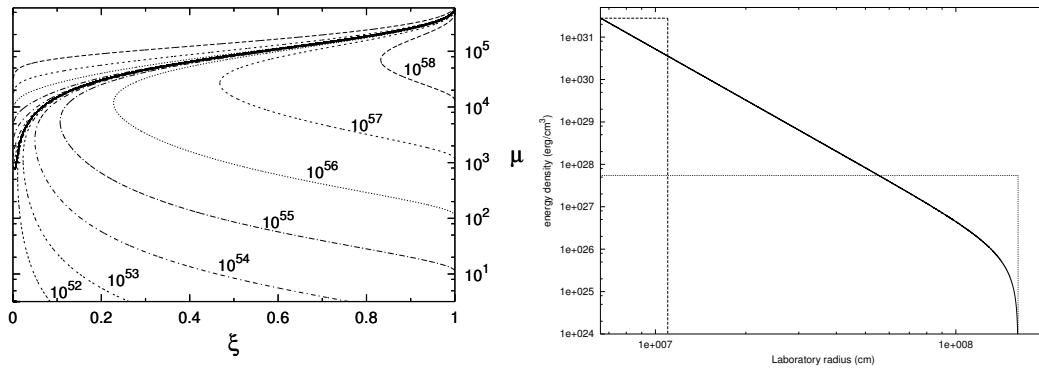


Figure F.3.: Left) Selected lines corresponding to fixed values of the \mathcal{E}_{dya} are given as a function of the two parameters μ ξ , only the solutions below the continuous heavy line are physically relevant. The configurations above the continuous heavy lines correspond to unphysical solutions with $r_{\text{ds}} < r_+$. **Right)** There are two different approximations for the energy density profile inside the Dyadosphere. The first one (dashed line) fixes the energy density equal to its peak value, and computes an “effective” Dyadosphere radius accordingly. The second one (dotted line) fixes the Dyadosphere radius to its correct value, and assumes a uniform energy density over the Dyadosphere volume. The total energy in the Dyadosphere is of course the same in both cases. The solid curve represents the real energy density profile. Details in Ruffini et al. (2003a).

sphere volume, or a more compact configuration with energy density equal to its peak value. These are the two possible initial conditions for the evolution of the Dyadosphere (see Fig. F.3).

The above theoretical results permit a good estimate of the general energetics processes originating in the Dyadosphere, assuming an already formed black hole. In reality, if the GRB data become accurate enough, the full dynamical description of the Dyadosphere formation will be needed in order to explain the observational data by the general relativistic effects and characteristic time scales of the approach to the black hole horizon Cherubini et al. (2002); Ruffini and Vitagliano (2002, 2003); Ruffini et al. (2003b, 2005); Frascchetti et al. (2006).

F.6. The “Dyadotorus”

We turn now to examine how the presence of rotation modifies the geometry of the surface containing the region where electron-positron pairs are created as well as the conditions for the existence of such a surface. Due to the axial symmetry of the problem, this region was called the “dyadotorus” Cherubini et al. (2008).

We shall follow the treatment of Cherubini et al. (2008). As in Damour (1982); Damour et al. (1978) we introduce at each point of the space-time the orthogonal Carter tetrad (F.4.4-F.4.7).

From Eq. (F.4.9) we define the dyadotorus by the condition $|E_{(1)}| = \kappa E_c$, where $10^{-1} \leq \kappa \leq 10$. Solving for r and introducing the dimensionless quantities $\xi = Q/(\sqrt{GM})$, $\mu = M/M_\odot$, $\tilde{a} = ac^2/(GM)$, $\tilde{\epsilon} = \kappa E_c M_\odot c^4/G^{3/2}$ and $\tilde{r} = rc^2/(GM)$ we get

$$\left(\frac{r_\pm^d c^2}{GM}\right)^2 = \frac{\xi}{2\mu\tilde{\epsilon}} - \tilde{a}^2 \cos^2 \theta \pm \sqrt{\frac{\xi^2}{4\mu^2\tilde{\epsilon}^2} - \frac{2\xi}{\mu\tilde{\epsilon}}\tilde{a}^2 \cos^2 \theta}, \quad (\text{F.6.1})$$

where the \pm signs correspond to the two different parts of the surface.

The two parts of the surface join at the particular values θ^* and $\pi - \theta^*$ of the polar angle where

$$\theta^* = \arccos \left(\frac{1}{2\sqrt{2}\tilde{a}} \sqrt{\frac{\xi}{\mu\tilde{\epsilon}}} \right).$$

The requirement that $\cos \theta^* \leq 1$ can be solved for instance for the charge parameter ξ , giving a range of values of ξ for which the dyadotorus takes one of the shapes (see fig.F.4)

$$\text{surface} = \begin{cases} \text{ellipsoid-like} & \text{if } \xi \geq \xi_* \\ \text{thorus-like} & \text{if } \xi < \xi_* \end{cases} \quad (\text{F.6.2})$$

where $\xi_* = 8\mu\tilde{\epsilon}\tilde{a}^2$.

In Fig. F.4 we show some examples of the dyadotorus geometry for different sets of parameters for an extreme Kerr-Newman black hole ($a^2 c^8/G^2 + Q^2/G = M^2$), we can see the transition from a toroidal geometry to an ellipsoidal one depending on the value of the black hole charge.

Fig. F.5 shows the projections of the surfaces corresponding to different values of the ratio $|E_{(1)}|/E_c \equiv \kappa$ for the same choice of parameters as in Fig. F.4 (b), as an example. We see that the region enclosed by such surfaces shrinks for increasing values of κ .

F.7. Geometry of gravitationally collapsing cores

In the previous Sections we have focused on the theoretically well defined problem of pair creation in the electric field of an already formed black hole. In this section we shall follow the treatment of Cherubini et al. Cherubini et al. (2002) addressing some specific issues on the dynamical formation of the black hole, recalling first the Oppenheimer-Snyder solution and then con-

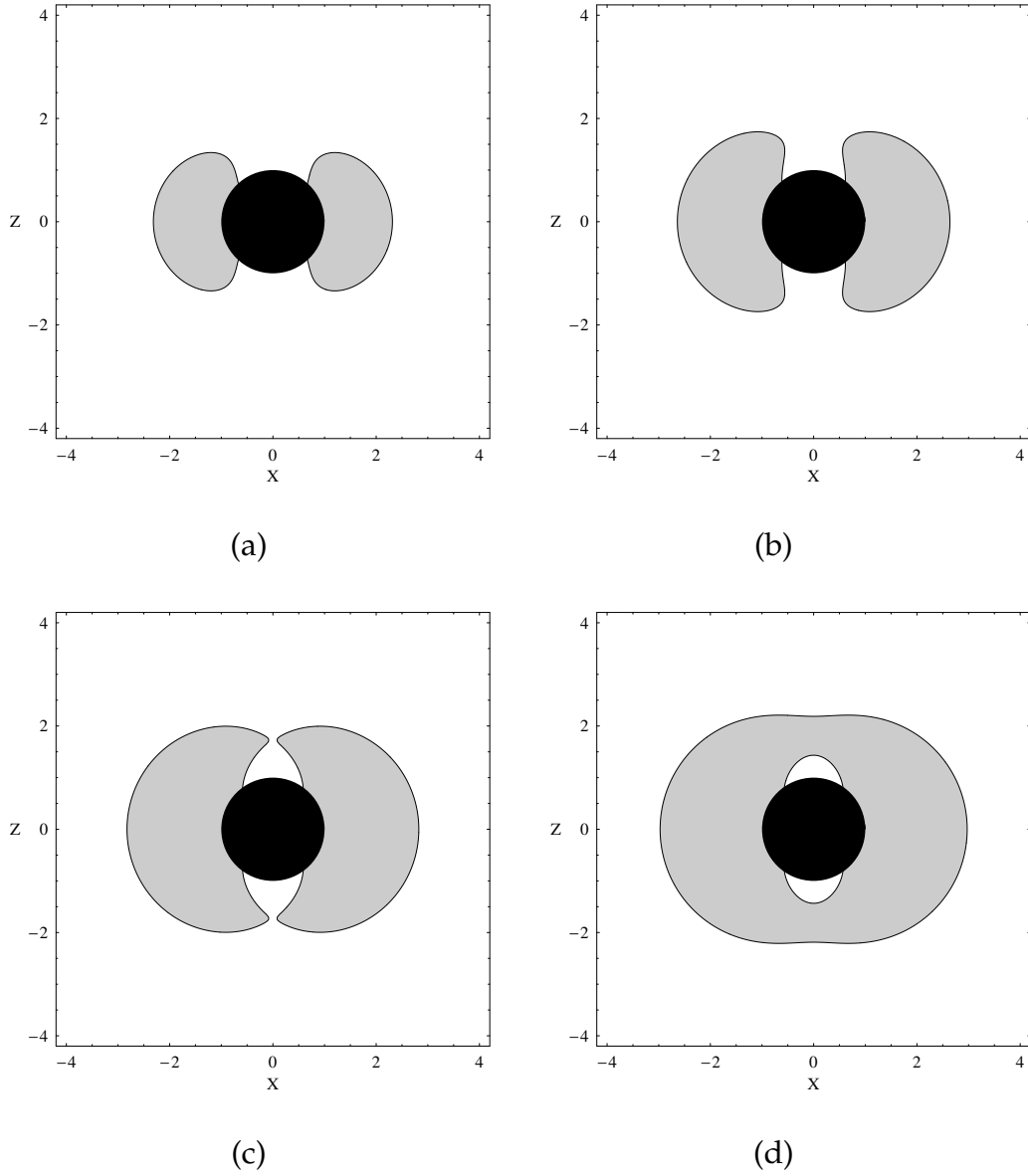


Figure F.4.: The projection of the dyadotorus on the $X - Z$ plane ($X = r \sin \theta$, $Z = r \cos \theta$ are Cartesian-like coordinates built up simply using the Boyer-Lindquist radial and angular coordinates) is shown for an extreme Kerr-Newman black hole with $\mu = 10$ and different values of the charge parameter $\zeta = [1, 1.3, 1.49, 1.65] \times 10^{-4}$ (from (a) to (d) respectively). The black circle represents the black hole horizon. Details in Cherubini et al. (2008).

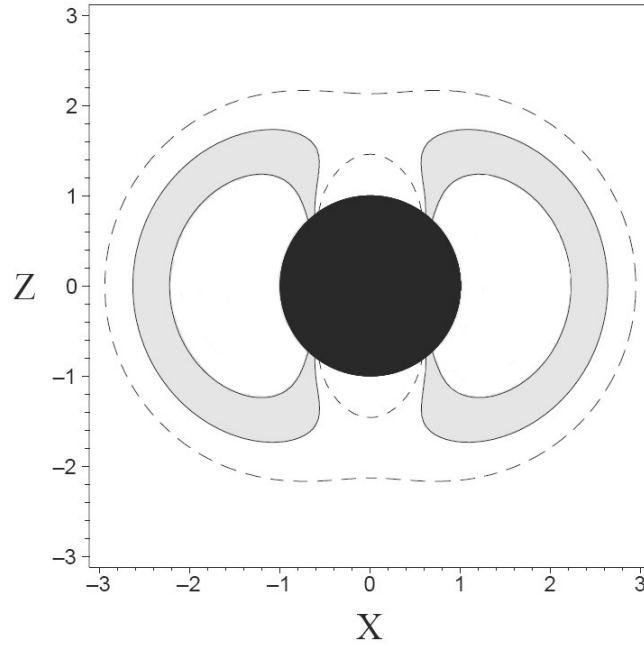


Figure F.5.: The projections of the surfaces corresponding to different values of the ratio $|E_{(1)}|/E_c \equiv \kappa$ are shown for the same choice of parameters as in Fig. F.4 (b), as an example. The gray shaded region is part of the “dyadotorus” corresponding to the case $\kappa = 1$ as plotted in Fig. F.4 (b). The region delimited by dashed curves corresponds to $\kappa = 0.8$, i.e., to a value of the strength of the electric field smaller than the critical one, and contains the dyadotorus; the latter in turn contains the white region corresponding to $\kappa = 1.4$, i.e., to a value of the strength of the electric field greater than the critical one. Details in Cherubini et al. (2008).

sidering its generalization to the charged case using the classical work of W. Israel and V. de la Cruz Israel (1966); De la Cruz and Israel (1967).

F.7.1. The Tolman-Oppenheimer-Snyder solution

Oppenheimer and Snyder first found a solution of the Einstein equations describing the gravitational collapse of spherically symmetric star of mass greater than $\sim 0.7M_{\odot}$. In this section we briefly review their pioneering work as presented in Ref. Oppenheimer and Snyder (1939).

In a spherically symmetric space-time they can be found coordinates (t, r, θ, ϕ) such that the line element takes the form

$$ds^2 = e^{\nu} dt^2 - e^{\lambda} dr^2 - r^2 d\Omega^2, \quad (\text{F.7.1})$$

$d\Omega^2 = d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2$, $\nu = \nu(t, r)$, $\lambda = \lambda(t, r)$. However the gravitational collapse problem is better solved in a system of coordinates (τ, R, θ, ϕ) which are comoving with the matter inside the star. In comoving coordinates the line element takes the form

$$ds^2 = d\tau^2 - e^{\sigma} dR^2 - e^{\omega} d\Omega^2,$$

$\bar{\omega} = \bar{\omega}(\tau, R)$, $\omega = \omega(\tau, R)$. Einstein equations read

$$8\pi T_1^1 = e^{-\omega} - e^{-\sigma} \frac{\omega'^2}{4} + \ddot{\omega} + \frac{3}{4} \dot{\omega}^2 \quad (\text{F.7.2})$$

$$8\pi T_2^2 = 8\pi T_3^3 = -\frac{e^{-\sigma}}{4} \left(2\omega'' + \omega'^2 - \sigma' \omega' \right) + \frac{1}{4} (2\ddot{\sigma} + \dot{\sigma}^2 + 2\ddot{\omega} + \dot{\omega}^2 + \dot{\sigma} \dot{\omega}) \quad (\text{F.7.3})$$

$$8\pi T_4^4 = e^{-\omega} - e^{-\sigma} \left(\omega'' + \frac{3}{4} \omega'^2 - \frac{\sigma' \omega'}{2} \right) + \frac{\dot{\omega}^2}{4} + \frac{\dot{\sigma} \dot{\omega}}{2} \quad (\text{F.7.4})$$

$$8\pi e^{\sigma} T_4^1 = -8\pi T_1^4 = \frac{1}{2} \omega' (\dot{\omega} - \dot{\sigma}) + \dot{\omega}'. \quad (\text{F.7.5})$$

Where $T_{\mu\nu}$ is the energy-momentum tensor of the stellar matter, a dot denotes a derivative with respect to τ and a prime denotes a derivative with respect to R . Oppenheimer and Snyder were only able to integrate Eqs. (F.7.2)–(F.7.5) in the case when the pressure p of the stellar matter vanishes and no energy is radiated outwards. In the following we thus $p = 0$. In this hypothesis

$$T_1^1 = T_2^2 = T_3^3 = T_4^1 = T_1^4 = 0, \quad T_4^4 = \rho$$

where ρ is the comoving density of the star. Eq. (F.7.5) was first integrated by Tolman in Ref. Tolman (1934). The solution is

$$e^{\sigma} = e^{\omega} \omega'^2 / 4 f^2(R), \quad (\text{F.7.6})$$

where $f = f(R)$ is an arbitrary function. In Ref. Oppenheimer and Snyder

(1939) was studied the case $f(R) = 1$. In Sec. F.7.2 the hypothesis $f(R) = 1$ is relaxed in the case of a shell of dust. Using Eq. (F.7.6) into Eq. (F.7.2) with $f(R) = 1$ gives

$$\ddot{\omega} + \frac{3}{4}\dot{\omega}^2 = 0, \quad (\text{F.7.7})$$

which can be integrated to

$$e^{\omega} = (F\tau + \tilde{G})^{4/3}, \quad (\text{F.7.8})$$

where $F = F(R)$ and $\tilde{G} = \tilde{G}(R)$ are arbitrary function. Using Eq. (F.7.6) into Eq. (F.7.3) gives Eq. (F.7.7) again. From Eqs. (F.7.4), (F.7.6) and (F.7.8) the density ρ can be found as

$$8\pi\rho = \frac{4}{3} \left(\tau + \frac{\tilde{G}}{F} \right)^{-1} \left(\tau + \frac{\tilde{G}'}{F'} \right)^{-1}. \quad (\text{F.7.9})$$

There is still the gauge freedom of choosing R so to have

$$\tilde{G} = R^{3/2}.$$

Moreover, it can be freely chosen the initial density profile, i.e., the density at the initial time $\tau = 0$, $\rho_0 = \rho_0(R)$. Eq. (F.7.9) then becomes

$$FF' = 9\pi R^2 \rho_0(R)$$

whose solution contains only one arbitrary integration constant. It is thus seen the choice of Oppenheimer and Snyder of putting $f(R) = 1$ allows one to assign only a one-parameter family of functions for the initial values $\dot{\rho}_0 = \dot{\rho}_0(R)$ of $\dot{\rho}$. However in general one should be able to assign the initial values of $\dot{\rho}$ arbitrarily. This will be done in Sec. (F.7.2) in the case of a shell of dust.

Choosing, for instance,

$$\rho_0 = \begin{cases} \text{const} > 0 & \text{if } R < R_b \\ 0 & \text{if } R \geq R_b \end{cases},$$

R_b being the comoving radius of the boundary of the star, gives

$$F = \begin{cases} -\frac{3}{2}r_+^{1/2} \left(\frac{R}{R_b} \right)^{3/2} & \text{if } R < R_b \\ -\frac{3}{2}r_+^{1/2} & \text{if } R \geq R_b \end{cases}$$

where $r_+ = 2M$ is the Schwarzschild radius of the star.

We are finally in the position of performing a coordinate transformation from the comoving coordinates (τ, R, θ, ϕ) to new coordinates (t, r, θ, ϕ) in which the line elements looks like (F.7.1). The requirement that the line element be the Schwarzschild one outside the star fix the form of such a coordi-

nate transformation to be

$$r = (F\tau + G)^{2/3}$$

$$t = \begin{cases} \frac{2}{3}r_+^{-1/2}(R_b^{3/2} - r_+^{3/2}y^{3/2}) - 2r_+y^{1/2} + r_+ \log \frac{y^{1/2}+1}{y^{1/2}-1} & \text{if } R < R_b \\ \frac{2}{3r_+^{1/2}}(R^{3/2} - r_+^{3/2}) - 2(rr_+)^{1/2} + r_+ \log \frac{r^{1/2}+r_+^{1/2}}{r^{1/2}-r_+^{1/2}} & \text{if } R \geq R_b \end{cases},$$

where

$$y = \frac{1}{2} \left[\left(\frac{R}{R_b} \right)^2 - 1 \right] + \frac{R_b r}{r_+ R}.$$

F.7.2. Gravitational collapse of charged and uncharged shells

It is well known that the role of exact solutions has been fundamental in the development of general relativity. In this section, we present here exact solutions for a charged shell of matter collapsing into a black hole. Such solutions were found in Ref. Cherubini et al. (2002) and are new with respect to the Tolman-Oppenheimer-Snyder class. For simplicity we consider the case of zero angular momentum and spherical symmetry. This problem is relevant for its own sake as an addition to the existing family of interesting exact solutions and also represents some progress in understanding the role of the formation of the horizon and of the irreducible mass as will be discussed in Sec. F.8.1, see e.g. Ruffini and Vitagliano (2002). It is also essential in improving the treatment of the vacuum polarization processes occurring during the formation of a black hole discussed in Ruffini et al. (2003b). As we already mentioned, both of these issues are becoming relevant to explaining GRBs, see e.g. Ruffini et al. (2001c,b,a,d) and references therein.

W. Israel and V. de La Cruz Israel (1966); De la Cruz and Israel (1967) showed that the problem of a collapsing charged shell can be reduced to a set of ordinary differential equations. We reconsider here the following relativistic system: a spherical shell of electrically charged dust which is moving radially in the Reissner-Nordström background of an already formed nonrotating black hole of mass M_1 and charge Q_1 , with $Q_1 \leq M_1$. The Einstein-Maxwell equations with a charged spherical dust as source are

$$G_{\mu\nu} = 8\pi \left[T_{\mu\nu}^{(d)} + T_{\mu\nu}^{(em)} \right], \quad \nabla_\mu F^{\nu\mu} = 4\pi j^\nu, \quad \nabla_{[\mu} F_{\nu\rho]} = 0, \quad (\text{F.7.10})$$

where

$$T_{\mu\nu}^{(d)} = \varepsilon u_\mu u_\nu, \quad T_{\mu\nu}^{(em)} = \frac{1}{4\pi} \left(F_\mu{}^\rho F_{\rho\nu} - \frac{1}{4} g_{\mu\nu} F^{\rho\sigma} F_{\rho\sigma} \right), \quad j^\mu = \sigma u^\mu. \quad (\text{F.7.11})$$

Here $T_{\mu\nu}^{(d)}$, $T_{\mu\nu}^{(em)}$ and j^μ are respectively the energy-momentum tensor of the dust, the energy-momentum tensor of the electromagnetic field $F_{\mu\nu}$ and the

charge 4-current. The mass and charge density in the comoving frame are given by ε , σ and u^a is the 4-velocity of the dust. In spherical-polar coordinates the line element is

$$ds^2 \equiv g_{\mu\nu} dx^\mu dx^\nu = -e^{v(r,t)} dt^2 + e^{\lambda(r,t)} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2, \quad (\text{F.7.12})$$

where $d\Omega^2 = d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2$.

We describe the shell by using the 4-dimensional Dirac distribution $\delta^{(4)}$ normalized as

$$\int \delta^{(4)}(x, x') \sqrt{-g} d^4x = 1 \quad (\text{F.7.13})$$

where $g = \det \|g_{\mu\nu}\|$. We then have

$$\varepsilon(x) = M_0 \int \delta^{(4)}(x, x_0) r^2 d\tau d\Omega, \quad (\text{F.7.14})$$

$$\sigma(x) = Q_0 \int \delta^{(4)}(x, x_0) r^2 d\tau d\Omega. \quad (\text{F.7.15})$$

M_0 and Q_0 respectively are the rest mass and the charge of the shell and τ is the proper time along the world surface $S : x_0 = x_0(\tau, \Omega)$ of the shell. S divides the space-time into two regions: an internal one \mathcal{M}_- and an external one \mathcal{M}_+ . As we will see in the next section for the description of the collapse we can choose either \mathcal{M}_- or \mathcal{M}_+ . The two descriptions, clearly equivalent, will be relevant for the physical interpretation of the solutions.

Introducing the orthonormal tetrad

$$\omega_{\pm}^{(0)} = f_{\pm}^{1/2} dt, \quad \omega_{\pm}^{(1)} = f_{\pm}^{-1/2} dr, \quad \omega^{(2)} = r d\theta, \quad \omega^{(3)} = r \sin \theta d\phi; \quad (\text{F.7.16})$$

we obtain the tetrad components of the electric field

$$E = E\omega^{(1)} = \begin{cases} \frac{Q}{r^2} \omega_+^{(1)} & \text{outside the shell} \\ \frac{Q_1}{r^2} \omega_-^{(1)} & \text{inside the shell} \end{cases}, \quad (\text{F.7.17})$$

where $Q = Q_0 + Q_1$ is the total charge of the system. From the G_{tt} Einstein equation we get

$$ds^2 = \begin{cases} -f_+ dt_+^2 + f_+^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2 & \text{outside the shell} \\ -f_- dt_-^2 + f_-^{-1} dr^2 + r^2 d\Omega^2 & \text{inside the shell} \end{cases}, \quad (\text{F.7.18})$$

where $f_+ = 1 - \frac{2M}{r} + \frac{Q^2}{r^2}$, $f_- = 1 - \frac{2M_1}{r} + \frac{Q_1^2}{r^2}$ and t_- and t_+ are the Schwarzschild-like time coordinates in \mathcal{M}_- and \mathcal{M}_+ respectively. Here M is the total mass-energy of the system formed by the shell and the black hole, measured by an observer at rest at infinity.

Indicating by r_0 the Schwarzschild-like radial coordinate of the shell and

by $t_{0\pm}$ its time coordinate, from the G_{tr} Einstein equation we have

$$\frac{M_0}{2} \left[f_+(r_0) \frac{dt_{0+}}{d\tau} + f_-(r_0) \frac{dt_{0-}}{d\tau} \right] = M - M_1 - \frac{Q_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q_1 Q_0}{r_0}. \quad (\text{F.7.19})$$

The remaining Einstein equations are identically satisfied. From (F.7.19) and the normalization condition $u_\mu u^\mu = -1$ we find

$$\begin{aligned} \left(\frac{dr_0}{d\tau} \right)^2 &= \frac{1}{M_0^2} \left(M - M_1 + \frac{M_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q_1 Q_0}{r_0} \right)^2 - f_-(r_0) \\ &= \frac{1}{M_0^2} \left(M - M_1 - \frac{M_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q_1 Q_0}{r_0} \right)^2 - f_+(r_0), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.7.20})$$

$$\frac{dt_{0\pm}}{d\tau} = \frac{1}{M_0 f_\pm(r_0)} \left(M - M_1 \mp \frac{M_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q_1 Q_0}{r_0} \right). \quad (\text{F.7.21})$$

We now define, as usual, $r_\pm \equiv M \pm \sqrt{M^2 - Q^2}$: when $Q < M$, r_\pm are real and they correspond to the horizons of the new black hole formed by the gravitational collapse of the shell. We similarly introduce the horizons $r_\pm^1 = M_1 \pm \sqrt{M_1^2 - Q_1^2}$ of the already formed black hole. From (F.7.19) we have that the inequality

$$M - M_1 - \frac{Q_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q_1 Q_0}{r_0} > 0 \quad (\text{F.7.22})$$

holds for $r_0 > r_+$ if $Q < M$ and for $r_0 > r_+^1$ if $Q > M$ since in these cases the left hand side of (F.7.19) is clearly positive. Eqs. (F.7.20) and (F.7.21) (together with (F.7.18), (F.7.17)) completely describe a 5-parameter (M, Q, M_1, Q_1, M_0) family of solutions of the Einstein-Maxwell equations.

For astrophysical applications Ruffini et al. (2003b) the trajectory of the shell $r_0 = r_0(t_{0+})$ is obtained as a function of the time coordinate t_{0+} relative to the space-time region \mathcal{M}_+ . In the following we drop the $+$ index from t_{0+} . From (F.7.20) and (F.7.21) we have

$$\frac{dr_0}{dt_0} = \frac{dr_0}{d\tau} \frac{d\tau}{dt_0} = \pm \frac{F}{\Omega} \sqrt{\Omega^2 - F}, \quad (\text{F.7.23})$$

where

$$F \equiv f_+(r_0) = 1 - \frac{2M}{r_0} + \frac{Q^2}{r_0^2}, \quad \Omega \equiv \Gamma - \frac{M_0^2 + Q^2 - Q_1^2}{2M_0 r_0}, \quad \Gamma \equiv \frac{M - M_1}{M_0}. \quad (\text{F.7.24})$$

Since we are interested in an imploding shell, only the minus sign case in (F.7.23) will be studied. We can give the following physical interpretation of Γ . If $M - M_1 \geq M_0$, Γ coincides with the Lorentz γ factor of the imploding

shell at infinity; from (F.7.23) it satisfies

$$\Gamma = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{dr_0}{dt_0}\right)^2}} \geq 1. \quad (\text{F.7.25})$$

When $M - M_1 < M_0$ then there is a *turning point* r_0^* , defined by $\left.\frac{dr_0}{dt_0}\right|_{r_0=r_0^*} = 0$. In this case Γ coincides with the “effective potential” at r_0^* :

$$\Gamma = \sqrt{f_-(r_0^*)} + M_0^{-1} \left(-\frac{M_0^2}{2r_0^*} + \frac{Q_0^2}{2r_0^*} + \frac{Q_1 Q_0}{r_0^*} \right) \leq 1. \quad (\text{F.7.26})$$

The solution of the differential equation (F.7.23) is given by:

$$\int dt_0 = - \int \frac{\Omega}{F\sqrt{\Omega^2 - F}} dr_0. \quad (\text{F.7.27})$$

The functional form of the integral (F.7.27) crucially depends on the degree of the polynomial $P(r_0) = r_0^2(\Omega^2 - F)$, which is generically two, but in special cases has lower values. We therefore distinguish the following cases:

1. $M = M_0 + M_1$; $Q_1 = M_1$; $Q = M$: $P(r_0)$ is equal to 0, we simply have

$$r_0(t_0) = \text{const}. \quad (\text{F.7.28})$$

2. $M = M_0 + M_1$; $M^2 - Q^2 = M_1^2 - Q_1^2$; $Q \neq M$: $P(r_0)$ is a constant, we have

$$t_0 = \text{const} + \frac{1}{2\sqrt{M^2 - Q^2}} \left[(r_0 + 2)r_0 + r_+^2 \log\left(\frac{r_0 - r_+}{M}\right) + r_-^2 \log\left(\frac{r_0 - r_-}{M}\right) \right]. \quad (\text{F.7.29})$$

3. $M = M_0 + M_1$; $M^2 - Q^2 \neq M_1^2 - Q_1^2$: $P(r_0)$ is a first order polynomial and

$$\begin{aligned} t_0 = \text{const} + 2r_0 \sqrt{\Omega^2 - F} & \left[\frac{M_0 r_0}{3(M^2 - Q^2 - M_1^2 + Q_1^2)} \right. \\ & + \frac{(M_0^2 + Q^2 - Q_1^2)^2 - 9MM_0(M_0^2 + Q^2 - Q_1^2) + 12M^2 M_0^2 + 2Q^2 M_0^2}{3(M^2 - Q^2 - M_1^2 + Q_1^2)^2} \Big] \\ & - \frac{1}{\sqrt{M^2 - Q^2}} \left[r_+^2 \operatorname{arctanh}\left(\frac{r_0}{r_+} \frac{\sqrt{\Omega^2 - F}}{\Omega_+}\right) - r_-^2 \operatorname{arctanh}\left(\frac{r_0}{r_-} \frac{\sqrt{\Omega^2 - F}}{\Omega_-}\right) \right], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.7.30})$$

where $\Omega_{\pm} \equiv \Omega(r_{\pm})$.

4. $M \neq M_0 + M_1$: $P(r_0)$ is a second order polynomial and

$$\begin{aligned}
 t_0 = \text{const} - \frac{1}{2\sqrt{M^2 - Q^2}} & \left\{ \frac{2\Gamma\sqrt{M^2 - Q^2}}{\Gamma^2 - 1} r_0 \sqrt{\Omega^2 - F} \right. \\
 & + r_+^2 \log \left[\frac{r_0 \sqrt{\Omega^2 - F}}{r_0 - r_+} + \frac{r_+^2(\Omega^2 - F) + r_+^2 \Omega_+^2 - (\Gamma^2 - 1)(r_0 - r_+)^2}{2(r_0 - r_+)r_0 \sqrt{\Omega^2 - F}} \right] \\
 & - r_-^2 \log \left[\frac{r_0 \sqrt{\Omega^2 - F}}{r_0 - r_-} + \frac{r_-^2(\Omega^2 - F) + r_-^2 \Omega_-^2 - (\Gamma^2 - 1)(r_0 - r_-)^2}{2(r_0 - r_-)r_0 \sqrt{\Omega^2 - F}} \right] \\
 & - \frac{[2MM_0(2\Gamma^3 - 3\Gamma) + M_0^2 + Q^2 - Q_1^2]\sqrt{M^2 - Q^2}}{M_0(\Gamma^2 - 1)^{3/2}} \log \left[\frac{r_0}{M} \sqrt{\Omega^2 - F} \right. \\
 & \left. \left. + \frac{2M_0(\Gamma^2 - 1)r_0 - (M_0^2 + Q^2 - Q_1^2)\Gamma + 2M_0M}{2M_0M\sqrt{\Gamma^2 - 1}} \right] \right\}. \quad (\text{F.7.31})
 \end{aligned}$$

In the case of a shell falling in a flat background ($M_1 = Q_1 = 0$) it is of particular interest to study the *turning points* r_0^* of the shell trajectory. In this case equation (F.7.20) reduces to

$$\left(\frac{dr_0}{d\tau} \right)^2 = \frac{1}{M_0^2} \left(M + \frac{M_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q^2}{2r_0} \right)^2 - 1. \quad (\text{F.7.32})$$

Case (2) has no counterpart in this new regime and Eq. (F.7.22) constrains the possible solutions to only the following cases:

1. $M = M_0$; $Q = M_0$. $r_0 = r_0(0)$ constantly.
2. $M = M_0$; $Q < M_0$. There are no turning points, the shell starts at rest at infinity and collapses until a Reissner-Nordström black-hole is formed with horizons at $r_0 = r_{\pm} \equiv M \pm \sqrt{M^2 - Q^2}$ and the singularity in $r_0 = 0$.
3. $M \neq M_0$. There is one turning point r_0^* .
 - a) $M < M_0$, then necessarily is $Q < M_0$. Positivity of rhs of (F.7.32) requires $r_0 \leq r_0^*$, where $r_0^* = \frac{1}{2} \frac{Q^2 - M_0^2}{M - M_0}$ is the unique turning point. Then the shell starts from r_0^* and collapses until the singularity at $r_0 = 0$ is reached.
 - b) $M > M_0$. The shell has finite radial velocity at infinity.
 - i. $Q \leq M_0$. The dynamics are qualitatively analogous to case (2).
 - ii. $Q > M_0$. Positivity of the rhs of (F.7.32) and (F.7.22) requires that $r_0 \geq r_0^*$, where $r_0^* = \frac{1}{2} \frac{Q^2 - M_0^2}{M - M_0}$. The shell starts from infinity and bounces at $r_0 = r_0^*$, reversing its motion.

In this regime the analytic forms of the solutions are given by Eqs. (F.7.30) and (F.7.31), simply setting $M_1 = Q_1 = 0$.

Of course, it is of particular interest for the issue of vacuum polarization the time varying electric field $E_{r_0} = \frac{Q}{r_0^2}$ on the external surface of the shell. In order to study the variability of E_{r_0} with time it is useful to consider in the tridimensional space of parameters (r_0, t_0, E_{r_0}) the parametric curve $\mathcal{C} : (r_0 = \lambda, \quad t_0 = t_0(\lambda), \quad E_{r_0} = \frac{Q}{\lambda^2})$. In astrophysical applications Ruffini et al. (2003b) we are specially interested in the family of solutions such that $\frac{dr_0}{dt_0}$ is 0 when $r_0 = \infty$ which implies that $\Gamma = 1$. In Fig. F.6 we plot the collapse curves in the plane (t_0, r_0) for different values of the parameter $\xi \equiv \frac{Q}{M}$, $0 < \xi < 1$. The initial data are chosen so that the integration constant in Eq. (F.7.30) is equal to 0. In all the cases we can follow the details of the approach to the horizon which is reached in an infinite Schwarzschild time coordinate.

In Fig. F.7 we plot the parametric curves \mathcal{C} in the space (r_0, t_0, E_{r_0}) for different values of ξ . Again we can follow the exact asymptotic behavior of the curves \mathcal{C} , E_{r_0} reaching the asymptotic value $\frac{Q}{r_+^2}$. The detailed knowledge of this asymptotic behavior is of relevance for the observational properties of the black hole formation, see e.g. Ruffini and Vitagliano (2002), Ruffini et al. (2003b).

F.8. The maximum energy extractable from a black hole

The theoretical analysis of the collapsing shell considered in the previous section allows to reach a deeper understanding of the mass formula of black holes at least in the case of a Reissner-Nordström black hole. This allows as well to give an expression of the irreducible mass of the black hole only in terms of its kinetic energy of the initial rest mass undergoing gravitational collapse and its gravitational energy and kinetic energy at the crossing of the black hole horizon. It also allows to create a scenario for acceleration of the ultra high energy cosmic rays with energy typically 10^{21} eV from black holes, as opposed to the process of vacuum polarization occurring in the MeV region. We shall follow in this Section the treatment by Ruffini and Vitagliano Ruffini and Vitagliano (2003).

F.8.1. The formula of the irreducible mass of a black hole

The main objective of this section is to clarify the interpretation of the mass-energy formula Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971) for a black hole. For simplicity we study the case of a nonrotating black hole using the results presented in the previous section. As we saw there, the collapse of a nonrotating

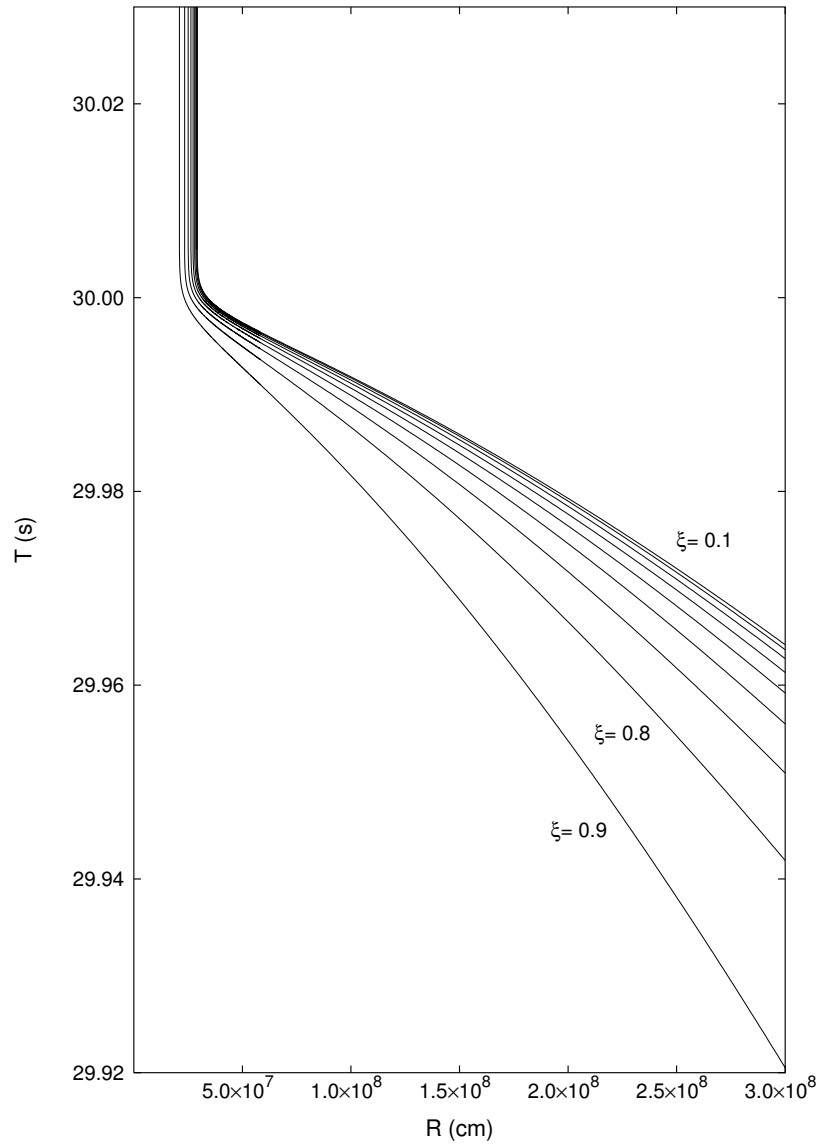


Figure F.6.: Collapse curves in the plane (T, R) for $M = 20M_{\odot}$ and for different values of the parameter ξ . The asymptotic behavior is the clear manifestation of general relativistic effects as the horizon of the black hole is approached. Details in Cherubini et al. (2002).

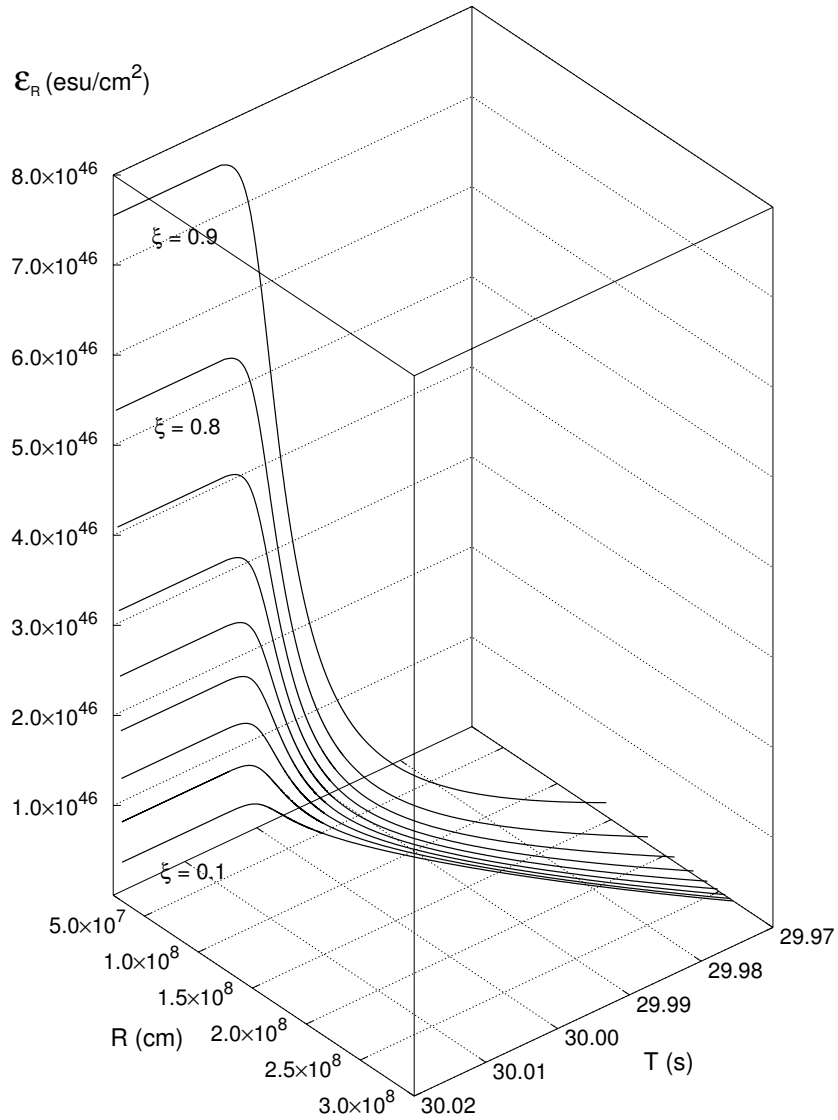


Figure F.7.: Electric field behaviour at the surface of the shell for $M = 20M_{\odot}$ and for different values of the parameter ξ . The asymptotic behavior is the clear manifestation of general relativistic effects as the horizon of the black hole is approached. Details in Cherubini et al. (2002).

charged shell can be described by exact analytic solutions of the Einstein-Maxwell equations. Consider to two complementary regions in which the world surface of the shell divides the space-time: \mathcal{M}_- and \mathcal{M}_+ . They are static space-times; we denote their time-like Killing vectors by ζ_-^μ and ζ_+^μ respectively. \mathcal{M}_+ is foliated by the family $\{\Sigma_t^+ : t_+ = t\}$ of space-like hypersurfaces of constant t_+ .

The splitting of the space-time into the regions \mathcal{M}_- and \mathcal{M}_+ allows two physically equivalent descriptions of the collapse and the use of one or the other depends on the question one is studying. The use of \mathcal{M}_- proves helpful for the identification of the physical constituents of the irreducible mass while \mathcal{M}_+ is needed to describe the energy extraction process from black hole. The equation of motion for the shell, Eq. F.7.20, reduces in this case to

$$\left(M_0 \frac{dr_0}{d\tau}\right)^2 = \left(M + \frac{M_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q^2}{2r_0}\right)^2 - M_0^2 \quad (\text{F.8.1})$$

in \mathcal{M}_- and

$$\left(M_0 \frac{dr_0}{d\tau}\right)^2 = \left(M - \frac{M_0^2}{2r_0} - \frac{Q^2}{2r_0}\right)^2 - M_0^2 f_+ \quad (\text{F.8.2})$$

in \mathcal{M}_+ . The constraint F.7.22 becomes

$$M - \frac{Q^2}{2r_0} > 0. \quad (\text{F.8.3})$$

Since \mathcal{M}_- is a flat space-time we can interpret $-\frac{M_0^2}{2r_0}$ in (F.8.1) as the gravitational binding energy of the system. $\frac{Q^2}{2r_0}$ is its electromagnetic energy. Then Eqs. (F.8.1), (F.8.2) differ by the gravitational and electromagnetic self-energy terms from the corresponding equations of motion of a test particle.

Introducing the total radial momentum $P^r \equiv M_0 u^r = M_0 \frac{dr_0}{d\tau}$ of the shell, we can express the kinetic energy of the shell as measured by static observers in \mathcal{M}_- as $T \equiv -M_0 u_\mu \zeta_-^\mu - M_0 = \sqrt{(P^r)^2 + M_0^2} - M_0$. Then from Eq. (F.8.1) we have

$$M = -\frac{M_0^2}{2r_0} + \frac{Q^2}{2r_0} + \sqrt{(P^r)^2 + M_0^2} = M_0 + T - \frac{M_0^2}{2r_0} + \frac{Q^2}{2r_0}. \quad (\text{F.8.4})$$

where we choose the positive root solution due to the constraint (F.8.3). Eq. (F.8.4) is the *mass formula* of the shell, which depends on the time-dependent radial coordinate r_0 and kinetic energy T . If $M \geq Q$, a black hole is formed and we have

$$M = M_0 + T_+ - \frac{M_0^2}{2r_+} + \frac{Q^2}{2r_+}, \quad (\text{F.8.5})$$

where $T_+ \equiv T(r_+)$ and $r_+ = M + \sqrt{M^2 - Q^2}$ is the radius of the external horizon of that

$$M = M_{\text{ir}} + \frac{Q^2}{2r_+}, \quad (\text{F.8.6})$$

so it follows that

$$M_{\text{ir}} = M_0 - \frac{M_0^2}{2r_+} + T_+, \quad (\text{F.8.7})$$

namely that M_{ir} is the sum of only three contributions: the rest mass M_0 , the gravitational potential energy and the kinetic energy of the rest mass evaluated at the horizon. M_{ir} is independent of the electromagnetic energy, a fact noticed by Bekenstein (1971). We have taken one further step here by identifying the independent physical contributions to M_{ir} . This will have important consequences for the energetics of black hole formation (see Ruffini and Vitagliano (2002)).

Next we consider the physical interpretation of the electromagnetic term $\frac{Q^2}{2r_0}$, which can be obtained by evaluating the Killing integral

$$\int_{\Sigma_t^+} \xi_+^\mu T_{\mu\nu}^{(\text{em})} d\Sigma^\nu = \int_{r_0}^\infty r^2 dr \int_0^1 d\cos\theta \int_0^{2\pi} d\phi T^{(\text{em})}_0{}^0 = \frac{Q^2}{2r_0}, \quad (\text{F.8.8})$$

where Σ_t^+ is the space-like hypersurface in \mathcal{M}_+ described by the equation $t_+ = t = \text{const}$, with $d\Sigma^\nu$ as its surface element vector. The quantity in Eq. (F.8.8) differs from the purely electromagnetic energy

$$\int_{\Sigma_t^+} n_+^\mu T_{\mu\nu}^{(\text{em})} d\Sigma^\nu = \frac{1}{2} \int_{r_0}^\infty dr \sqrt{g_{rr}} \frac{Q^2}{r^2}, \quad (\text{F.8.9})$$

where $n_+^\mu = f_+^{-1/2} \xi_+^\mu$ is the unit normal to the integration hypersurface and $g_{rr} = f_+$. This is similar to the analogous situation for the total energy of a static spherical star of energy density ϵ within a radius r_0 , $m(r_0) = 4\pi \int_0^{r_0} dr r^2 \epsilon$, which differs from the pure matter energy

$$m_p(r_0) = 4\pi \int_0^{r_0} dr \sqrt{g_{rr}} r^2 \epsilon$$

by the gravitational energy (see Misner et al. (1973)). Therefore the term $\frac{Q^2}{2r_0}$ in the mass formula (F.8.4) is the *total* energy of the electromagnetic field and includes its own gravitational binding energy. This energy is stored throughout the region \mathcal{M}_+ , extending from r_0 to infinity.

F.8.2. Extracting electromagnetic energy from a subcritical and overcritical blackhole

We now turn to the problem of extracting the electromagnetic energy from a black hole (see Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971)). We can distinguish between two conceptually physically different processes, depending on whether the electric field strength $E = \frac{Q}{r^2}$ is smaller or greater than the critical value

E_c . The maximum value $E_+ = \frac{Q}{r_+^2}$ of the electric field around a black hole is reached at the horizon. In what follows we restore G , \hbar and c and then have the following:

For $E_+ < E_c$ the leading energy extraction mechanism consists of a sequence of discrete elementary decay processes of a particle into two oppositely charged particles. The condition $E_+ < E_c$ implies

$$\xi \equiv \frac{Q}{\sqrt{GM}} \lesssim \begin{cases} \frac{GM/c^2}{\lambda_C} \left(\frac{e}{\sqrt{Gm_e}} \right)^{-1} \sim 10^{-6} \frac{M}{M_\odot} & \text{if } \frac{M}{M_\odot} \leq 10^6 \\ 1 & \text{if } \frac{M}{M_\odot} > 10^6 \end{cases}, \quad (\text{F.8.10})$$

where λ_C is the Compton wavelength of the electron. Denardo and Ruffini (1973) and Denardo, Hively and Ruffini (1974) have defined as the *effective ergosphere* the region around a black hole where the energy extraction processes occur. This region extends from the horizon r_+ up to a radius

$$r_{\text{Eerg}} = \frac{GM}{c^2} \left[1 + \sqrt{1 - \xi^2 \left(1 - \frac{e^2}{Gm_e^2} \right)} \right] \simeq \frac{e}{m_e} \frac{Q}{c^2}. \quad (\text{F.8.11})$$

The energy extraction occurs in a finite number N_{PD} of such discrete elementary processes, each one corresponding to a decrease of the black hole charge. We have

$$N_{\text{PD}} \simeq \frac{Q}{e}. \quad (\text{F.8.12})$$

Since the total extracted energy is (see Eq. (F.8.6)) $\mathcal{E}^{\text{tot}} = \frac{Q^2}{2r_+}$, we obtain for the mean energy per accelerated particle $\langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{PD}} = \frac{\mathcal{E}^{\text{tot}}}{N_{\text{PD}}}$

$$\langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{PD}} = \frac{Qe}{2r_+} = \frac{1}{2} \frac{\xi}{1 + \sqrt{1 - \xi^2}} \frac{e}{\sqrt{Gm_e}} m_e c^2 \simeq \frac{1}{2} \xi \frac{e}{\sqrt{Gm_e}} m_e c^2, \quad (\text{F.8.13})$$

which gives

$$\langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{PD}} \lesssim \begin{cases} \frac{M}{M_\odot} 10^{21} \text{ eV} & \text{if } \frac{M}{M_\odot} \leq 10^6 \\ 10^{27} \text{ eV} & \text{if } \frac{M}{M_\odot} > 10^6 \end{cases}. \quad (\text{F.8.14})$$

One of the crucial aspects of the energy extraction process from a black hole is its back reaction on the irreducible mass expressed in Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971). Although the energy extraction processes can occur in the entire effective ergosphere defined by Eq. (F.8.11), only the limiting processes occurring on the horizon with zero kinetic energy can reach the maximum efficiency while approaching the condition of total reversibility (see Fig. 2 in Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971) for details). The farther from the horizon that a decay occurs, the more it increases the irreducible mass and loses efficiency. Only in the complete reversibility limit Christodoulou and Ruffini

(1971) can the energy extraction process from an extreme black hole reach the upper value of 50% of the total black hole energy.

For $E_+ \geq E_c$ the leading extraction process is the *collective* process based on the optically thick electron-positron plasma generated by the vacuum polarization. The condition $E_+ \geq E_c$ implies

$$\frac{GM/c^2}{\lambda_C} \left(\frac{e}{\sqrt{Gm_e}} \right)^{-1} \simeq 2 \cdot 10^{-6} \frac{M}{M_\odot} \leq \xi \leq 1. \quad (\text{F.8.15})$$

This vacuum polarization process can occur only for a black hole with mass smaller than $2 \cdot 10^6 M_\odot$. The electron-positron pairs are now produced in the Dyadosphere of the black hole. We have

$$r_{\text{dya}} \ll r_{\text{Eerg}}. \quad (\text{F.8.16})$$

The number of particles created Preparata et al. (1998) is then

$$N_{\text{dya}} = \frac{1}{3} \left(\frac{r_{\text{dya}}}{\lambda_C} \right) \left(1 - \frac{r_+}{r_{\text{dya}}} \right) \left[4 + \frac{r_+}{r_{\text{dya}}} + \left(\frac{r_+}{r_{\text{dya}}} \right)^2 \right] \frac{Q}{e} \simeq \frac{4}{3} \left(\frac{r_{\text{dya}}}{\lambda_C} \right) \frac{Q}{e}. \quad (\text{F.8.17})$$

The total energy stored in the dyadosphere is Preparata et al. (1998)

$$\mathcal{E}_{\text{dya}}^{\text{tot}} = \left(1 - \frac{r_+}{r_{\text{dya}}} \right) \left[1 - \left(\frac{r_+}{r_{\text{dya}}} \right)^4 \right] \frac{Q^2}{2r_+} \simeq \frac{Q^2}{2r_+}. \quad (\text{F.8.18})$$

The mean energy per particle produced in the Dyadosphere $\langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{dya}} = \frac{\mathcal{E}_{\text{dya}}^{\text{tot}}}{N_{\text{dya}}}$ is then

$$\langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{dya}} = \frac{3}{2} \frac{1 - \left(\frac{r_+}{r_{\text{dya}}} \right)^4}{4 + \frac{r_+}{r_{\text{dya}}} + \left(\frac{r_+}{r_{\text{dya}}} \right)^2} \left(\frac{\lambda_C}{r_{\text{dya}}} \right) \frac{Qe}{r_+} \simeq \frac{3}{8} \left(\frac{\lambda_C}{r_{\text{dya}}} \right) \frac{Qe}{r_+}, \quad (\text{F.8.19})$$

which can be also rewritten as

$$\langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{dya}} \simeq \frac{3}{8} \left(\frac{r_{\text{dya}}}{r_+} \right) m_e c^2 \sim \sqrt{\frac{\xi}{M/M_\odot}} 10^5 \text{keV}. \quad (\text{F.8.20})$$

We stress again that the vacuum polarization around a black hole has been observed to reach theoretically the maximum efficiency limit of 50% of the total mass-energy of an extreme black hole (see e.g. Preparata et al. (1998)).

Let us now compare and contrast these two processes. We have

$$r_{\text{Eerg}} \simeq \left(\frac{r_{\text{dya}}}{\lambda_C} \right) r_{\text{dya}}, \quad N_{\text{dya}} \simeq \left(\frac{r_{\text{dya}}}{\lambda_C} \right) N_{\text{PD}}, \quad \langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{dya}} \simeq \left(\frac{\lambda_C}{r_{\text{dya}}} \right) \langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{PD}}. \quad (\text{F.8.21})$$

Moreover we see (Eqs. (F.8.14), (F.8.20)) that $\langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{PD}}$ is in the range of energies of UHECR (see Nagano and Watson (2000) and references therein), while for $\xi \sim 0.1$ and $M \sim 10M_\odot$, $\langle \mathcal{E} \rangle_{\text{dya}}$ is in the gamma ray range. In other words,

the discrete particle decay process involves a small number of particles with ultra high energies ($\sim 10^{21}eV$), while vacuum polarization involves a much larger number of particles with lower mean energies ($\sim 10MeV$).

F.9. A theorem on a possible disagreement between black holes and thermodynamics

This analysis of vacuum polarization process around black holes is so general that it allows as well to look back to traditional results on black hole physics with an alternative point of view. We quote in particular a result which allows to overcome a claimed inconsistency between general relativity and thermodynamics in the field of black holes.

It is well known that if a spherically symmetric mass distribution without any electromagnetic structure undergoes free gravitational collapse, its total mass-energy M is conserved according to the Birkhoff theorem: the increase in the kinetic energy of implosion is balanced by the increase in the gravitational energy of the system. If one considers the possibility that part of the kinetic energy of implosion is extracted then the situation is very different: configurations of smaller mass-energy and greater density can be attained without violating Birkhoff theorem in view of the radiation process.

From a theoretical physics point of view it is still an open question how far such a sequence can go: using causality non violating interactions, can one find a sequence of braking and energy extraction processes by which the density and the gravitational binding energy can increase indefinitely and the mass-energy of the collapsed object be reduced at will? This question can also be formulated in the mass-formula language Christodoulou and Ruffini (1971) (see also Ref. Ruffini and Vitagliano (2002)): given a collapsing core of nucleons with a given rest mass-energy M_0 , what is the minimum irreducible mass of the black hole which is formed?

Following the previous two sections, consider a spherical shell of rest mass M_0 collapsing in a flat space-time. In the neutral case the irreducible mass of the final black hole satisfies Eq. F.8.7. The minimum irreducible mass $M_{\text{irr}}^{(\text{min})}$ is obtained when the kinetic energy at the horizon T_+ is 0, that is when the entire kinetic energy T_+ has been extracted. We then obtain, from Eq. F.8.7, the simple result

$$M_{\text{irr}}^{(\text{min})} = \frac{M_0}{2}. \quad (\text{F.9.1})$$

We conclude that in the gravitational collapse of a spherical shell of rest mass M_0 at rest at infinity (initial energy $M_i = M_0$), an energy up to 50% of $M_0 c^2$ can in principle be extracted, by braking processes of the kinetic energy. In this limiting case the shell crosses the horizon with $T_+ = 0$. The limit $\frac{M_0}{2}$ in the extractable kinetic energy can further increase if the collapsing shell

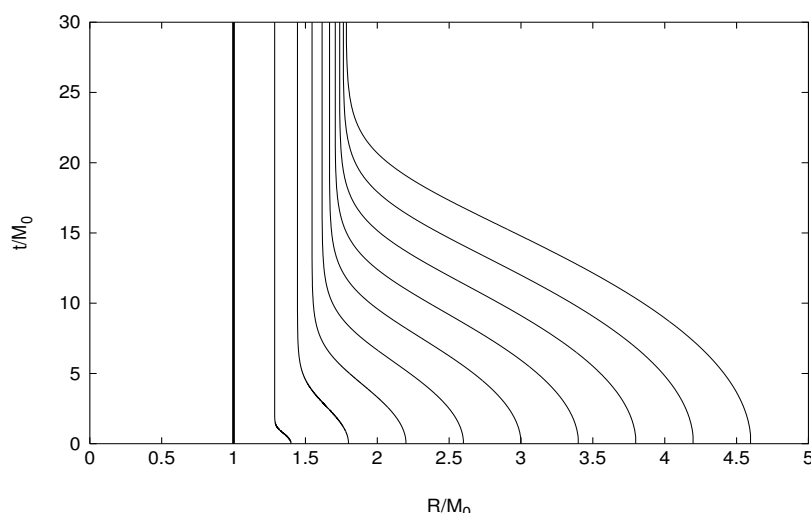


Figure F.8.: Collapse curves for neutral shells with rest mass M_0 starting at rest at selected radii R^* computed by using the exact solutions given in Ref. Cherubini et al. (2002). A different value of M_{irr} (and therefore of r_+) corresponds to each curve. The time parameter is the Schwarzschild time coordinate t and the asymptotic behaviour at the respective horizons is evident. The limiting configuration $M_{\text{irr}} = \frac{M_0}{2}$ (solid line) corresponds to the case in which the shell is trapped, at the very beginning of its motion, by the formation of the horizon.

is endowed with kinetic energy at infinity, since all that kinetic energy is in principle extractable.

We have represented in Fig. F.8 the world lines of spherical shells of the same rest mass M_0 , starting their gravitational collapse at rest at selected radii r_0^* . These initial conditions can be implemented by performing suitable braking of the collapsing shell and concurrent kinetic energy extraction processes at progressively smaller radii (see also Fig. F.9). The reason for the existence of the minimum (F.9.1) in the black hole mass is the “self closure” occurring by the formation of a horizon in the initial configuration (thick line in Fig. F.8).

Is the limit $M_{\text{irr}} \rightarrow \frac{M_0}{2}$ actually attainable without violating causality? Let us consider a collapsing shell with charge Q . If $M \geq Q$ a black hole is formed. As pointed out in the previous section the irreducible mass of the final black hole does not depend on the charge Q . Therefore Eqs. (F.8.7) and (F.9.1) still hold in the charged case. In Fig. F.9 we consider the special case in which the shell is initially at rest at infinity, i.e. has initial energy $M_i = M_0$, for three different values of the charge Q . We plot the initial energy M_i , the energy of the system when all the kinetic energy of implosion has been extracted as well as the sum of the rest mass energy and the gravitational binding energy $-\frac{M_0^2}{2r_0}$

of the system (here r_0 is the radius of the shell). In the extreme case $Q = M_0$, the shell is in equilibrium at all radii (see Ref. Cherubini et al. (2002)) and the kinetic energy is identically zero. In all three cases, the sum of the extractable kinetic energy T and the electromagnetic energy $\frac{Q^2}{2r_0}$ reaches 50% of the rest mass energy at the horizon, according to Eq. (F.9.1).

What is the role of the electromagnetic field here? If we consider the case of a charged shell with $Q \simeq M_0$, the electromagnetic repulsion implements the braking process and the extractable energy is entirely stored in the electromagnetic field surrounding the black hole (see Ref. Ruffini and Vitagliano (2002)). We emphasize here that the extraction of 50% of the mass-energy of a black hole is not specifically linked to the electromagnetic field but depends on three factors: a) the increase of the gravitational energy during the collapse, b) the formation of a horizon, c) the reduction of the kinetic energy of implosion. Such conditions are naturally met during the formation of an extreme black hole with $Q = M$, but as we have seen, they are more general and can indeed occur in a variety of different situations, e.g. during the formation of a Schwarzschild black hole by a suitable extraction of the kinetic energy of implosion (see Fig. F.8 and Fig. F.9).

Before closing let us consider a test particle of mass m in the gravitational field of an already formed Schwarzschild black hole of mass M and go through such a sequence of braking and energy extraction processes. Kaplan Kaplan (1949) found for the energy \mathcal{E} of the particle as a function of the radius r

$$\mathcal{E} = m\sqrt{1 - \frac{2M}{r}}. \quad (\text{F.9.2})$$

It would appear from this formula that the entire energy of a particle could be extracted in the limit $r \rightarrow 2M$. Such 100% efficiency of energy extraction has often been quoted as evidence for incompatibility between General Relativity and the second principle of Thermodynamics (see Ref. Bekenstein (1973) and references therein). J. Bekenstein and S. Hawking have gone as far as to consider General Relativity not to be a complete theory and to conclude that in order to avoid inconsistencies with thermodynamics, the theory should be implemented through a quantum description Bekenstein (1973); Hawking (1974, 1975); Gibbons and Hawking (1977). Einstein himself often expressed the opposite point of view (see, e.g., Ref. Dyson (2002) and references therein).

The analytic treatment presented in Sec. F.7.2 can clarify this fundamental issue. It allows to express the energy increase \mathcal{E} of a black hole of mass M_1 through the accretion of a shell of mass M_0 starting its motion at rest at a radius r_0 in the following formula which generalizes Eq. (F.9.2):

$$\mathcal{E} \equiv M - M_1 = -\frac{M_0^2}{2r_0} + M_0\sqrt{1 - \frac{2M_1}{r_0}}, \quad (\text{F.9.3})$$

where $M = M_1 + \mathcal{E}$ is clearly the mass-energy of the final black hole. This

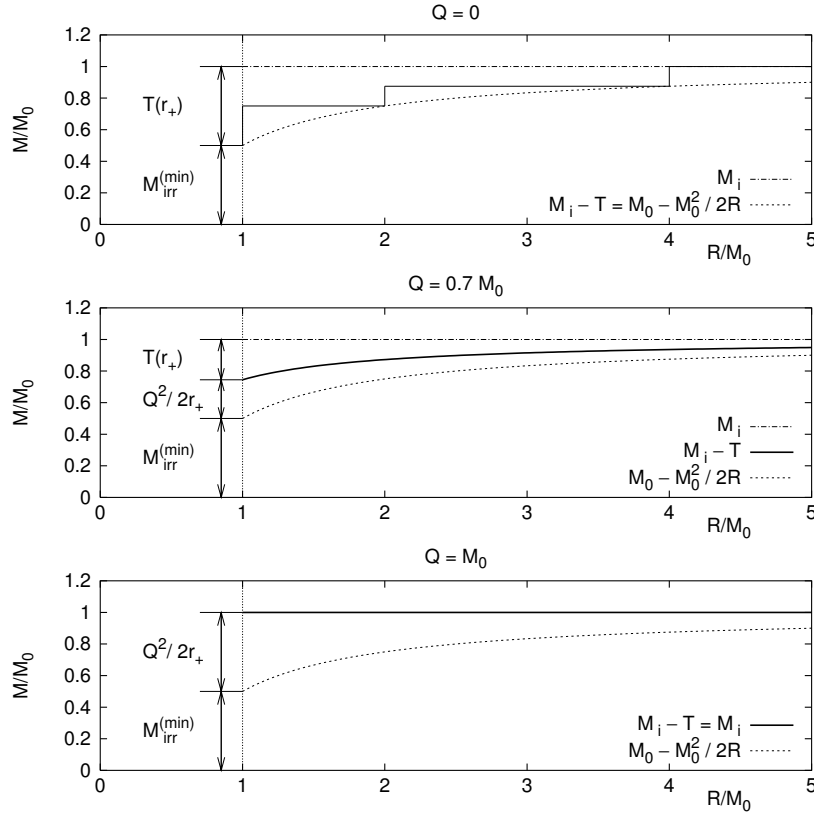


Figure F.9.: Energetics of a shell such that $M_i = M_0$, for selected values of the charge. In the first diagram $Q = 0$; the dashed line represents the total energy for a gravitational collapse without any braking process as a function of the radius R of the shell; the solid, stepwise line represents a collapse with suitable braking of the kinetic energy of implosion at selected radii; the dotted line represents the rest mass energy plus the gravitational binding energy. In the second and third diagram $Q/M_0 = 0.7$, $Q/M_0 = 1$ respectively; the dashed and the dotted lines have the same meaning as above; the solid lines represent the total energy minus the kinetic energy. The region between the solid line and the dotted line corresponds to the stored electromagnetic energy. The region between the dashed line and the solid line corresponds to the kinetic energy of collapse. In all the cases the sum of the kinetic energy and the electromagnetic energy at the horizon is 50% of M_0 . Both the electromagnetic and the kinetic energy are extractable. It is most remarkable that the same underlying process occurs in the three cases: the role of the electromagnetic interaction is twofold: a) to reduce the kinetic energy of implosion by the Coulomb repulsion of the shell; b) to store such an energy in the region around the black hole. The stored electromagnetic energy is extractable as shown in Ref. Ruffini and Vitagliano (2002)

formula differs from the Kaplan formula (F.9.2) in three respects: a) it takes into account the increase of the horizon area due to the accretion of the shell; b) it shows the role of the gravitational self energy of the imploding shell; c) it expresses the combined effects of a) and b) in an exact closed formula.

The minimum value \mathcal{E}_{\min} of \mathcal{E} is attained for the minimum value of the radius $r_0 = 2M$: the horizon of the final black hole. This corresponds to the maximum efficiency of the energy extraction. We have

$$\mathcal{E}_{\min} = -\frac{M_0^2}{4M} + M_0 \sqrt{1 - \frac{M_1}{M}} = -\frac{M_0^2}{4(M_1 + \mathcal{E}_{\min})} + M_0 \sqrt{1 - \frac{M_1}{M_1 + \mathcal{E}_{\min}}}, \quad (\text{F.9.4})$$

or solving the quadratic equation and choosing the positive solution for physical reasons

$$\mathcal{E}_{\min} = \frac{1}{2} \left(\sqrt{M_1^2 + M_0^2} - M_1 \right). \quad (\text{F.9.5})$$

The corresponding efficiency of energy extraction is

$$\eta_{\max} = \frac{M_0 - \mathcal{E}_{\min}}{M_0} = 1 - \frac{1}{2} \frac{M_1}{M_0} \left(\sqrt{1 + \frac{M_0^2}{M_1^2}} - 1 \right), \quad (\text{F.9.6})$$

which is strictly *smaller than* 100% for *any* given $M_0 \neq 0$. It is interesting that this analytic formula, in the limit $M_1 \ll M_0$, properly reproduces the result of equation (F.9.1), corresponding to an efficiency of 50%. In the opposite limit $M_1 \gg M_0$ we have

$$\eta_{\max} \simeq 1 - \frac{1}{4} \frac{M_0}{M_1}. \quad (\text{F.9.7})$$

Only for $M_0 \rightarrow 0$, Eq. (F.9.6) corresponds to an efficiency of 100% and correctly represents the limiting reversible transformations. It seems that the difficulties of reconciling General Relativity and Thermodynamics are ascribable not to an incompleteness of General Relativity but to the use of the Kaplan formula in a regime in which it is not valid.

G. Plasma oscillations in electric fields

We have seen in the previous chapters the application of the Sauter-Heisenberg-Euler-Schwinger process for electron-positron pair production in the heavy nuclei, in the laser and in the last chapter in the field of black holes. The case of black holes is drastically different from all the previous ones. The number of electron-positron pairs created is of the order of 10^{60} , the plasma expected is optically thick and is very different from the nuclear collisions and laser case where pairs are very few and therefore optically thin. The following dynamical aspects need to be addressed.

1. the back reaction of pair production on the external electric field;
2. the screening effect of pairs on the external electric field strengths;
3. the motion of pairs and their interactions.

When these dynamics are considered, the pair production in an external electric field is no longer only a process of quantum tunneling in a constant static electric field. In fact, it turns out to be a much more complex process during which all the three above mentioned dynamics play an important role. More precisely, a phenomenon of electron-positron oscillation, *plasma oscillation*, takes place. We are going to discuss such plasma oscillation phenomenon in this chapter. As we will see in this chapter these phenomena can become also relevant for heavy ion collisions. After giving the basic equations for description of plasma oscillations we give first some applications in the field of heavy ions. In this Chapter in all formulas we use $c = \hbar = 1$.

G.1. Semiclassical theory of plasma oscillations in electric fields

In the semi classical QED Cooper and Mottola (1987, 1989), one quantize only the Dirac field $\psi(x)$, while an external electromagnetic field $A^\mu(x)$ is treated classically as a mean field. This is the self-consistent mean-field or Gaussian approximation that can be formally derived as the leading term in the large- N limit of QED, where N is the number of charged matter fields Cooper

and Mottola (1989); Boyanovsky and de Vega (1993); Boyanovsky et al. (1994, 1995, 1996). The motion of these electrons can be described by a Dirac equation in an external classical electromagnetic potential $A^\mu(x)$,

$$[\gamma_\mu(i\partial^\mu - eA^\mu) - m]\psi(x) = 0 \quad (\text{G.1.1})$$

and the semi classical Maxwell equation,

$$\partial_\mu F^{\mu\nu} = \langle j^\nu(x) \rangle, \quad j^\nu(x) = i\frac{e}{2}[\bar{\psi}(x), \gamma^\nu \psi(x)], \quad (\text{G.1.2})$$

where $j^\nu(x)$ is the electron and positron current and the expectation value is with respect to the quantum states of the electron field. The dynamics that these equations describe are not only the motion of electron and positron pairs, but also their back reaction on the external electromagnetic field. The resultant phenomenon is the so-called plasma oscillation that we will discuss based on both a simplified model of semi classical scalar QED and kinetic Boltzmann-Vlasov equation as presented in Refs. Cooper and Mottola (1987, 1989); Kluger et al. (1991); Best and Eisenberg (1993); Kluger et al. (1998).

A scheme for solving the back reaction problem in scalar QED was offered in Refs. Cooper and Mottola (1987, 1989). Based on this scheme, a numerical analysis was made in (1+1) dimensional case Kluger et al. (1991). Eqs. (G.1.1), (G.1.2) are replaced by the scalar-QED coupled equations for a charged scalar field $\Phi(x)$,

$$[(i\partial^\mu - eA^\mu)^2 - m_e^2]\Phi(x) = 0. \quad (\text{G.1.3})$$

The current $j^\nu(x)$ of the charged scalar field in the semi classical Maxwell equations (G.1.2) is,

$$j^\nu(x) = i\frac{e}{2}[\Phi^*(x)\partial^\nu\Phi(x) - \Phi(x)\partial^\nu\Phi^*(x)]. \quad (\text{G.1.4})$$

Now, consider a spatially homogeneous electric field $\mathbf{E} = E_z(t)\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ in the $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ direction. A corresponding gauge potential is $\mathbf{A} = A_z(t)\hat{\mathbf{z}}$, $A_0 = 0$. Defining $E \equiv E_z$, $A \equiv A_z$ and $j \equiv j_z$, the Maxwell equations (G.1.2) reduce to the single equation

$$\frac{d^2 A}{dt^2} = \langle j(x) \rangle, \quad (\text{G.1.5})$$

for the potential and $E = -dA/dt$.

The quantized scalar field $\Phi(x)$ in Eq. (G.1.3) can be expanded in terms of plane waves with operator-valued amplitudes $f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)a_{\mathbf{k}}$ and $f_{-\mathbf{k}}^*(t)b_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger$,

$$\Phi(x) = \frac{1}{V^{1/2}} \sum_{\mathbf{k}} [f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)a_{\mathbf{k}} + f_{-\mathbf{k}}^*(t)b_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger] e^{-i\mathbf{k}\cdot\mathbf{x}}, \quad (\text{G.1.6})$$

where V is the volume of the system and the time-independent creation and

destruction operators obey the commutation relations

$$[a_{\mathbf{k}}, a_{\mathbf{k}'}^\dagger] = [b_{\mathbf{k}}, b_{\mathbf{k}'}^\dagger] = \delta_{\mathbf{k}, \mathbf{k}'}, \quad (\text{G.1.7})$$

and each \mathbf{k} -mode function $f_{\mathbf{k}}$ obeys the Wronskian condition,

$$f_{\mathbf{k}} \dot{f}_{\mathbf{k}}^* - \dot{f}_{\mathbf{k}} f_{\mathbf{k}}^* = i. \quad (\text{G.1.8})$$

The time dependency in this basis ($a_{\mathbf{k}}, b_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger$) (G.1.6, G.1.7) is carried by the complex mode functions $f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ that satisfy the following equation of motion, as demanded from the QED-coupled Eq. (G.1.3) of Klein-Gordon type,

$$\left(\frac{d^2}{dt^2} + \omega_{\mathbf{k}}^2(t) \right) f_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = 0, \quad (\text{G.1.9})$$

where the time-dependent frequency $\omega_{\mathbf{k}}^2(t)$ is given by

$$\omega_{\mathbf{k}}^2(t) \equiv [\mathbf{k} - e\mathbf{A}]^2 + m_e^2 = [k - eA(t)]^2 + \mathbf{k}_\perp^2 + m_e^2. \quad (\text{G.1.10})$$

Here k is the *constant canonical* momentum in the $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ direction which should be distinguished from the gauge-invariant, but *time-dependent kinetic* momentum,

$$p(t) = k - eA(t), \quad \frac{dp}{dt} = eE, \quad (\text{G.1.11})$$

which reflects the acceleration of the charged particles due to the electric field, while in the directions transverse to the electric field the kinetic and canonical momenta are the same $\mathbf{k}_\perp = \mathbf{p}_\perp$.

The mean value of electromagnetic current (G.1.4) in the $\hat{\mathbf{z}}$ direction is then

$$\langle j(t) \rangle = 2e \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} [k - eA(t)] |f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)|^2 [1 + N_+(\mathbf{k}) + N_-(-\mathbf{k})], \quad (\text{G.1.12})$$

where $N_+(\mathbf{k}) = \langle a_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger a_{\mathbf{k}} \rangle$ and $N_-(-\mathbf{k}) = \langle b_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger b_{\mathbf{k}} \rangle$ are the mean numbers of particles and antiparticles in the time-independent basis (G.1.6, G.1.7). The mean charge density must vanish,

$$\langle j^0(t) \rangle = e \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} [N_+(\mathbf{k}) - N_-(-\mathbf{k})] = 0, \quad \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} \equiv \frac{1}{V} \sum_{\mathbf{k}}$$

by the Gauss law for a spatially homogeneous electric field (i.e., $\nabla \cdot \mathbf{E} = 0$). As a result, $N_+(\mathbf{k}) = N_-(-\mathbf{k}) \equiv N_{\mathbf{k}}$. For the vacuum state, $N_{\mathbf{k}} = 0$. The Maxwell equation (G.1.5) for the evolution of electric field becomes,

$$\frac{d^2 A}{dt^2} = 2e \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} [k - eA(t)] |f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)|^2 \sigma_{\mathbf{k}}, \quad \sigma_{\mathbf{k}} = (1 + 2N_{\mathbf{k}}). \quad (\text{G.1.13})$$

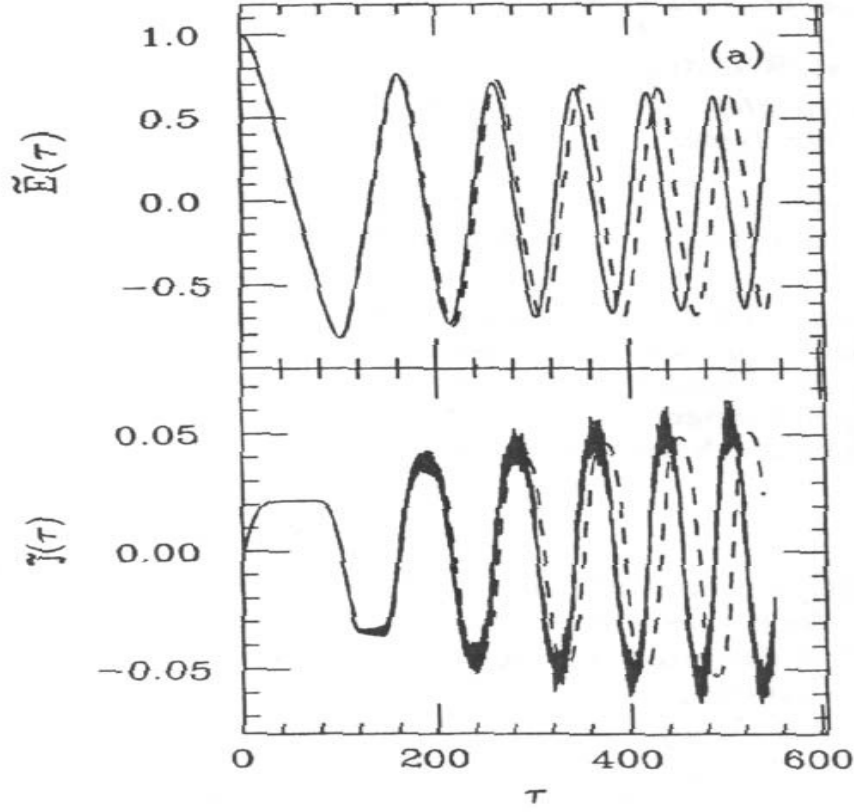


Figure G.1.: Time evolution of scaled electric field \tilde{E} and current \tilde{j} , with initial value $\tilde{E} = 1.0$ and coupling $e^2/m_e^2 = 0.1$. The solid line is semi classical scalar QED, and the dashed line is the Boltzmann-Vlasov model. This figure is reproduced from Fig. 1 (a) in Ref. Kluger et al. (1991).

These two scalar QED-coupled Eqs. (G.1.9) and (G.1.13) in (1+1) dimensional case were solved and numerically integrated Kluger et al. (1991). The results are shown in Fig. G.1, where the time evolutions of the scaled electric field $\tilde{E} \equiv E/E_c$ and current $\tilde{j} \equiv j\hbar/(E_cm_ec^2)$ are shown as functions of time $\tau \equiv (m_ec^2/\hbar)t$ in unit of Compton time (\hbar/m_ec^2). Starting with a strong electric field, one clearly finds the phenomenon of oscillating electric field $E(t)$ and current $j(t)$, i.e., plasma oscillation.

This phenomenon of plasma oscillation is shown in Fig. G.1 and is easy to understand as follows. In a classical kinetic picture, we have the electric current $j = 2en\langle v \rangle$ where n is the density of electrons (or positrons) and $\langle v \rangle$ is their mean velocity. Driven by the external electric field, the velocity $\langle v \rangle$ of electrons (or positrons) continuously increases, until the electric field of electron and positron pairs screens the external electric field down to zero, and the kinetic energy of electrons (or positrons) reaches its maximum. The electric current j saturates as the velocity $\langle v \rangle$ is close to the speed of light. After-

ward, these electrons and positrons continuously move apart from each other further, their electric field, whose direction is opposite to the direction of the external electric field, increases and de-accelerates electrons and positrons themselves. Thus the velocity $\langle v \rangle$ of electrons and positrons decreases, until the electric field reaches negative maximum and the velocity vanishes. Then the velocity $\langle v \rangle$ of electrons and positrons starts to increase in backward direction and the electric field starts to decrease for another oscillation cycle.

G.2. Kinetic theory of plasma oscillations in electric fields

In describing the same system as in the previous section it can be used, alternatively to the semi classical theory, a phenomenological model based on the following relativistic Boltzmann-Vlasov equation Kluger et al. (1991),

$$\frac{d\mathcal{F}}{dt} \equiv \frac{\partial \mathcal{F}}{\partial t} + eE \frac{\partial \mathcal{F}}{\partial p} = \frac{dN}{dt dV d^3 \mathbf{p}}, \quad (\text{G.2.1})$$

where the \mathbf{x} -independent function $\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)$ is a classical distribution function of particle and antiparticle pairs in phase space. The source term in the right-hand side of Eq. (G.2.1) is related to the Schwinger rate $\mathcal{P}_{\text{boson}}$ (C.4.26) for the pair-production of spin-0 particle and antiparticle,

$$\frac{dN}{dt dV d^3 \mathbf{p}} = [1 + 2\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)] \mathcal{P}_{\text{boson}} \delta^3(\mathbf{p}), \quad (\text{G.2.2})$$

where the $\delta^3(\mathbf{p})$ expresses the fact that particles are produced at rest and the factor $[1 + 2\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)]$ accounts for stimulated pair-production (Bose enhancement). The Boltzmann-Vlasov equation (G.2.1) for the distribution function $\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)$ is in fact attributed to the conservation of particle number in phase space.

In the field equation (G.1.5) for the classical gauge potential A , the electric current $\langle j(x) \rangle$ is contributed from the conduction current,

$$j_{\text{cond}} = 2e \int \frac{d^3 \mathbf{p}}{(2\pi)^3} \frac{[p - eA(t)]}{\omega_{\mathbf{p}}} \mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t), \quad (\text{G.2.3})$$

and the polarization current Gatoff et al. (1987),

$$j_{\text{pol}} = \frac{2}{E} \int \frac{d^3 \mathbf{p}}{(2\pi)^3} \omega_{\mathbf{p}} \frac{dN}{dt dV d^3 \mathbf{p}}. \quad (\text{G.2.4})$$

The relativistic Boltzmann-Vlasov equation (G.2.1) and field equation (G.1.5)

with the conduction current (G.2.3) and the polarization current (G.2.4) were numerically integrated Kluger et al. (1991) in (1+1) dimensional case. The numerical integration shows that the system undergoes plasma oscillations. In Fig. G.1 the results of the semiclassical analysis and the numerical integration of the Boltzmann equation are compared. We see that they are in good quantitative agreement. The discrepancies are because in addition to spontaneous pair production, the quantum theory takes into account pair production via bremsstrahlung (“induced” pair production), which are neglected in the classical kinetic theory (Boltzmann-Vlasov equation).

In Refs. Kluger et al. (1992, 1993), the study of plasma oscillation was extended to the fermionic case. On the basis of semi-classical theory of spinor QED, expressing the solution of the Dirac equation (G.1.1) as

$$\psi(x) = [\gamma_\mu(i\partial^\mu - eA^\mu) + m_e]\phi(x),$$

where $\phi(x)$ is a four component spinor, one finds that $\phi(x)$ satisfies the quadratic Dirac equation,

$$\left[(i\partial^\mu - eA^\mu)^2 - \frac{e}{2}\sigma^{\mu\nu}F_{\mu\nu} - m_e^2 \right] \phi(x) = 0. \quad (\text{G.2.5})$$

The electric current of spinor field $\phi(x)$ couples to the external electric field that obeys the field equation (G.1.5).

The source term in the right-hand side of the kinetic Boltzmann-Vlasov equation (G.2.1) is changed to the Schwinger rate $\mathcal{P}_{\text{fermion}}$ (C.4.25) for the pair-production of electrons and positrons,

$$\frac{dN}{dt dV d^3\mathbf{p}} = [1 - 2\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)] \mathcal{P}_{\text{fermion}} \delta^3(\mathbf{p}), \quad (\text{G.2.6})$$

where the Pauli blocking is taken into account by the factor $[1 - 2\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)]$. Analogously to the scalar QED case, both semi-classical theory of spinor QED and kinetic Boltzmann-Vlasov equation have been analyzed and numerical integration was made in the (1+1) dimensional case Kluger et al. (1992, 1993). The numerical results show the plasma oscillation of electric field, electron and positron currents is similar to that plotted in Fig. G.1.

G.3. Plasma oscillations in the color electric field of heavy ions

The Relativistic Heavy-Ion Collider (RHIC) at Brookhaven National Laboratory and Large Hadron Collider (LHC) at CERN are designed with the goal of producing a phase of deconfined hadronic matter: the quark-gluon plasma. A popular theoretical model for studying high-energy heavy-ion

collisions begins with the creation of a flux tube containing a strong color electric field Biro et al. (1984). The field energy is converted into particles as quark and anti quark pairs and gluons that are created by the Sauter-Euler-Heisenberg-Schwinger quantum tunneling mechanism. A relativistic Boltzmann-Vlasov equation coupling to such particle creation source is phenomenologically adopted in a kinetic theory model for the hydrodynamics of quark and gluon plasma Gatoff et al. (1987); Białas and Czyż (1984); Bialas and Czyz (1985a,b, 1986); Kerman et al. (1986); Bialas et al. (1988).

In the collision of heavy-ion beams, one is clearly dealing with a situation that is not spatially homogeneous. However, particle production in the central rapidity region can be modeled as hydrodynamical system with longitudinal boost invariance Landau (1953); Cooper et al. (1975); Low (1975); Nussinov (1975); Andersson et al. (1983). To express the longitudinal boost invariance of the hydrodynamical system, one introduces the comoving coordinates: fluid proper time τ and rapidity η by the relationships Cooper et al. (1993),

$$z = \tau \sinh(\eta), \quad t = \tau \cosh \eta, \quad (\text{G.3.1})$$

in terms of the Minkowski time t and the coordinate z along the beam direction \hat{z} in the ordinary laboratory-frame. The line element and metric tensor in these coordinates are given by

$$ds^2 = d\tau^2 - dx^2 - dy^2 - \tau^2 d\eta^2, \quad g_{\mu\nu} = \text{diag}(1, -1, -1, -\tau^2), \quad (\text{G.3.2})$$

and

$$g_{\mu\nu} = V_\mu^a V_\nu^b \eta_{ab}, \quad V_\mu^a = \text{diag}(1, 1, 1, \tau).$$

where the vierbein V_μ^a transforms the curvilinear coordinates to Minkowski coordinates and $\det(V) = \sqrt{-g} = \tau$. The covariant derivative on fermion field $\psi(x)$ is given by Weinberg (1972)

$$\nabla_\mu \psi(x) \equiv [(i\partial_\mu - eA_\mu) + \Gamma_\mu] \psi(x) \quad (\text{G.3.3})$$

and the spin connection Γ_μ is

$$\Gamma_\mu = \frac{1}{2} \Sigma^{ab} V_{a\nu} (\partial_\mu V_b^\nu + \Gamma_{\mu\lambda}^\nu V_b^\lambda), \quad \Sigma^{ab} = \frac{1}{4} [\gamma^a, \gamma^b],$$

with $\Gamma_{\mu\lambda}^\nu$ the usual Christoffel symbols and γ^a the usual coordinate-independent Dirac gamma matrices. The coordinate-dependent gamma matrices $\tilde{\gamma}^\mu$ are obtained via

$$\tilde{\gamma}^\mu = \gamma^a V_a^\mu.$$

In the curved space time (G.3.2), the Dirac equation (G.1.1) and semi-classical

Maxwell equation (G.1.2) are modified as

$$[i\tilde{\gamma}_\mu \nabla^\mu - m_e]\psi(x) = 0 \quad (\text{G.3.4})$$

and

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{-g}}\partial_\mu \sqrt{-g}F^{\mu\nu} = \langle j^\nu(x) \rangle, \quad j^\nu(x) = \frac{e}{2}[\bar{\psi}(x), \tilde{\gamma}^\nu \psi(x)]. \quad (\text{G.3.5})$$

The phenomenological Boltzmann-Vlasov equation in (3+1) dimensions can be also written covariantly as

$$\frac{D\mathcal{F}}{D\tau} \equiv p^\mu \frac{\partial \mathcal{F}}{\partial q^\mu} - ep^\mu F_{\mu\nu} \frac{\partial \mathcal{F}}{\partial p_\nu} = \frac{dN}{\sqrt{-g}dq^0 d^3\mathbf{q}d\mathbf{p}}, \quad (\text{G.3.6})$$

where $D/D\tau$ is the total time derivative. This kinetic transport equation is written in the comoving coordinates and their conjugate momenta:

$$q^\mu = (\tau, x, y, \eta), \quad p_\mu = (p_\tau, p_x, p_y, p_\eta).$$

Due to the longitudinal boost invariance, energy density and color electric field are spatially homogeneous, i.e., they are functions of the proper time τ only Cooper et al. (1993). Consequently, the approach for spatially homogeneous electric field presented in Refs. Cooper and Mottola (1989); Kluger et al. (1991, 1992, 1993) and discussed in the previous Sec. G.2 is applicable to the phenomenon of plasma oscillations in ultra relativistic heavy-ion collisions Cooper et al. (1993) using Eq. G.3.4 (resp. Eq. G.3.6) in the place of Eq. G.1.1 (resp. Eq. G.2.1).

G.4. Quantum Vlasov equation

To understand the connection between the two frameworks of semi-classical field theory and classical kinetic theory, both of which describe the plasma oscillations, one can try to study a quantum transport equation in the semi-classical theory Kluger et al. (1998); Smolyansky et al. (1997); Schmidt et al. (1998). For this purpose, a Bogoliubov transformation from the time-independent number basis $(a_{\mathbf{k}}, b_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger)$ (G.1.6, G.1.7) to a time-dependent number basis $[\tilde{a}_{\mathbf{k}}(t), \tilde{b}_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger(t)]$ is introduced Kluger et al. (1998); Smolyansky et al. (1997); Schmidt et al. (1998),

$$f_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = \alpha_{\mathbf{k}}(t)\tilde{f}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) + \beta_{\mathbf{k}}(t)\tilde{f}_{\mathbf{k}}^*(t); \quad (\text{G.4.1})$$

$$\dot{f}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = -i\omega_{\mathbf{k}}\alpha_{\mathbf{k}}(t)\tilde{f}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) + i\omega_{\mathbf{k}}\beta_{\mathbf{k}}(t)\tilde{f}_{\mathbf{k}}^*(t), \quad (\text{G.4.2})$$

and

$$a_{\mathbf{k}} = \alpha_{\mathbf{k}}^*(t)\tilde{a}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) - \beta_{\mathbf{k}}^*(t)\tilde{b}_{-\mathbf{k}}^\dagger(t); \quad (\text{G.4.3})$$

$$b_{-\mathbf{k}}^\dagger(t) = \alpha_{\mathbf{k}}(t)\tilde{b}_{-\mathbf{k}}^\dagger(t) - \beta_{\mathbf{k}}(t)\tilde{a}_{\mathbf{k}}(t), \quad (\text{G.4.4})$$

where $\alpha_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ and $\beta_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ are the Bogoliubov coefficients. They obey

$$|\alpha_{\mathbf{k}}(t)|^2 - |\beta_{\mathbf{k}}(t)|^2 = 1,$$

for each mode \mathbf{k} . In the limit of very slowly varying $\omega_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ as a function of time t (G.1.10), i.e., $\dot{\omega}_{\mathbf{k}} \ll \omega_{\mathbf{k}}^2$ and $\ddot{\omega}_{\mathbf{k}} \ll \omega_{\mathbf{k}}^3$, the adiabatic number basis $[\tilde{a}_{\mathbf{k}}(t), \tilde{b}_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger(t)]$ is defined by first constructing the adiabatic mode functions,

$$\tilde{f}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = \left(\frac{\hbar}{2\omega_{\mathbf{k}}}\right)^{1/2} \exp[-i\Theta_{\mathbf{k}}(t)], \quad \Theta_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = \int^t \omega_{\mathbf{k}}(t')dt'. \quad (\text{G.4.5})$$

The particle number $\mathcal{N}_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ in the time-dependent adiabatic number basis is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{N}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) &= \langle \tilde{a}_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger(t)\tilde{a}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) \rangle = \langle \tilde{b}_{-\mathbf{k}}^\dagger(t)\tilde{b}_{-\mathbf{k}}(t) \rangle \\ &= |\alpha_{\mathbf{k}}(t)|^2 N_{\mathbf{k}} + |\beta_{\mathbf{k}}(t)|^2 [1 + N_{\mathbf{k}}], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{G.4.6})$$

which though time-dependent, is an adiabatic invariant of the motion. Consequently, it is a natural candidate for a particle number-density distribution function $\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)$ in the phase space, that is needed in a kinetic description.

By differentiating $\mathcal{N}_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ (G.4.6) and using the basic relationships (G.1.10, G.4.2, G.4.5), one obtains,

$$\dot{\mathcal{N}}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = \frac{\dot{\omega}_{\mathbf{k}}}{\omega_{\mathbf{k}}} \text{Re} \{ \mathcal{C}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) \exp[-2i\Theta_{\mathbf{k}}(t)] \}, \quad \mathcal{C}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = (1 + 2N_{\mathbf{k}})\alpha_{\mathbf{k}}(t)\beta_{\mathbf{k}}^*(t), \quad (\text{G.4.7})$$

and

$$\dot{\mathcal{C}}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = \frac{\dot{\omega}_{\mathbf{k}}}{2\omega_{\mathbf{k}}} [1 + 2N_{\mathbf{k}}(t)] \exp[2i\Theta_{\mathbf{k}}(t)]. \quad (\text{G.4.8})$$

These two equations give rise to the quantum Vlasov equations Kluger et al. (1998); Smolyansky et al. (1997); Schmidt et al. (1998),

$$\dot{\mathcal{N}}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = \mathcal{S}_{\mathbf{k}}(t), \quad (\text{G.4.9})$$

$$\mathcal{S}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = \frac{\dot{\omega}_{\mathbf{k}}}{2\omega_{\mathbf{k}}} \int_{-\infty}^t dt' \frac{\dot{\omega}_{\mathbf{k}}}{\omega_{\mathbf{k}}}(t') [1 \pm 2N_{\mathbf{k}}(t')] \cos[2\Theta_{\mathbf{k}}(t) - 2\Theta_{\mathbf{k}}(t')]. \quad (\text{G.4.10})$$

describing the time evolution of the adiabatic particle number $\mathcal{N}_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ of the mean field theory. $\mathcal{S}_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ describes the quantum creation rate of particle number in an arbitrary slowly varying mean field. The Bose enhancement and

Pauli blocking factors $[1 \pm 2\mathcal{N}_{\mathbf{k}}(t')]$ appear in Eq. (G.4.10) so that both spontaneous and induced particle creation are included automatically in the quantum treatment. The most important feature of Eq. (G.4.10) is that the source term $\mathcal{S}_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ is nonlocal in time, indicating the particle creation rate depending on the entire history of the system. This means that the time evolution of the particle number $\mathcal{N}_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ governed by the quantum Vlasov equation is a non-Markovian process.

The mean electric current $\langle j(t) \rangle$ (G.1.12) in the basis of adiabatic number $[\tilde{a}_{\mathbf{k}}(t), \tilde{b}_{\mathbf{k}}^\dagger(t)]$ (G.4.2, G.4.4) can be rewritten as,

$$\langle j(t) \rangle = j_{\text{cond}} + j_{\text{pol}}, \quad (\text{G.4.11})$$

$$j_{\text{cond}} = 2e \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} \frac{[k - eA(t)]}{\omega_{\mathbf{k}}} \mathcal{N}_{\mathbf{k}}(t), \quad (\text{G.4.12})$$

$$j_{\text{pol}} = \frac{2}{E} \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} \omega_{\mathbf{k}} \dot{\mathcal{N}}_{\mathbf{k}}(t), \quad (\text{G.4.13})$$

by using Eqs. (G.4.6), (G.4.7). This means electric current $\langle j(t) \rangle$ enters into the right-hand side of the field equation (G.1.5).

For the comparison between the quantum Vlasov equation (G.4.10) and the classical Boltzmann-Vlasov equation (G.2.1), the adiabatic particle number $\mathcal{N}_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ has to be understood as the counterpart of the classical distribution function $\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)$ of particle number in the phase space. The source term, that is composed by the Schwinger rate of pair production and the factor $[1 \pm 2\mathcal{N}_{\mathbf{k}}(t')]$ for either the Bose enhancement or Pauli blocking, is phenomenologically added into in the Boltzmann-Vlasov equation (G.2.1). Such source term is local in time, indicating that the time evolution of the classical distribution function $\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)$ is a Markovian process. In the limit of a very slowly varying uniform electric field E and at very large time t the source term $\mathcal{S}_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ (G.4.10) integrated over momenta \mathbf{k} reduces to the source term in the Boltzmann-Vlasov equation (G.2.1) Kluger et al. (1998); Smolyansky et al. (1997); Schmidt et al. (1998). As a result, the conduction current j_{cond} and the polarization current j_{pol} in Eq. (G.4.11) are reduced to their counterparts Eqs. (G.2.3), (G.2.4) in the phenomenological model of kinetic theory. In Ref. Kluger et al. (1998); Bloch et al. (1999); Schmidt et al. (1999); Vinnik et al. (2001); Roberts et al. (2002), the quantum Vlasov equation has been numerically studied to show the plasma oscillations and the non-Markovian effects. They are also compared with the Boltzmann-Vlasov equation (G.2.1) that corresponds to the Markovian limit.

G.5. Quantum decoherence in plasma oscillations

As showed in Fig. G.1, the collective oscillations of electric field $E(t)$ and associate electric current $\langle j(t) \rangle$ are damped in their amplitude. Moreover, as time increases, a decoherence in their oscillating frequency occurs Kluger et al. (1991); Habib et al. (1996). This indicates that plasma oscillations decay in time. This effective energy dissipation or time irreversibility is the phenomenon of quantum decoherence Zurek (1991) in the process of creation and oscillation of particles, in the sense that energy flows from collective motion of the classical electromagnetic field to the quantum fluctuations of charged matter fields without returning back over times of physical interest Habib et al. (1996); Cooper et al. (1997). This means that the characteristic frequency $\omega_{\mathbf{k}}$ of the quantum fluctuation mode “ \mathbf{k} ” is much larger than the frequency ω_{pl} of the classical electric field: $\omega_{\mathbf{k}} \gg \omega_{pl}$ and $\omega_{pl} \sim 2e^2 \hbar n_p / (m_e c^2)$ Kluger et al. (1998); Habib et al. (1996), where n_p is the number-density of particles and antiparticles. The study of quantum decoherence and energy dissipation associated with particle production to understand the plasma oscillation frequency and damping can be found in Refs. Kluger et al. (1998); Habib et al. (1996); Cooper et al. (1997).

To understand the energy dissipation from the collective oscillation of classical mean-fields to rapid fluctuations of quantum fields, it is necessary to use the Hamiltonian formalism of semi-classical theory. One defines the quantum fluctuation $\xi_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ upon classical mean-field $\langle \Phi_{\mathbf{k}}(t) \rangle$ in the semi-classical scalar theory Kluger et al. (1998); Habib et al. (1996); Cooper et al. (1997),

$$\xi_{\mathbf{k}}^2(t) = \langle [\Phi_{\mathbf{k}}(t) - \langle \Phi_{\mathbf{k}}(t) \rangle]^2 \rangle = \langle \Phi_{\mathbf{k}}(t) \Phi_{\mathbf{k}}^*(t) \rangle - [\langle \Phi_{\mathbf{k}}(t) \rangle]^2, \quad (\text{G.5.1})$$

where $\Phi_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ is the Fourier \mathbf{k} -component of the quantized scalar field $\Phi(x)$ (G.1.6). In the time-independent basis (G.1.7,G.1.8), one has (see Sec. G),

$$\xi_{\mathbf{k}}^2(t) = \sigma_{\mathbf{k}} |f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)|^2, \quad (\text{G.5.2})$$

and the mode equation (G.1.9) for $f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ can be rewritten as

$$\dot{\eta}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = \ddot{\xi}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = -\omega_{\mathbf{k}}^2(t) \xi_{\mathbf{k}}(t) + \frac{\hbar^2 \sigma_{\mathbf{k}}^2}{4 \xi_{\mathbf{k}}^3(t)}, \quad (\text{G.5.3})$$

where $\eta_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = \dot{\xi}_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ momentum canonically conjugate to $\xi_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$. Moreover, the semiclassical Maxwell equation (G.1.13) is rewritten as

$$\frac{d^2 A}{dt^2} = 2e \int \frac{d^3 \mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} [k - eA(t)] \xi_{\mathbf{k}}^2(t). \quad (\text{G.5.4})$$

Eqs. (G.5.3) and (G.5.4) actually are Hamilton equations of motion,

$$\dot{\eta}_{\mathbf{k}}(t) = -\frac{\delta \mathcal{H}_{\text{eff}}}{\delta \xi_{\mathbf{k}}(t)}, \quad \dot{P}_A(t) = -\frac{\delta \mathcal{H}_{\text{eff}}}{\delta A(t)}, \quad (\text{G.5.5})$$

for a closed system with Hamiltonian,

$$\mathcal{H}_{\text{eff}}(A, P_A, \xi, \eta, \sigma) = V \frac{E^2}{2} + V \int \frac{d^3 \mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} \left(\eta_{\mathbf{k}}^2 + \omega_{\mathbf{k}}^2(A) \xi_{\mathbf{k}}^2 + \frac{\hbar^2 \sigma_{\mathbf{k}}^2}{4 \xi_{\mathbf{k}}^2} \right), \quad (\text{G.5.6})$$

where $P_A = \dot{A} = -E$ is the momentum canonically conjugate to A , $\omega_{\mathbf{k}}(A)$ is the field-dependent frequency of quantum fluctuations given by Eq. (G.1.10) and the value of mean-field (G.5.1) vanishes, $\langle \Phi_{\mathbf{k}}(t) \rangle = 0$, for each \mathbf{k} -mode. In Eq. (G.5.6), the first term is the electric energy and the second term is the energy of quantum fluctuations of charged matter field, interacting with electric field.

Quantum decoherence is addressable within this Hamiltonian framework. If one considers only the time-evolution of classical electric field $A(t)$, that is influenced by the quantum fluctuating modes $f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$, the latter can be treated as a heat bath “environment”. Quantitative information about the quantum decoherence is contained into the so called influence functional, which is a functional of two time-evolution trajectories $A_1(t)$ and $A_2(t)$ Habib et al. (1996)

$$F_{12}(t) = \exp[i\Gamma_{12}(t)] = \text{Tr}(|A_1(t)\rangle \langle A_2(t)|), \quad (\text{G.5.7})$$

where $|A_{1,2}(t)\rangle$ are different time-evolution states determined by Eq. (G.5.5), starting with the same initial state $|A(0)\rangle$ and initial vacuum condition $N_{\mathbf{k}} = 0, \sigma_{\mathbf{k}} = 1$ (G.1.13). One finds Habib et al. (1996),

$$\Gamma_{12}(t) = -\frac{i}{2} \ln \left[\frac{i\hbar}{|f_1 f_2|} \left(\frac{f_1 f_2^*}{f_1 \dot{f}_2^* - \dot{f}_1 f_2^*} \right) \right], \quad (\text{G.5.8})$$

in terms of the two sets of mode functions $\{f_1(t)\}$ and $\{f_2(t)\}$ (the subscript \mathbf{k} is omitted). This Γ_{12} (G.5.8) is precisely the closed time path (CTP) effective action functional which generates the connected real n -points vertices in the quantum theory Calzetta and Hu (1989, 1994); Cooper et al. (1994); Schwinger (1961); Bakshi and Mahanthappa (1963a,b); Keldysh (1964); Chou et al. (1985). The absolute value of F_{12} (G.5.7) measures the influence of quantum fluctuations $f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ on the time-evolution of the classical electric field $A(t)$, i.e., the effect of quantum decoherence. If there is no influence of quantum fluctuations on $A(t)$, then $|A_1(t)\rangle = |A_2(t)\rangle$ and $|F_{12}| = 1$, otherwise $A_2(t)$ deviates from $A_1(t)$, $|A_1(t)\rangle \neq |A_2(t)\rangle$ and $|F_{12}| < 1$. Numerical results about the damping and the decoherence of the electric field are presented in Refs. Kluger et al. (1991); Habib et al. (1996) (see Figs. G.1 and G.2).

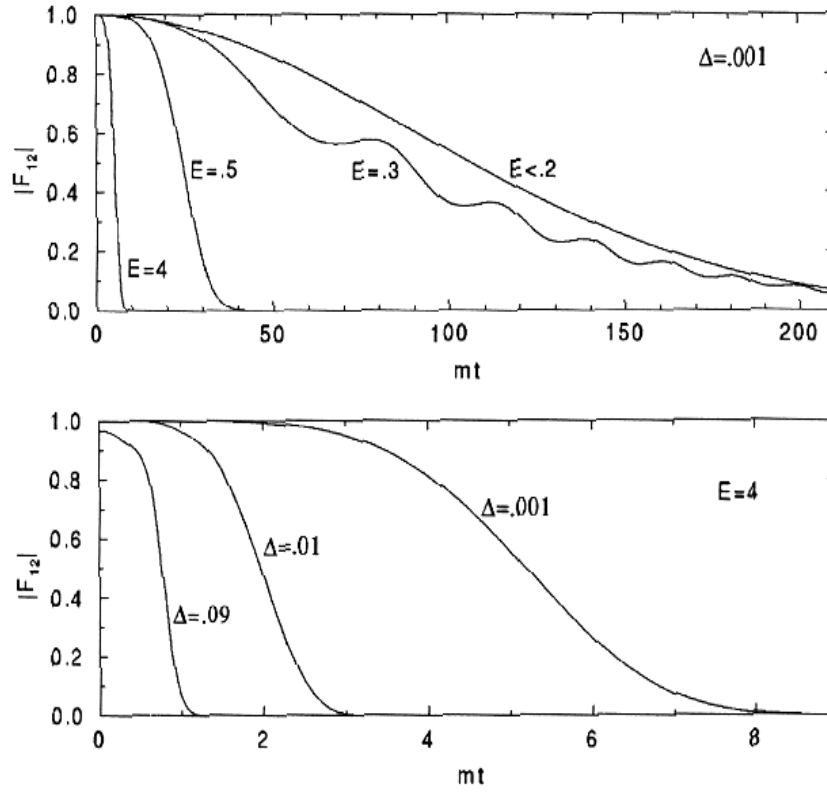


Figure G.2.: Absolute values of the decoherence functional $|F_{12}|$ as a function of time. The two field values are E and $E - \Delta$. The top figure shows (for fixed Δ) the sharp dependence of decoherence on particle production when $|E| \geq 0.2E_c$. The second illustrates the relatively milder dependence on Δ . These figures are reproduced from Fig. 2 in Ref. Habib et al. (1996).

The effective damping observed in the plasma oscillation is certainly collisionless, since the charged particle modes $f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ interact only with the electric field but not directly each other. The damping of plasma oscillation attributed to the collisions between charged particle modes $f_{\mathbf{k}}(t)$ will be discussed in the next section.

G.6. Collision decoherence in plasma oscillations

If there are interactions between different modes \mathbf{k} and species of particles, the time evolutions of electric field and the distribution function $\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)$ of particle number in the phase space are certainly changed. This can be phenomenologically studied in the relativistic Boltzmann-Vlasov equation (G.2.1) by adding collision terms $\mathcal{C}(\mathbf{p}, t)$,

$$\frac{d\mathcal{F}}{dt} \equiv \frac{\partial \mathcal{F}}{\partial t} + eE \frac{\partial \mathcal{F}}{\partial p} = \mathcal{S}_{\mathbf{p}}(t) + \mathcal{C}(\mathbf{p}, t). \quad (\text{G.6.1})$$

These collision terms $\mathcal{C}(\mathbf{p}, t)$ describe not only the interactions of different modes \mathbf{k} of particles, but also interactions of different species of particles, for example, electron and positron annihilation to two photons and *vice versa*. In Refs. Bloch et al. (1999); Vinnik et al. (2001), the following equilibrating collision terms were considered,

$$\mathcal{C}(\mathbf{p}, t) = \frac{1}{\tau_r} [\mathcal{F}^{\text{eq}}(\mathbf{p}, t, T) - \mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)], \quad (\text{G.6.2})$$

where $\mathcal{F}^{\text{eq}}(\mathbf{p}, t, T)$ is the thermal (Fermi or Bose) distribution function of particle number (fermions or bosons) at temperature T , the relaxation time τ_r is determined by the mean free-path $\lambda(t)$ and mean velocity $\bar{v}(t)$ of particles, through

$$\tau_r(t) = \tau_c \frac{\lambda(t)}{\bar{v}(t)}, \quad (\text{G.6.3})$$

and τ_c is a dimensionless parameter. $\lambda(t)$ is computed from the number density $n(t)$ of particles,

$$\lambda(t) = \frac{1}{[n(t)]^{1/3}}, \quad n(t) = \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} \mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t). \quad (\text{G.6.4})$$

Whereas, the mean velocity of particles is given by $\bar{v}(t) = \bar{p}(t)/\bar{e}(t)$, expressed in terms of mean kinetic momentum $\bar{p}(t)$ and energy $\bar{e}(t)$ of particles. The mean values of momentum $\bar{p}(t)$ and energy $\bar{e}(t)$ is computed Vinnik et al. (2001) by using distribution function $\mathcal{F}(\mathbf{p}, t)$ regularized via the procedure described in Ref. Bloch et al. (1999) that yields the renormalized electric current (G.4.11). The temperature $T(t)$ in Eq. (G.6.2) is the “instantaneous tempera-

ture", which is determined by requiring that at each time t the mean particle energy $\bar{\epsilon}(t)$ is identical to that in an equilibrium distribution $\mathcal{F}^{\text{eq}}(\mathbf{k}, t, T)$ at the temperature $T(t)$,

$$\bar{\epsilon}(t) = \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} \epsilon(\mathbf{k}) \mathcal{F}^{\text{eq}}[\mathbf{k}, t, T(t)]. \quad (\text{G.6.5})$$

This system of two coupled equations: (i) the field equation (G.1.5) with renormalized electric currents (G.4.11); (ii) the relativistic Boltzmann-Vlasov equation (G.6.1) with the source term $\mathcal{S}_{\mathbf{p}}(t)$ (G.4.10) and equilibrating collision term $\mathcal{C}(\mathbf{p}, t)$ (G.6.2), are numerically integrated in Refs. Bloch et al. (1999); Vinnik et al. (2001). One of these numerical results is presented in Fig. G.3. It shows Bloch et al. (1999) that when the collision time-scale τ_r (G.6.3) is much larger than the plasma oscillation time-scale τ_{pl} , $\tau_r \gg \tau_{pl}$, the plasma oscillations are unaffected. On the other hand, when $\tau_r \sim \tau_{pl}$ the collision term has a significant impact on both the amplitude and the frequency of the oscillations that result damped. There is a value of τ_r below which no oscillations arise and the system evolves quickly and directly to thermal equilibrium. It is worthwhile to contract this collision damping of plasma oscillation with the collisionless damping effect due to rapid quantum fluctuations described in Sec. G.5.

G.7. $e^+e^-\gamma$ interactions in plasma oscillations in electric fields

In this section, it is presented a detailed report of the studies Ruffini et al. (2003c) of the relativistic Boltzmann-Vlasov equations for electrons, positrons and photons with collision terms originated from collisions and annihilation of electrons and positrons pair into two photons and *vice versa*. These collision terms lead to the damping of plasma oscillation and possibly to thermalization of particles. It is focused on the evolution of a system of e^+e^- pairs created in a strongly overcritical electric field ($E \sim 10E_c$), explicitly taking into account the scattering process $e^+e^- \rightleftharpoons \gamma\gamma$. Since it is far from equilibrium the collisions cannot be modeled by an effective relaxation time term in the transport equations, as discussed in the previous section. Rather the actual, time varying, cross-sections have to be used.

Furthermore it is mainly interested in a system in which the electric field varies on macroscopic length scale and therefore one can approximately adopt a homogeneous electric field. Also, transport equations are used for electrons, positrons and photons, with collision terms, coupled to Maxwell equations, as introduced in Sec. G.1 and G.2. There is no free parameter here: the collision terms can be exactly computed, since the QED cross-sections are known. Starting from a regime which is far from thermal equilibrium, one finds that

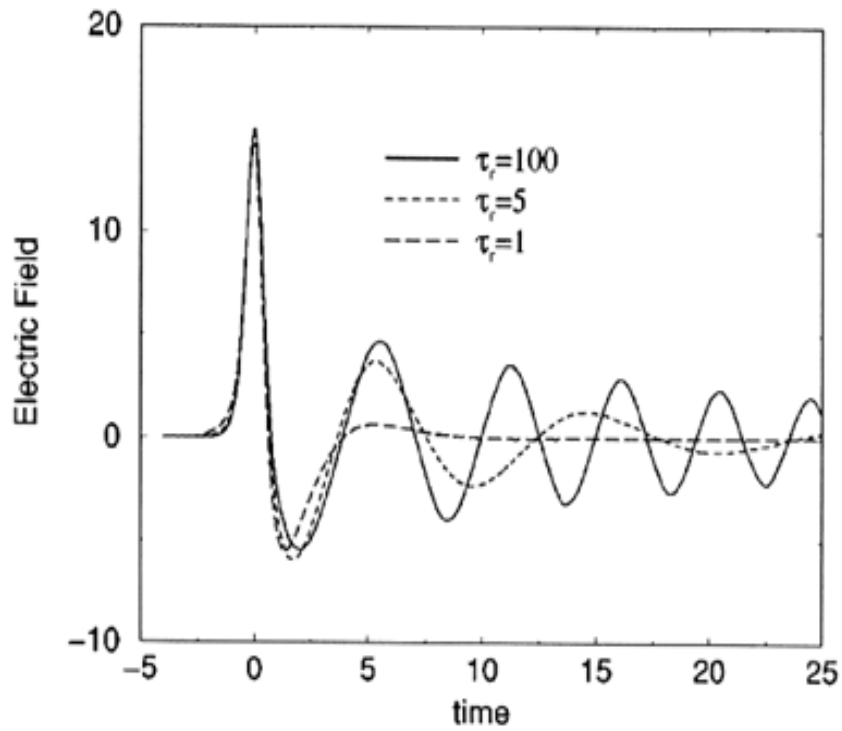


Figure G.3.: Time evolution for electric field obtained using different relaxation times τ_r in the collision term of Eq. (G.6.2) and with the impulse external field $E_{ex}(t) = -A_0[b \cosh^2(t/b)]^{-1}$, where $A_0 = 0.7$ and $b = 0.5$. All dimensioned quantities are given in units of the mass-scale m . This Figure is reproduced from Fig. 6 in Ref. Bloch et al. (1999).

collisions do not prevent plasma oscillations in the initial phase of the evolution and analyze the issue of the timescale of the approach to an $e^+e^-\gamma$ plasma equilibrium configuration.

As discussed in Sec. G.1 and G.2 one can describe positrons (electrons) created by vacuum polarization in a strong homogeneous electric field \mathbf{E} through the distribution function f_{e^+} (f_{e^-}) in the phase space of positrons (electrons). Because of homogeneity f_{e^+} (f_{e^-}) only depend on the time t and the positron (electron) 3-momentum \mathbf{p} :

$$f_{e^{+,-}} = f_{e^{+,-}}(t, \mathbf{p}). \quad (\text{G.7.1})$$

Moreover, because of particle-antiparticle symmetry, one also has

$$f_{e^+}(t, \mathbf{p}) = f_{e^-}(t, -\mathbf{p}) \equiv f_e(t, \mathbf{p}). \quad (\text{G.7.2})$$

Analogously photons created by pair annihilation are described through the distribution function f_γ in the phase space of photons. \mathbf{k} is the photon 3-momentum, then

$$f_\gamma = f_\gamma(t, \mathbf{k}). \quad (\text{G.7.3})$$

f_e and f_γ are normalized so that

$$\int \frac{d^3\mathbf{p}}{(2\pi)^3} f_e(t, \mathbf{p}) = n_e(t), \quad (\text{G.7.4})$$

$$\int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}}{(2\pi)^3} f_\gamma(t, \mathbf{k}) = n_\gamma(t), \quad (\text{G.7.5})$$

where n_e and n_γ are number densities of positrons (electrons) and photons, respectively. For any function of the momenta, one can denote by

$$\langle F(\mathbf{p}_1, \dots, \mathbf{p}_n) \rangle_e \equiv n_e^{-n} \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{p}_1}{(2\pi)^3} \dots \frac{d^3\mathbf{p}_n}{(2\pi)^3} F(\mathbf{p}_1, \dots, \mathbf{p}_n) \cdot f_e(\mathbf{p}_1) \cdot \dots \cdot f_e(\mathbf{p}_n), \quad (\text{G.7.6})$$

or

$$\langle G(\mathbf{k}_1, \dots, \mathbf{k}_l) \rangle_\gamma \equiv n_\gamma^{-l} \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}_1}{(2\pi)^3} \dots \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}_l}{(2\pi)^3} G(\mathbf{k}_1, \dots, \mathbf{k}_l) \cdot f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}_1) \cdot \dots \cdot f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}_l), \quad (\text{G.7.7})$$

its mean value in the phase space of positrons (electrons) or photons, respectively.

The motion of positrons (electrons) is the resultant of three contributions: the pair creation, the electric acceleration and the annihilation damping. The probability density rate $\mathcal{S}(\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{p})$ for the creation of a pair with 3-momentum \mathbf{p} in the electric field \mathbf{E} is given by the Schwinger formula (see also Refs. Kluger

et al. (1991, 1992)):

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{p}) &= (2\pi)^3 \frac{dN}{dt d^3x d^3\mathbf{p}} \\ &= -|e\mathbf{E}| \log \left[1 - \exp \left(-\frac{\pi(m_e^2 + \mathbf{p}_\perp^2)}{|e\mathbf{E}|} \right) \right] \delta(p_\parallel), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{G.7.8})$$

where p_\parallel and \mathbf{p}_\perp are the components of the 3-momentum \mathbf{p} parallel and orthogonal to \mathbf{E} , respectively. Also the energy is introduced

$$\epsilon_{\mathbf{p}} = \left(\mathbf{p} \cdot \mathbf{p} + m_e^2 \right)^{1/2} \quad (\text{G.7.9})$$

of an electron of 3-momentum \mathbf{p} and the energy

$$\epsilon_{\mathbf{k}} = (\mathbf{k} \cdot \mathbf{k})^{1/2} \quad (\text{G.7.10})$$

of a photon of 3-momentum \mathbf{k} . Then, the probability density rate $\mathcal{C}_e(t, \mathbf{p})$ for the creation (destruction) of a fermion with 3-momentum \mathbf{p} is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{C}_e(t, \mathbf{p}) &\simeq \frac{1}{\epsilon_{\mathbf{p}}} \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{p}_1}{(2\pi)^3 \epsilon_{\mathbf{p}_1}} \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}_1}{(2\pi)^3 \epsilon_{\mathbf{k}_1}} \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}_2}{(2\pi)^3 \epsilon_{\mathbf{k}_2}} (2\pi)^4 \delta^{(4)}(p + p_1 - k_1 - k_2) \\ &\quad \times \left| \mathcal{M}_{e^+(\mathbf{p})e^-(\mathbf{p}_1) \rightarrow \gamma(\mathbf{k}_1)\gamma(\mathbf{k}_2)} \right|^2 [f_e(\mathbf{p}) f_e(\mathbf{p}_1) - f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}_1) f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}_2)], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{G.7.11})$$

where

$$\mathcal{M}_{e^+(\mathbf{p}_1)e^-(\mathbf{p}_2) \rightarrow \gamma(\mathbf{k}_1)\gamma(\mathbf{k}_2)} = \mathcal{M}_{e^+(\mathbf{p}_1)e^-(\mathbf{p}_2) \leftarrow \gamma(\mathbf{k}_1)\gamma(\mathbf{k}_2)} \equiv \mathcal{M} \quad (\text{G.7.12})$$

is the matrix element for the process

$$e^+(\mathbf{p}_1) e^-(\mathbf{p}_2) \rightarrow \gamma(\mathbf{k}_1) \gamma(\mathbf{k}_2) \quad (\text{G.7.13})$$

and as a first approximation, Pauli blocking and Bose enhancement (see, for instance, Ref. Kluger et al. (1992)) are neglected. Analogously the probability density rate $\mathcal{C}_\gamma(t, \mathbf{p})$ for the creation (destruction) of a photon with 3-momentum \mathbf{k} is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{C}_\gamma(t, \mathbf{k}) &\simeq \frac{1}{\epsilon_{\mathbf{k}}} \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{p}_1}{(2\pi)^3 \epsilon_{\mathbf{p}_1}} \frac{d^3\mathbf{p}_2}{(2\pi)^3 \epsilon_{\mathbf{p}_2}} \frac{d^3\mathbf{k}_1}{(2\pi)^3 \epsilon_{\mathbf{k}_1}} (2\pi)^4 \delta^{(4)}(p_1 + p_2 - k - k_1) \\ &\quad \times \left| \mathcal{M}_{e^+(\mathbf{p}_1)e^-(\mathbf{p}_2) \rightarrow \gamma(\mathbf{k})\gamma(\mathbf{k}_1)} \right|^2 [f_e(\mathbf{p}_1) f_e(\mathbf{p}_2) - f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}) f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}_1)], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{G.7.14})$$

Finally the evolution of the pairs is governed by the transport Vlasov equa-

tions

$$\partial_t f_e + e\mathbf{E} \cdot \nabla_{\mathbf{p}} f_e = \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{p}) - \mathcal{C}_e(t, \mathbf{p}), \quad (\text{G.7.15})$$

$$\partial_t f_\gamma = 2\mathcal{C}_\gamma(t, \mathbf{k}), \quad (\text{G.7.16})$$

Note that the collisional terms (G.7.11) and (G.7.14) are negligible, when created pairs do not originate a dense plasma.

Because pair creation back reacts on the electric field, as seen in Sec. G.1 and G.2, Vlasov equations are coupled with the homogeneous Maxwell equations, which read

$$\partial_t \mathbf{E} = -\mathbf{j}_p(\mathbf{E}) - \mathbf{j}_c(t), \quad (\text{G.7.17})$$

where

$$\mathbf{j}_p(\mathbf{E}) = 2 \frac{\mathbf{E}}{E^2} \int \frac{d^3 \mathbf{p}}{(2\pi)^3} \epsilon_{\mathbf{p}} \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{p}) \quad (\text{G.7.18})$$

is the polarization current and

$$\mathbf{j}_c(t) = 2en_e \int \frac{d^3 \mathbf{p}}{(2\pi)^3} \frac{\mathbf{p}}{\epsilon_{\mathbf{p}}} f_e(\mathbf{p}) \quad (\text{G.7.19})$$

is the conduction current (see Ref. Gatoff et al. (1987)).

Eqs. (G.7.15), (G.7.16) and (G.7.17) describe the dynamical evolution of the electron–positron pairs, the photons and the strong homogeneous electric field as the Schwinger process of pair creation, the pair annihilation into photons and the two photons annihilation into pairs take place. It is hard to (even numerically) solve this system of integral and partial differential equations. It is therefore useful to introduce a simplification procedure of such a system through an approximation scheme. First of all note that Eqs. (G.7.15) and (G.7.16) can be suitably integrated over the phase spaces of positrons (electrons) and photons to get differential equations for mean values. The following exact equations for mean values are obtained:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d}{dt} n_e &= S(\mathbf{E}) - n_e^2 \langle \sigma_1 v' \rangle_e + n_\gamma^2 \langle \sigma_2 v'' \rangle_\gamma, \\ \frac{d}{dt} n_\gamma &= 2n_e^2 \langle \sigma_1 v' \rangle_e - 2n_\gamma^2 \langle \sigma_2 v'' \rangle_\gamma, \\ \frac{d}{dt} n_e \langle \epsilon_{\mathbf{p}} \rangle_e &= en_e \mathbf{E} \cdot \langle \mathbf{v} \rangle_e + \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{j}_p - n_e^2 \langle \epsilon_{\mathbf{p}} \sigma_1 v' \rangle_e + n_\gamma^2 \langle \epsilon_{\mathbf{k}} \sigma_2 v'' \rangle_\gamma, \\ \frac{d}{dt} n_\gamma \langle \epsilon_{\mathbf{k}} \rangle_\gamma &= 2n_e^2 \langle \epsilon_{\mathbf{p}} \sigma_1 v' \rangle_e - 2n_\gamma^2 \langle \epsilon_{\mathbf{k}} \sigma_2 v'' \rangle_\gamma, \\ \frac{d}{dt} n_e \langle \mathbf{p} \rangle_e &= en_e \mathbf{E} - n_e^2 \langle \mathbf{p} \sigma_1 v' \rangle_e, \\ \frac{d}{dt} \mathbf{E} &= -2en_e \langle \mathbf{v} \rangle_e - \mathbf{j}_p(\mathbf{E}), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{G.7.20})$$

where

$$S(\mathbf{E}) = \int \frac{d^3\mathbf{p}}{(2\pi)^3} \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{E}, \mathbf{p}) \quad (\text{G.7.21})$$

$$\equiv \frac{dN}{dt d^3\mathbf{x}'} \quad (\text{G.7.22})$$

is the total probability rate for vacuum polarization,

$$v' = \left| \frac{\mathbf{p}_{e^-}}{\epsilon_{\mathbf{p}_{e^-}}} - \frac{\mathbf{p}_{e^+}}{\epsilon_{\mathbf{p}_{e^+}}} \right| \quad (\text{G.7.23})$$

is the relative velocity between electrons and positrons (here \mathbf{p}_{e^-} and \mathbf{p}_{e^+} are 3-momenta of electron and positron and $\epsilon_{\mathbf{p}_{e^\mp}}$ have analogous meanings),

$$v'' = \left| \frac{\mathbf{k}_1}{\epsilon_{\mathbf{k}_1}} - \frac{\mathbf{k}_2}{\epsilon_{\mathbf{k}_2}} \right| \quad (\text{G.7.24})$$

is the relative velocity between photons, $\sigma_1 = \sigma_1(\epsilon_{\mathbf{p}}^{\text{CoM}})$ is the total cross-section for the process $e^+e^- \rightarrow \gamma\gamma$, and $\sigma_2 = \sigma_2(\epsilon_{\mathbf{k}}^{\text{CoM}})$ is the total cross-section for the process $\gamma\gamma \rightarrow e^+e^-$, here ϵ^{CoM} is the energy of a particle in the reference frame of the center of mass.

In order to evaluate the mean values in system (G.7.20) some further hypotheses on the distribution functions are needed. One defines \bar{p}_\parallel , $\bar{\epsilon}_{\mathbf{p}}$ and $\bar{\mathbf{p}}_\perp^2$ such that

$$\langle p_\parallel \rangle_e \equiv \bar{p}_\parallel, \quad (\text{G.7.25})$$

$$\langle \epsilon_{\mathbf{p}} \rangle_e \equiv \bar{\epsilon}_{\mathbf{p}} \equiv (\bar{p}_\parallel^2 + \bar{\mathbf{p}}_\perp^2 + m_e^2)^{1/2}. \quad (\text{G.7.26})$$

It is assumed

$$f_e(t, \mathbf{p}) \propto n_e(t) \delta(p_\parallel - \bar{p}_\parallel) \delta(\mathbf{p}_\perp^2 - \bar{\mathbf{p}}_\perp^2). \quad (\text{G.7.27})$$

Since in the scattering $e^+e^- \rightarrow \gamma\gamma$ the coincidence of the scattering direction with the incidence direction is statistically favored, it is also assumed

$$f_\gamma(t, \mathbf{k}) \propto n_\gamma(t) \delta(\mathbf{k}_\perp^2 - \bar{\mathbf{k}}_\perp^2) \left[\delta(k_\parallel - \bar{k}_\parallel) + \delta(k_\parallel + \bar{k}_\parallel) \right], \quad (\text{G.7.28})$$

where k_\parallel and \mathbf{k}_\perp have analogous meaning as p_\parallel and \mathbf{p}_\perp and the terms $\delta(k_\parallel - \bar{k}_\parallel)$ and $\delta(k_\parallel + \bar{k}_\parallel)$ account for the probability of producing, respectively, forwardly scattered and backwardly scattered photons. Since the Schwinger source term (G.7.8) implies that the positrons (electrons) have initially fixed p_\parallel , namely $p_\parallel = 0$, assumption (G.7.27) ((G.7.28)) means that the distribution of p_\parallel (k_\parallel) does not spread too much with time and, analogously, that the distribution of energies is sufficiently peaked to be describable by a δ -function.

As long as this condition is fulfilled, approximations (G.7.27) and (G.7.28) are applicable. The actual dependence on the momentum of the distribution functions has been discussed in Ref. Kluger et al. (1992, 1998). If Eqs. (G.7.27) and (G.7.28) are used into the system (G.7.20) one gets a new system of ordinary differential equations. Since, in average, the inertial reference frame one can fix coincides with the center of mass frame for the processes $e^+e^- \rightleftharpoons \gamma\gamma$, and has $\epsilon^{\text{CoM}} \simeq \bar{\epsilon}$ for each species therefore substituting Eqs. (G.7.27) and (G.7.28) into Eqs. (G.7.20) one finds

$$\begin{aligned}
 \frac{d}{dt}n_e &= S(E) - 2n_e^2\sigma_1\rho_e^{-1}|\pi_{e\parallel}| + 2n_\gamma^2\sigma_2, \\
 \frac{d}{dt}n_\gamma &= 4n_e^2\sigma_1\rho_e^{-1}|\pi_{e\parallel}| - 4n_\gamma^2\sigma_2, \\
 \frac{d}{dt}\rho_e &= en_eE\rho_e^{-1}|\pi_{e\parallel}| + \frac{1}{2}Ej_p - 2n_e\rho_e\sigma_1\rho_e^{-1}|\pi_{e\parallel}| + 2n_\gamma\rho_\gamma\sigma_2, \\
 \frac{d}{dt}\rho_\gamma &= 4n_e\rho_e\sigma_1\rho_e^{-1}|\pi_{e\parallel}| - 4n_\gamma\rho_\gamma\sigma_2, \\
 \frac{d}{dt}\pi_{e\parallel} &= en_eE - 2n_e\pi_{e\parallel}\sigma_1\rho_e^{-1}|\pi_{e\parallel}|, \\
 \frac{d}{dt}E &= -2en_e\rho_e^{-1}|\pi_{e\parallel}| - j_p(E),
 \end{aligned} \tag{G.7.29}$$

where

$$\rho_e = n_e\bar{\epsilon}_{\mathbf{p}}, \tag{G.7.30}$$

$$\rho_\gamma = n_\gamma\bar{\epsilon}_{\mathbf{k}}, \tag{G.7.31}$$

$$\pi_{e\parallel} = n_e\bar{p}_{\parallel} \tag{G.7.32}$$

are the energy density of positrons (electrons), the energy density of photons and the density of “parallel momentum” of positrons (electrons), E is the electric field strength and j_p the unique component of \mathbf{j}_p parallel to \mathbf{E} . σ_1 and σ_2 are evaluated at $\epsilon^{\text{CoM}} = \bar{\epsilon}$ for each species. Note that Eqs. (G.7.29) are “classical” in the sense that the only quantum information is encoded in the terms describing pair creation and scattering probabilities. Finally Eqs. (G.7.29) are duly consistent with energy density conservation:

$$\frac{d}{dt}\left(\rho_e + \rho_\gamma + \frac{1}{2}E^2\right) = 0. \tag{G.7.33}$$

Eqs. (G.7.29) have to be integrated with the following initial conditions

$$\begin{aligned} n_e &= 0, \\ n_\gamma &= 0, \\ \rho_e &= 0, \\ \rho_\gamma &= 0, \\ \pi_{e\parallel} &= 0, \\ E &= E_0. \end{aligned}$$

In Fig. G.4 the results of the numerical integration for $E_0 = 9E_c$ is showed. The integration stops at $t = 150 \tau_C$ (where, as usual, $\tau_C = \hbar/m_e c^2$ is the Compton time of the electron). Each quantity is represented in units of m_e and $\lambda_C = \hbar/m_e c$, the Compton length of the electron.

The numerical integration confirms Kluger et al. (1991, 1992) that the system undergoes plasma oscillations:

1. the electric field does not abruptly reach the equilibrium value but rather oscillates with decreasing amplitude;
2. electrons and positrons oscillates in the electric field direction, reaching ultra relativistic velocities;
3. the role of the $e^+e^- \rightleftharpoons \gamma\gamma$ scatterings is marginal in the early time of the evolution.

This last point can be easily explained as follows: since the electrons are too extremely relativistic, the annihilation probability is very low and consequently the density of photons builds up very slowly (see details in Fig. G.4).

At late times the system is expected to relax to a plasma configuration of thermal equilibrium and assumptions (G.7.27) and (G.7.28) have to be generalized to take into account quantum spreading of the distribution functions. It is nevertheless instructive to look at the solutions of Eqs. (G.7.29) in this regime. Moreover, such a solution should give informations at least at the order of magnitude level. In Fig. G.5 the numerical solution of Eqs. (G.7.29) is plotted, but the integration extends here all the way up to $t = 7000 \tau_C$ (the time scale of oscillations is not resolved in these plots).

It is interesting that the leading term recovers the expected asymptotic behavior:

1. the electric field is screened to about the critical value: $E \simeq E_c$ for $t \sim 10^3 - 10^4 \tau_C \gg \tau_C$;
2. the initial electromagnetic energy density is distributed over electron-positron pairs and photons, indicating energy equipartition;

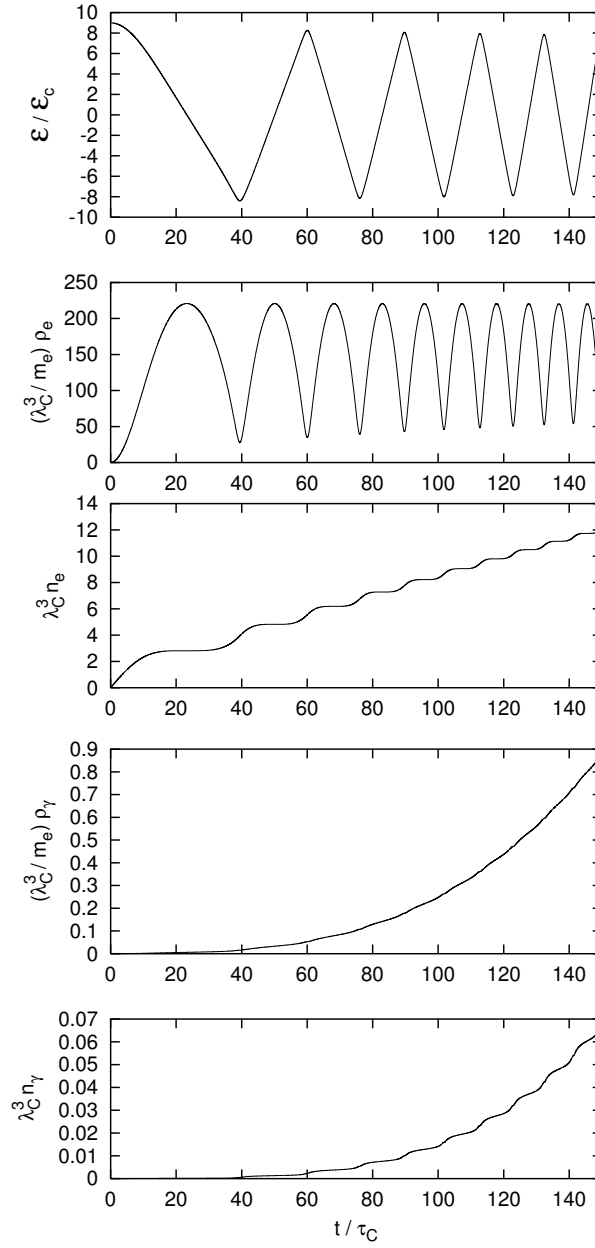


Figure G.4.: Plasma oscillations in a strong homogeneous electric field: early times behavior. Setting $E_0 = 9E_c$, $t < 150\tau_C$ and it is plotted, from the top to the bottom panel: a) electromagnetic field strength; b) electrons energy density; c) electrons number density; d) photons energy density; e) photons number density as functions of time.

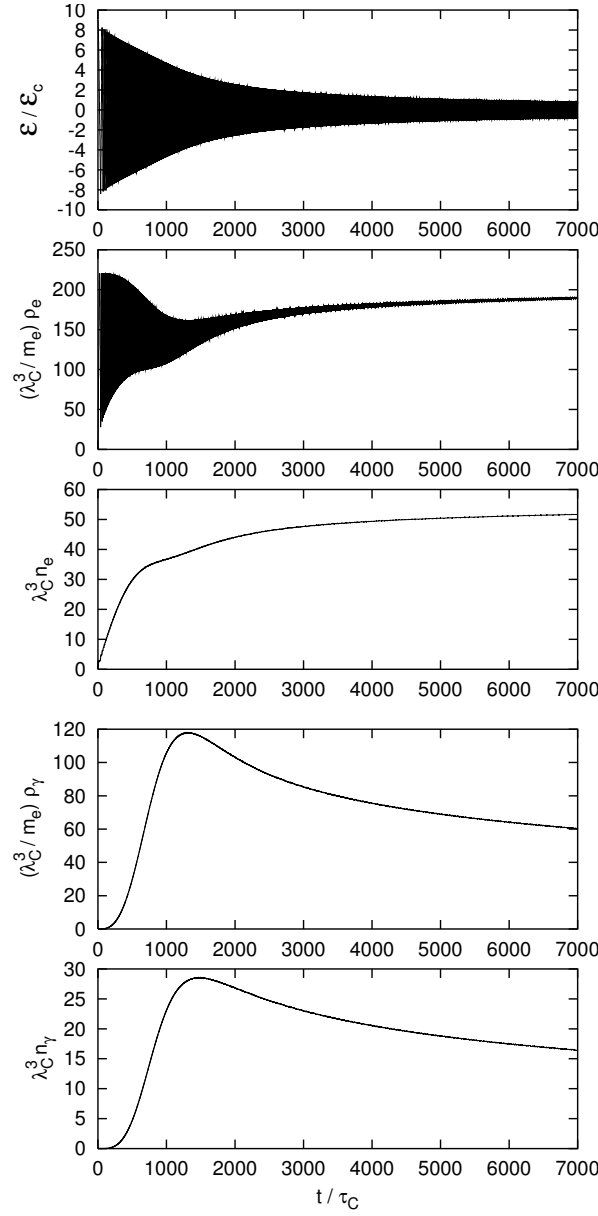


Figure G.5.: Plasma oscillations in a strong homogeneous electric field: late time expected behaviour. Setting $E_0 = 9E_c$, $t < 7000\tau_C$ and it is plotted, from the top to the bottom panel: a) electromagnetic field strength; b) electrons energy density; c) electrons number density; d) photons energy density; e) photons number density as functions of time – the oscillation period is not resolved in these plots. The model should have a breakdown at a time much earlier than $7000\tau_C$ and therefore this plot contains no more than qualitative informations.

3. photons and electron–positron pairs number densities are asymptotically comparable, indicating number equipartition.

At such late times a regime of thermalized electrons–positrons–photons plasma is expected to begin (as qualitatively indicated by points 2 and 3 above) during which the system is describable by hydrodynamic equations Ruffini et al. (2003b, 1999).

Let us summarize the results in this section. A very simple formalism is provided to describe simultaneously the creation of electron–positron pairs by a strong electric field $E \gtrsim E_c$ and the pairs annihilation into photons. As discussed in literature, one finds plasma oscillations. In particular the collisions do not prevent such a feature. This is because the momentum of electrons (positrons) is very high, therefore the cross-section for the process $e^+e^- \rightarrow \gamma\gamma$ is small and the annihilation into photons is negligible in the very first phase of the evolution. As a result, the system takes some time ($t \sim 10^3 - 10^4 \tau_C$) to thermalize to a $e^+e^-\gamma$ plasma equilibrium configuration.

G.8. Electro-fluidodynamics of the pair plasma

In the previous section, collisional terms in the Vlasov-Boltzmann equation are introduced, describing interaction of pairs and photons via the reaction $e^+e^- \leftrightarrow \gamma\gamma$. These results have been considered of interest in the studies of pair production in free electron lasers Ringwald (2001b,a, 2003), Bulanov et al. (2006), Narozhny et al. (2004), in optical lasers Blaschke et al. (2006), of millicharged fermions in extensions of the standard model of particle physics Gies et al. (2006), electromagnetic wave propagation in a plasma Bulanov et al. (2005), as well in astrophysics Ruffini et al. (2003b).

In this section, following Ruffini et al. (2007b), the case of undercritical electric field is explored. It is usually expected that for $E < E_c$ back reaction of the created electrons and positrons on the external electric field can be neglected and electrons and positrons would move as test particles along electric lines of force. Here it is shown that this is not the case in a uniform unbounded field. This work is important since the first observation of oscillations effects should be first detectable in experiments for the regime $E < E_c$, in view of the rapid developments in experimental techniques, see e.g. Tajima and Mourou (2002), Bulanov et al. (2003, 2004).

An approach is introduced based on continuity, energy-momentum conservation and Maxwell equations in order to account for the back reaction of the created pairs. This approach is more simple than the one, presented in the previous section. However, the final equations coincide with (G.7.29) when the collisional terms can be neglected. By this treatment one can analyze the new case of undercritical field, $E < E_c$, and recover the old results

for overcritical field, $E > E_c$. In particular, the range $0.15E_c < E < 10E_c$ is focused.

It is generally assumed that electrons and positrons are created at rest in pairs, due to vacuum polarization in uniform electric field with strength E Sauter (1931a), Heisenberg and Euler (1936), Schwinger (1951, 1954a,b), Narozhnyi and Nikishov (1970), Greiner et al. (1985), Grib et al. (1980), with the average rate per unit volume and per unit time

$$S(E) \equiv \frac{dN}{dVdt} = \frac{m_e^4}{4\pi^3} \left(\frac{E}{E_c} \right)^2 \exp \left(-\pi \frac{E_c}{E} \right). \quad (\text{G.8.1})$$

This formula is derived for uniform constant in time electric field. However, it still can be used for slowly time-varying electric field provided the inverse adiabaticity parameter Greiner et al. (1985), Grib et al. (1980), Brezin and Itzykson (1970), Popov (1971c, 1972b, 2001b), Popov (1973a) is much larger than one,

$$\eta = \frac{m_e E_{peak}}{\omega E_c} = \tilde{T} \tilde{E}_{peak} \gg 1, \quad (\text{G.8.2})$$

where ω is the frequency of oscillations, $\tilde{T} = m_e/\omega$ is dimensionless period of oscillations. Equation (G.8.2) implies that time variation of the electric field is much slower than the rate of pair production. In two specific cases considered in this section, $E = 10E_c$ and $E = 0.15E_c$ one finds for the first oscillation $\eta = 334$ and $\eta = 3.1 \times 10^6$ respectively. This demonstrates applicability of the formula (G.8.1) in this case.

From the continuity, energy-momentum conservation and Maxwell equations written for electrons, positrons and electromagnetic field one can have

$$\frac{\partial (\bar{n} U^\mu)}{\partial x^\mu} = S, \quad (\text{G.8.3})$$

$$\frac{\partial T^{\mu\nu}}{\partial x^\nu} = -F^{\mu\nu} J_\nu, \quad (\text{G.8.4})$$

$$\frac{\partial F^{\mu\nu}}{\partial x^\nu} = -4\pi J^\mu, \quad (\text{G.8.5})$$

where \bar{n} is the comoving number density of electrons, $T^{\mu\nu}$ is energy-momentum tensor of electrons and positrons

$$T^{\mu\nu} = m_e \bar{n} \left(U_{(+)}^\mu U_{(+)}^\nu + U_{(-)}^\mu U_{(-)}^\nu \right), \quad (\text{G.8.6})$$

$F^{\mu\nu}$ is electromagnetic field tensor, J^μ is the total four-current density, U^μ is four velocity respectively of positrons and electrons

$$U_{(+)}^\mu = U^\mu = \gamma (1, v, 0, 0), \quad U_{(-)}^\mu = \gamma (1, -v, 0, 0), \quad (\text{G.8.7})$$

v is the average velocity of electrons, $\gamma = (1 - v^2)^{-1/2}$ is relativistic Lorentz factor. Electrons and positrons move along the electric field lines in opposite directions.

One can choose a coordinate frame where pairs are created at rest. Electric field in this frame is directed along x -axis and introduce coordinate number density $n = \bar{n}\gamma$. In spatially homogeneous case from (G.8.3) one has

$$\dot{n} = S. \quad (\text{G.8.8})$$

With definitions (G.8.6) from (G.8.4) and equation of motion for positrons and electrons

$$m_e \frac{\partial U_{(\pm)}^\mu}{\partial x^\nu} = \mp e F_\nu^\mu, \quad (\text{G.8.9})$$

one finds

$$\frac{\partial T^{\mu\nu}}{\partial x^\nu} = -e\bar{n} \left(U_{(+)}^\nu - U_{(-)}^\nu \right) F_\nu^\mu + m_e S \left(U_{(+)}^\mu + U_{(-)}^\mu \right) = -F_\nu^\mu J^\nu, \quad (\text{G.8.10})$$

where the total current density is the sum of conducting J_{cond}^μ and polarization J_{pol}^μ currents Gatoff et al. (1987) densities

$$J^\mu = J_{cond}^\mu + J_{pol}^\mu, \quad (\text{G.8.11})$$

$$J_{cond}^\mu = e\bar{n} \left(U_{(+)}^\mu - U_{(-)}^\mu \right), \quad (\text{G.8.12})$$

$$J_{pol}^\mu = \frac{2m_e S}{E} \gamma (0, 1, 0, 0). \quad (\text{G.8.13})$$

Energy-momentum tensor in (G.8.4) and electromagnetic field tensor in (G.8.5) change for two reasons: 1) electrons and positrons acceleration in the electric field, given by the term J_{cond}^μ , 2) particle creation, described by the term J_{pol}^μ . Equation (G.8.3) is satisfied separately for electrons and positrons.

Defining energy density of positrons

$$\rho = \frac{1}{2} T^{00} = m_e n \gamma, \quad (\text{G.8.14})$$

one can find from (G.8.4)

$$\dot{\rho} = envE + m_e \gamma S. \quad (\text{G.8.15})$$

Due to homogeneity of the electric field and plasma, electrons and positrons have the same energy and absolute value of the momentum density p , but their momenta have opposite directions. The definitions also imply for ve-

locity and momentum densities of electrons and positrons

$$v = \frac{p}{\rho}, \quad (\text{G.8.16})$$

and

$$\rho^2 = p^2 + m_e^2 n^2, \quad (\text{G.8.17})$$

which is just relativistic relation between the energy, momentum and mass densities of particles.

Gathering together the above equations one then has the following equations

$$\dot{n} = S, \quad (\text{G.8.18})$$

$$\dot{\rho} = E \left(env + \frac{m_e \gamma S}{E} \right), \quad (\text{G.8.19})$$

$$\dot{p} = enE + m_e v \gamma S, \quad (\text{G.8.20})$$

$$\dot{E} = -8\pi \left(env + \frac{m_e \gamma S}{E} \right). \quad (\text{G.8.21})$$

From (G.8.19) and (G.8.21) one obtains the energy conservation equation

$$\frac{E_0^2 - E^2}{8\pi} + 2\rho = 0, \quad (\text{G.8.22})$$

where E_0 is the constant of integration, so the particle energy density vanishes for initial value of the electric field, E_0 .

These equations give also the maximum number of the pair density asymptotically attainable consistently with the above rate equation and energy conservation

$$n_0 = \frac{E_0^2}{8\pi m_e}. \quad (\text{G.8.23})$$

For simplicity dimensionless variables $n = m_e^3 \tilde{n}$, $\rho = m_e^4 \tilde{\rho}$, $p = m_e^4 \tilde{p}$, $E = E_c \tilde{E}$, and $t = m_e^{-1} \tilde{t}$ are introduced. With these variables the system of equations (G.8.18)-(G.8.21) takes the form

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d\tilde{n}}{d\tilde{t}} &= \tilde{S}, \\ \frac{d\tilde{\rho}}{d\tilde{t}} &= \tilde{n}\tilde{E}\tilde{v} + \tilde{\gamma}\tilde{S}, \\ \frac{d\tilde{p}}{d\tilde{t}} &= \tilde{n}\tilde{E} + \tilde{\gamma}\tilde{v}\tilde{S}, \\ \frac{d\tilde{E}}{d\tilde{t}} &= -8\pi\alpha \left(\tilde{n}\tilde{v} + \frac{\tilde{\gamma}\tilde{S}}{\tilde{E}} \right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{G.8.24})$$

where $\tilde{S} = \frac{1}{4\pi^3} \tilde{E}^2 \exp\left(-\frac{\pi}{\tilde{E}}\right)$, $\tilde{v} = \frac{\tilde{p}}{\tilde{\rho}}$ and $\tilde{\gamma} = (1 - \tilde{v}^2)^{-1/2}$, $\alpha = e^2/(\hbar c)$ as before.

The system of equations (G.8.24) is solved numerically with the initial conditions $n(0) = \rho(0) = v(0) = 0$, and the electric field $E(0) = E_0$.

In fig. G.6, electric field strength, number density, velocity and Lorentz gamma factor of electrons as functions of time, are presented for initial values of the electric field $E_0 = 10E_c$ (left column) and $E_0 = 0.15E_c$ (right column). Slowly decaying plasma oscillations develop in both cases. The half-life of oscillations to be $10^3 t_c$ for $E_0 = 10E_c$ and $10^5 t_c$ for $E_0 = 0.8E_c$ are estimated respectively. The period of the first oscillation is $50t_c$ and $3 \times 10^7 t_c$, the Lorentz factor of electrons and positrons in the first oscillation equals 75 and 3×10^5 respectively for $E_0 = 10E_c$ and $E_0 = 0.15E_c$. Therefore, in contrast to the case $E > E_c$, for $E < E_c$ plasma oscillations develop on a much longer timescale, electrons and positrons reach extremely relativistic velocities.

In fig. G.7 the characteristic length of oscillations is shown together with the distance between the pairs at the moment of their creation. For constant electric field the formation length for the electron-positron pairs, or the quantum tunneling length, is not simply $m_e/(eE)$, as expected from a semi-classical approximation, but Nikishov (1969), Khriplovich (2000)

$$D^* = \frac{m_e}{eE} \left(\frac{E_c}{E} \right)^{1/2}. \quad (\text{G.8.25})$$

Thus, given initial electric field strength one can define two characteristic distances: D^* , the distance between created pairs, above which pair creation is possible, and the length of oscillations, $D = c\tau$, above which plasma oscillations occur in a uniform electric field. The length of oscillations is the maximal distance between two turning points in the motion of electrons and positrons (see fig. G.7). From fig. G.7 it is clear that $D \gg D^*$. In the oscillation phenomena the larger electric field is, the larger becomes the density of pairs and therefore the back reaction, or the screening effect, is stronger. Thus the period of oscillations becomes shorter. Note that the frequency of oscillation is not equal to the plasma frequency, so it cannot be used as the measure of the latter. Notice that for $E \ll E_c$ the length of oscillations becomes macroscopically large.

At fig. G.8 maximum Lorentz gamma factor in the first oscillation is presented depending on initial value of the electric field. Since in the successive oscillations the maximal value of the Lorentz factor is monotonically decreasing (see fig. G.6) It is concluded that for every initial value of the electric field there exists a maximum Lorentz factor attainable by the electrons and positrons in the plasma. It is interesting to stress the dependence of the Lorentz factor on initial electric field strength. The kinetic energy contribution becomes overwhelming in the $E < E_c$ case. On the contrary, in the case

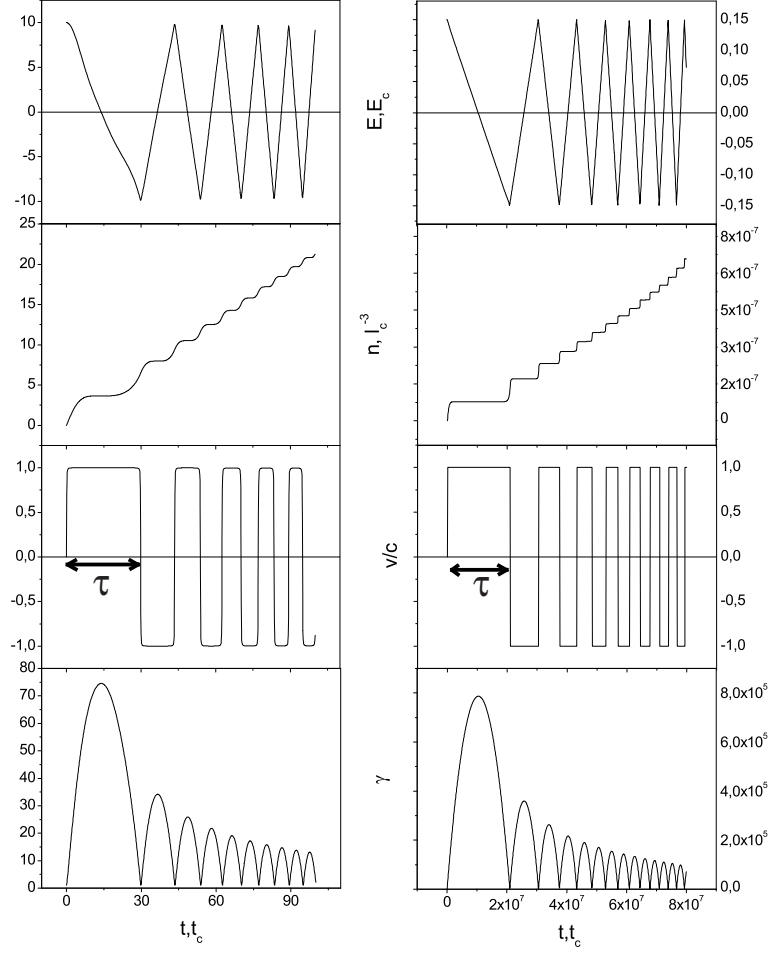


Figure G.6.: Electric field strength, number density of electrons, their velocity and Lorentz gamma factor depending on time with $E_0 = 10E_c$ (left column) and $E_0 = 0.15E_c$ (right column). Electric field, number density and velocity of positron are measured respectively in terms of the critical field E_c , Compton volume $\lambda_C^3 = \left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c}\right)^3$, and the speed of light c . The length of oscillation is defined as $D = c\tau$, where τ is the time needed for the first half-oscillation, shown above.

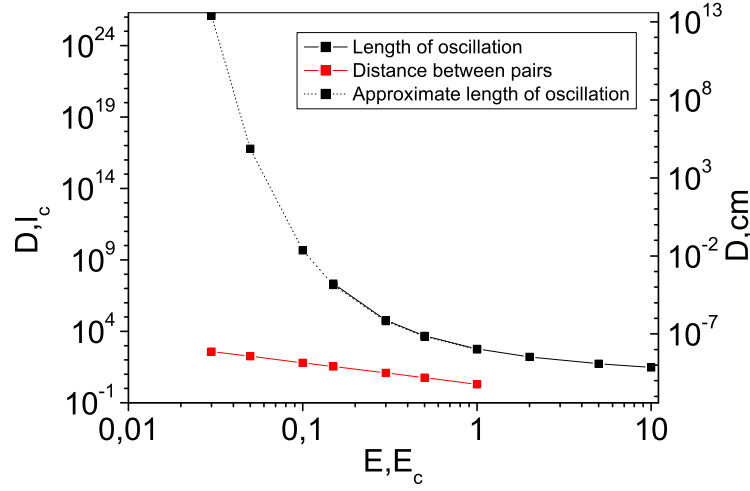


Figure G.7.: Maximum length of oscillations (black curves) together with the distance between electron and positron in a pair (red curve) computed from (G.8.25), depending on initial value of electric field strength. The solid black curve is obtained from solutions of exact equations (G.8.24), while the dotted black curve corresponds to solutions of approximate equation (G.8.27).

$E > E_c$ the electromagnetic energy of the field goes mainly into the rest mass energy of the pairs.

This diagram clearly shows that never in this process the test particle approximation for the electrons and positrons motion in uniform electric field can be applied. Without considering back-reaction on the initial field, electrons and positrons moving in a uniform electric field would experience constant acceleration reaching $v \sim c$ for $E = E_c$ on the timescale t_c and keep that speed thereafter. Therefore, the back reaction effects in a uniform field are essential both in the case of $E > E_c$ and $E < E_c$.

The average rate of pair creation is compared for two cases: when the electric field value is constant in time (an external energy source keeps the field unchanged) and when it is self-regulated by equations (G.8.24). The result is represented in fig. G.9. It is clear from fig. G.9 that when the back reaction effects are taken into account, the effective rate of the pair production is smaller than the corresponding rate (G.8.1) in a uniform field E_0 . At the same time, discharge of the field takes much longer time. To quantify this effect it needs to compute the efficiency of the pair production defined as $\epsilon = n(t_S)/n_0$ where t_S is the time when pair creation with the constant rate $S(E_0)$ would stop, and n_0 is defined above, see (G.8.23). For $E_0 = E_c$ one finds $\epsilon = 14\%$, while for $E_0 = 0.3E_c$ one has $\epsilon = 1\%$.

It is clear from the structure of the above equations that for $E < E_c$ the

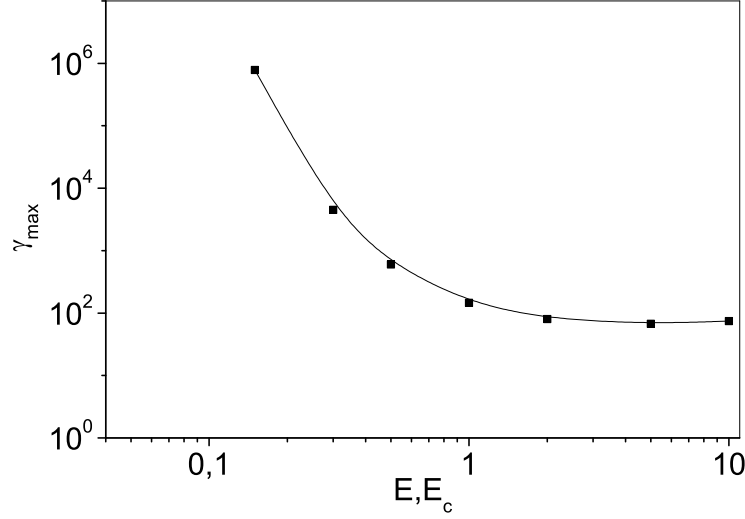


Figure G.8: Maximum Lorentz gamma factor γ reached at the first oscillation depending on initial value of the electric field strength.

number of pairs is small, electrons and positrons are accelerated in electric field and the conducting current dominates. Assuming electric field to be weak, the polarization current is neglected in energy conservation (G.8.19) and in Maxwell equation (G.8.21). This means energy density change due to acceleration is much larger than the one due to pair creation,

$$Eenv \gg m_e \gamma S. \quad (\text{G.8.26})$$

In this case oscillations equations (G.8.18)-(G.8.21) simplify. From (G.8.19) and (G.8.20) one has $\dot{\rho} = v\dot{p}$, and using (G.8.16) obtains $v = \pm 1$. This is the limit when rest mass energy is much smaller than the kinetic energy, $\gamma \gg 1$.

One may therefore use only the first and the last equations from the above set. Taking time derivative of the Maxwell equation one arrives to a single second order differential equation

$$\ddot{E} + \frac{2em_e^4}{\pi^2} \left(\frac{E}{E_c} \right) \left| \frac{E}{E_c} \right| \exp \left(-\pi \left| \frac{E_c}{E} \right| \right) = 0. \quad (\text{G.8.27})$$

Equation (G.8.27) is integrated numerically to find the length of oscillations shown in fig. G.7 for $E < E_c$. Notice that condition (G.8.26) means ultrarelativistic approximation for electrons and positrons, so that although according to (G.8.18) there is creation of pairs with rest mass $2m$ for each pair, the corresponding increase of plasma energy is neglected, as can be seen from (G.8.26).

Now one can turn to qualitative properties of the system (G.8.18)-(G.8.21).

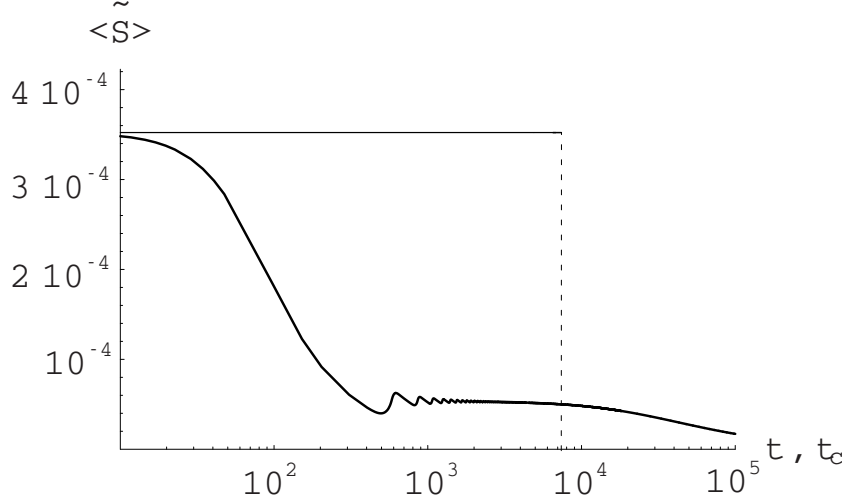


Figure G.9.: The average rate of pair production n/t is shown as function of time (thick curve), comparing to its initial value $S(E_0)$ (thin line) for $E_0 = E_c$. The dashed line marks the time when the energy of electric field would have exhausted if the rate kept constant.

These nonlinear ordinary differential equations describe certain dynamical system which can be studied by using methods of qualitative analysis of dynamical systems. The presence of the two integrals (G.8.17) and (G.8.22) allows reduction of the system to two dimensions. It is useful to work with the variables v and E . In these variables one has

$$\frac{d\tilde{v}}{d\tilde{t}} = (1 - \tilde{v}^2)^{3/2} \tilde{E}, \quad (\text{G.8.28})$$

$$\frac{d\tilde{E}}{d\tilde{t}} = -\frac{1}{2} \tilde{v} (1 - \tilde{v}^2)^{1/2} (\tilde{E}_0^2 - \tilde{E}^2) - 8\pi\alpha \frac{\tilde{S}}{\tilde{E} (1 - \tilde{v}^2)^{1/2}}. \quad (\text{G.8.29})$$

Introducing the new time variable τ

$$\frac{d\tau}{d\tilde{t}} = (1 - \tilde{v}^2)^{-1/2} \quad (\text{G.8.30})$$

one arrives at

$$\frac{d\tilde{v}}{d\tau} = (1 - \tilde{v}^2)^2 \tilde{E}, \quad (\text{G.8.31})$$

$$\frac{d\tilde{E}}{d\tau} = -\frac{1}{2} \tilde{v} (1 - \tilde{v}^2) (\tilde{E}_0^2 - \tilde{E}^2) - 8\pi\alpha \frac{\tilde{S}}{\tilde{E}}. \quad (\text{G.8.32})$$

Clearly the phase space is bounded by the two curves $\tilde{v} = \pm 1$. Moreover, physical requirement $\rho \geq 0$ leads to existence of two other bounds $\tilde{E} = \pm \tilde{E}_0$.

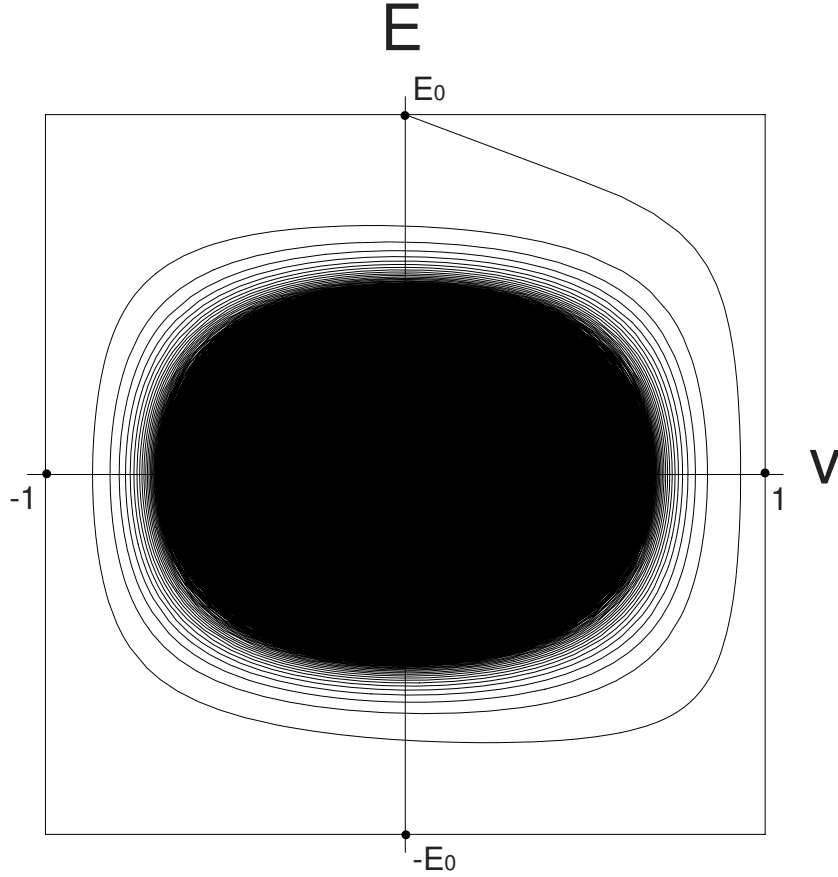


Figure G.10.: Phase portrait of the two-dimensional dynamical system (G.8.31),(G.8.32). Tildes are omitted. Notice that phase trajectories are not closed curves and with each cycle they approach the point with $\tilde{E} = 0$ and $\tilde{v} = 0$.

This system has only one singular point in the physical region, of the type focus at $\tilde{E} = 0$ and $\tilde{v} = 0$.

The phase portrait of the dynamical system (G.8.31),(G.8.32) is represented at fig. G.10. Thus, every phase trajectory tends asymptotically to the only singular point at $\tilde{E} = 0$ and $\tilde{v} = 0$. This means oscillations stop only when electric field vanishes. At that point clearly

$$\rho = m_e n. \quad (G.8.33)$$

is valid. i.e. all the energy in the system transforms just to the rest mass of the pairs.

In order to illustrate details of the phase trajectories shown at fig. G.10 only 1.5 cycles are plotted at fig. G.11. One can see that the deviation from closed curves shown by dashed curves is maximal when the field peaks, namely when the pair production rate is maximal.

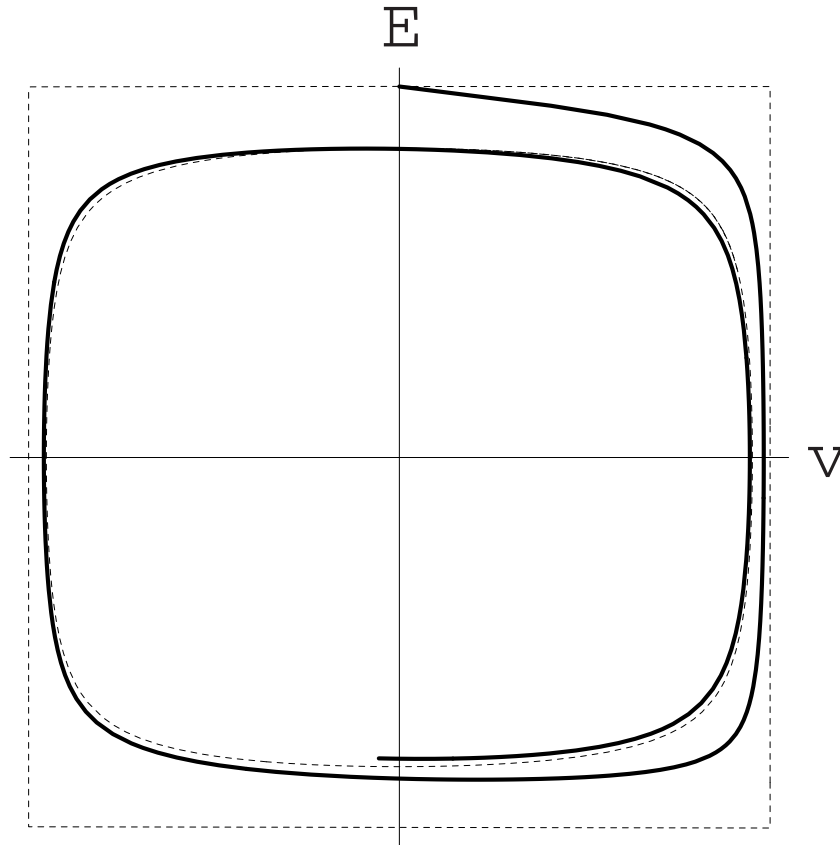


Figure G.11.: Phase trajectory for 1.5 cycles (thick curve) compared with solutions where the Schwinger pair production is switched off (dashed curves).

The above treatment has been done by considering uniquely back reaction of the electron-positron pairs on the external uniform electric field. The only source of damping of the oscillations is pair production, i.e. creation of mass. As analysis shows the damping in this case is exponentially weak. However, since electrons and positrons are strongly accelerated in electric field the bremsstrahlung radiation may give significant contribution to the damping of oscillations and further reduce the pair creation rate. Therefore, the effective rate shown in fig. G.9 will represent an upper limit. In order to estimate the effect of bremsstrahlung, the classical formula for the radiation loss in electric field is recalled

$$I = \frac{2}{3} \frac{e^4}{m_e^2} E^2 = \frac{2}{3} \alpha m_e^2 \left(\frac{E}{E_c} \right)^2. \quad (\text{G.8.34})$$

Thus the equations (G.8.19) and (G.8.20), generalized for bremsstrahlung, are

$$\dot{\rho} = E \left(env + \frac{m_e \gamma S}{E} \right) - \frac{2}{3} e^4 m_e E^2, \quad (\text{G.8.35})$$

$$\dot{p} = enE + m_e v \gamma S - \frac{2}{3} e^4 m_e E^2 v. \quad (\text{G.8.36})$$

while equations (G.8.18) and (G.8.21) remain unchanged. Assuming that new terms are small, relations (G.8.17) and (G.8.22) are still approximately satisfied.

Now damping of the oscillations is caused by two terms:

$$\frac{\tilde{\gamma}}{4\pi^2} \tilde{E}^2 \exp \left(-\frac{\pi}{\tilde{E}} \right) \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{2}{3} \alpha \tilde{E}^2. \quad (\text{G.8.37})$$

The modified system of equations is integrated, taking into account radiation loss, starting with $E_0 = 10E_c$. The results are presented in fig. G.12 where the sum of the energy of electric field and electrons-positrons pairs normalized to the initial energy is shown as a function of time. The energy loss reaches 20 percent for 400 Compton times. Thus the effect of bremsstrahlung is as important as the effect of collisions considered in Ruffini et al. (2003c) for $E > E_c$, leading to comparable energy loss for pairs on the same timescale. For $E < E_c$ one expects that the damping due to bremsstrahlung dominates, but the correct description in this case requires Vlasov-Boltzmann treatment Aksenov et al. (2007).

The damping of the plasma oscillations due to electron-positron annihilation into photons has been addressed in Ruffini et al. (2003c). There it was found that the system evolves towards an electron-positron-photon plasma reaching energy equipartition. Such a system undergoes self-acceleration process following the work of Ruffini et al. (1999).

Therefore the following conclusions are reached:

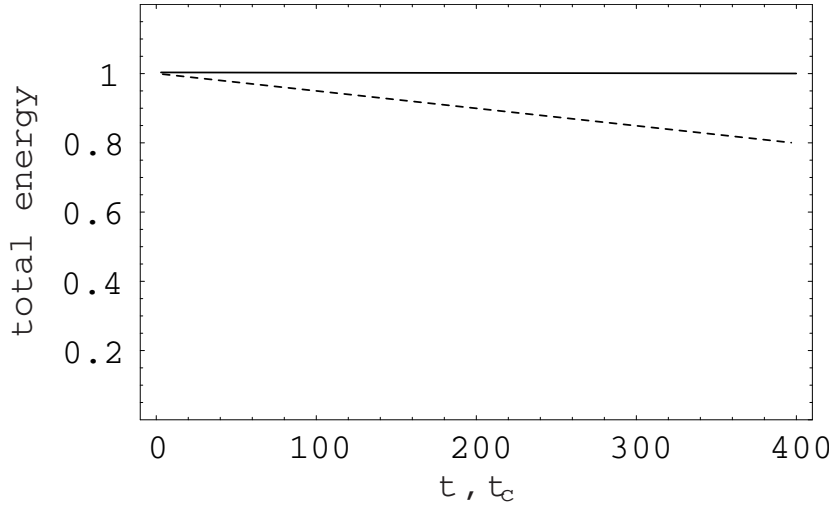


Figure G.12.: Losses of the energy due to classical bremsstrahlung radiation. The energy density of the system of electrons, positrons and the electric field normalized to the initial energy density is shown without (solid line) and with (dashed line) the effect of bremsstrahlung.

- It is usually assumed that for $E < E_c$ electron-positron pairs, created by the vacuum polarization process, move as charged particles in external uniform electric field reaching arbitrary large Lorentz factors. The existence of plasma oscillations of the electron-positron pairs also for $E \lesssim E_c$ is demonstrated. The corresponding results for $E > E_c$ are well known in the literature. For both cases the maximum Lorentz factors γ_{\max} reached by electrons and positrons are determined. The length of oscillations is $10 \hbar / (m_e c)$ for $E_0 = 10E_c$, and $10^7 \hbar / (m_e c)$ for $E_0 = 0.15E_c$. The asymptotic behavior in time, $t \rightarrow \infty$, of the plasma oscillations by the phase portrait technique is also studied.
- For $E > E_c$ the vacuum polarization process transforms the electromagnetic energy of the field mainly in the rest mass of pairs, with moderate contribution to their kinetic energy: for $E_0 = 10E_c$ one finds $\gamma_{\max} = 76$. For $E < E_c$ the kinetic energy contribution is maximized with respect to the rest mass of pairs: $\gamma_{\max} = 8 \times 10^5$ for $E_0 = 0.15E_c$.
- In the case of oscillations the effective rate of pair production is smaller than the rate in uniform electric field a constant in time, and consequently, the discharge process lasts longer. The half-life of oscillations is $10^3 t_c$ for $E_0 = 10E_c$ and $10^5 t_c$ for $E_0 = 0.8E_c$. The efficiency of pair production is computed with respect to the one in a uniform constant field. For $E = 0.3E_c$ the efficiency is reduced to one percent, decreasing further for smaller initial electric field.

All these considerations apply to a uniform electric field unbounded in

space. The presence of a boundary or a gradient in electric field would require the use of partial differential equations, in contrast to the ordinary differential equations used here. This topic needs further study. The effect of bremsstrahlung for $E > E_c$ is also estimated, and it is found that it represents comparable contribution to the damping of the plasma oscillations caused by collisions Ruffini et al. (2003c). It is therefore clear, that the effects of oscillations introduces a new and firm upper limit to the rate of pair production which would be further reduced if one takes into account bremsstrahlung, collisions and boundary effects.

H. Thermalization of the mildly relativistic pair plasma

An electron-positron plasma is of interest in many fields of physics and astrophysics. In the early universe Weinberg (1972), Kolb and Turner (1990) during the lepton era, ultrarelativistic electron-positron pairs contributed to the matter contents of the Universe. In GRBs electron-positron pairs play an essential role in the dynamics of expansion Goodman (1986), Piran (1999), Ruffini et al. (1999). Indications exist on the presence of the pair plasma also in active galactic nuclei Wardle et al. (1998), in the center of our Galaxy Churazov et al. (2005), around hypothetical quark stars Usov (1998). In the laboratory pair plasma is expected to appear in the fields of ultraintense lasers Blaschke et al. (2006).

In many stationary astrophysical sources the pair plasma is thought to be in thermodynamic equilibrium. A detailed study of the relevant processes Bisnovatyi-Kogan et al. (1971), Weaver (1976), Lightman (1982), Gould (1982), Stepney and Guilbert (1983), Coppi and Blandford (1990), radiation mechanisms Lightman and Band (1981), possible equilibrium configurations Lightman (1982), Svensson (1982a) and spectra Zdziarski (1984) in an optically thin pair plasma has been carried out. Particular attention has been given to collisional relaxation process Gould (1981), Stepney (1983), pair production and annihilation Svensson (1982b), relativistic bremsstrahlung Gould (1980), Haug (1985), double Compton scattering Lightman (1981), Gould (1984).

An equilibrium occurs if the sum of all reaction rates vanishes. For instance, electron-positron pairs are in equilibrium when the net pair production (annihilation) rate is zero. This can be achieved by variety of ways and the corresponding condition can be represented as a system of algebraic equations Svensson (1984). However, the main assumption made in all the above mentioned works is that the plasma is in thermodynamic equilibrium.

At the same time, in some cases considered above the pair plasma can be optically thick. Although moderately thick plasmas have been considered in the literature Guilbert and Stepney (1985), only qualitative description is available for large optical depths. Assumption of thermal equilibrium is often adopted for rapidly evolving systems such as GRBs without explicit proof Goodman (1986), Piran (1999), Ruffini et al. (1999), Iwamoto and Takahara (2004). Then hydrodynamic approximation is usually applied both for leptons and photons. However, particles may not be in equilibrium initially. Moreover, it is very likely situation, especially in the early Universe or in

transient events when the energy is released on a very short timescale and there is no time for the system to relax to thermal equilibrium configuration.

Ultrarelativistic expansion of GRB sources is unprecedented in astrophysics. There are indications that relativistic jets in X-ray binaries have Lorentz factors $\gamma \sim 2 - 10$ while in active galactic nuclei $\gamma \sim 10 - 20$ Miller-Jones et al. (2006), but some bursts sources have $\gamma \sim 400$ and possibly more Vergani (2007). There is a consensus in the literature that the acceleration required to reach ultrarelativistic velocity in GRBs comes from the radiation pressure, namely from photons and electron-positron pairs. Therefore, the source does not move as a whole, but expands from a compact region, almost reaching the speed of light. The bulk of radiation is emitted far from the region of formation of the plasma, when it becomes transparent for photons, trapped initially inside by the huge optical depth. Thus the plasma is optically thick at the moment of its formation and intense interactions between electrons, positrons and photons take place in it. Even if initially the energy is released in the form of only photons, or only pairs, the process of creation and annihilation of pairs soon redistribute the energy between particles in such a way that the final state will be a mixture of pairs and photons. The main question arises: *what is the initial state, prior to expansion, of the pair plasma?* Is it in a kind of equilibrium and, if so, is it thermal equilibrium, as expected from the optically thick plasma? Stationary sources in astrophysics have enough time for such an equilibrium to be achieved. On the contrary, for GRBs with the timescale of expansion of the order of milliseconds it is not at all clear that equilibrium can be reached.

In the literature there is no consensus on this point. Some authors considered thermal equilibrium as the initial state prior to expansion Goodman (1986), Ruffini et al. (1999), while others did not Cavallo and Rees (1978). In fact, the study of the pair plasma equilibrium configurations in detail, performed in Svensson (1982a), cannot answer this question, because essentially nonequilibrium processes have to be considered.

Thus, observations provide motivation for theoretical analysis of physical conditions taking place in the sources of GRBs, and more generally, in nonequilibrium optically thick pair plasma. Notice that there is substantial difference between the ion-electron plasma on the one hand and electron-positron plasma on the other hand. Firstly, the former is collisionless in the wide range of parameters, while collisions are always essential in the latter. Secondly, when collisions are important relevant interactions in the former case are Coulomb scattering of particles which are usually described by the classical Rutherford cross-section. In contrast, interactions in the pair plasma are described by quantum cross-sections even if the plasma itself can be still considered as classical one.

The study reported in Aksenov et al. (2007), Aksenov et al. (2008) in the case of pure pair plasma clarified the issue of initial state of the pair plasma in GRB sources. The numerical calculations show that the pair plasma quickly

reach thermal equilibrium prior to expansion, due to intense binary and triple collisions. In this Chapter details about the computational scheme adopted in Aksenov et al. (2007) are given.

H.1. Qualitative description of the pair plasma

First of all the domain of parameters characterizing the pair plasma considered in this Chapter is specified. It is convenient to use dimensionless parameters usually adopted for this purpose.

Mildly relativistic pair plasma is considered, thus the average energy per particle ϵ brackets the electron rest mass energy

$$0.1 \text{ MeV} \lesssim \epsilon \lesssim 10 \text{ MeV}. \quad (\text{H.1.1})$$

The lower boundary is required for significant concentrations of pairs, while the upper boundary is set to avoid substantial production of other particles such as muons.

The plasma parameter is $g = (n_- d^3)^{-1}$, where $d = \sqrt{\frac{k_B T_-}{4\pi e^2 n_-}} = \frac{c}{\omega} \sqrt{\theta_-}$ is the Debye length, k_B is Boltzmann's constant, n_- and T_- are electron number density and temperature respectively, $\theta_- = k_B T_- / (m_e c^2)$ is dimensionless temperature, $\omega = \sqrt{4\pi e^2 n_- / m_e}$ is the plasma frequency. To ensure applicability of kinetic approach it is necessary that the plasma parameter is small, $g \ll 1$. This condition means that kinetic energy of particles dominates their potential energy due to mutual interaction. For the pair plasma considered in this Chapter this condition is satisfied.

Further, the classicality parameter, defined as $\varkappa = e^2 / (\hbar v_r) = \alpha / \beta_r$, where $v_r = \beta_r c$ is mean relative velocity of particles, see (H.7.12). The condition $\varkappa \gg 1$ means that particles collisions can be considered classically, while for $\varkappa \ll 1$ quantum description is required. Both for pairs and protons quantum cross-sections are used since $\varkappa < 1$.

The strength of screening of the Coulomb interactions is characterized by the Coulomb logarithm $\Lambda = m_e d v_r / \hbar$. Coulomb logarithm varies with mean particle velocity, and it cannot be set a constant as in most of studies of the pair plasma.

Finally, pair plasma is considered with linear dimensions R exceeding the mean free path of photons $l = (n_- \sigma)^{-1}$, where n_- is concentration of electrons and σ is the corresponding total cross section. Thus the optical depth $\tau = n_- \sigma R \gg 1$ is large, and interactions between photons and other particles have to be taken in due account. These interaction are reviewed in the next section.

Note that natural parameters for perturbative expansion in the problem under consideration are the fine structure constant α and the electron-proton mass ratio m_e / m_p .

Pure pair plasma composed of electrons e^- , positrons e^+ , and photons γ is considered. It is assumed that pairs or photons appear by some physical process in the region with a size R and on a timescale $t < R/c$. Distribution functions of particles depend on neither spatial coordinates nor direction of momentum $f_i = f_i(\epsilon, t)$, i.e. isotropic in momentum space and uniform plasma is considered.

To make sure that classical kinetic description is adequate the dimensionless degeneracy temperature is estimated

$$\theta_F = \left[\left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c} \right)^2 \left(3\pi^2 n_- \right)^{\frac{2}{3}} + 1 \right]^{1/2} - 1, \quad (\text{H.1.2})$$

and compared with the estimated temperature in thermal equilibrium. With initial conditions (H.1.1) the degeneracy temperature is always smaller than the temperature in thermal equilibrium and therefore the classical kinetic approach is applied. Besides, since ideal plasma is considered with the plasma parameter $g \sim 10^{-3}$ it is possible to use one-particle distribution functions. These considerations justify the computational approach based on classical relativistic Boltzmann equation. At the same time the right hand side of Boltzmann equations contains collisional integrals with quantum and not classical matrix elements, as discussed in the introduction.

Relativistic Boltzmann equations Belyaev and Budker (1956), Mihalas and Mihalas (1984) in spherically symmetric case are

$$\frac{1}{c} \frac{\partial f_i}{\partial t} + \beta_i \left(\mu \frac{\partial f_i}{\partial r} + \frac{1 - \mu^2}{r} \frac{\partial f_i}{\partial \mu} \right) - \nabla U \frac{\partial f_i}{\partial \mathbf{p}} = \sum_q (\eta_i^q - \chi_i^q f_i), \quad (\text{H.1.3})$$

where $\mu = \cos \vartheta$, ϑ is the angle between the radius vector \mathbf{r} from the origin and the particle momentum \mathbf{p} , U is a potential due to some external force, $\beta_i = v_i/c$ are particles velocities, $f_i(\epsilon, t)$ are their distribution functions, the index i denotes the type of particle, ϵ is their energy, and η_i^q and χ_i^q are the emission and the absorption coefficients for the production of a particle of type “ i ” via the physical process labeled by q . This is a coupled system of partial-integro-differential equations. For homogeneous and isotropic distribution functions of electrons, positrons and photons (H.1.3) reduces to

$$\frac{1}{c} \frac{\partial f_i}{\partial t} = \sum_q (\eta_i^q - \chi_i^q f_i), \quad (\text{H.1.4})$$

which is a coupled system of integro-differential equations. In (H.1.4) the Vlasov term $\nabla U \frac{\partial f_i}{\partial \mathbf{p}}$ is explicitly neglected.

Therefore, the left-hand side of the Boltzmann equation is reduced to partial derivative of the distribution function with respect to time. The right-

hand side contains collisional integrals, representing interactions between electrons, positrons and photons.

Differential probability for all processes per unit time and unit volume Berestetskii et al. (1982) is defined as

$$dw = c(2\pi\hbar)^4 \delta^{(4)}(\mathbf{p}_f - \mathbf{p}_i) |M_{fi}|^2 V \times \left[\prod_b \frac{\hbar c}{2\epsilon_b V} \right] \left[\prod_a \frac{d\mathbf{p}'_a}{(2\pi\hbar)^3} \frac{\hbar c}{2\epsilon'_a} \right], \quad (\text{H.1.5})$$

where \mathbf{p}'_a and ϵ'_a are respectively momenta and energies of outgoing particles, ϵ_b are energies of particles before interaction, M_{fi} are the corresponding matrix elements, $\delta^{(4)}$ stands for energy-momentum conservation, V is the normalization volume. The matrix elements are related to the scattering amplitudes by

$$M_{fi} = \left[\prod_b \frac{\hbar c}{2\epsilon_b V} \right] \left[\prod_a \frac{\hbar c}{2\epsilon'_a V} \right] T_{fi}. \quad (\text{H.1.6})$$

As example consider absorption coefficient for Compton scattering which is given by

$$\chi^{\text{fle}^\pm \rightarrow \text{fl}'\text{e}^\pm} f_\gamma = \int d\mathbf{k}' d\mathbf{p} d\mathbf{p}' w_{\mathbf{k}', \mathbf{p}'; \mathbf{k}, \mathbf{p}} f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}, t) f_\pm(\mathbf{p}, t), \quad (\text{H.1.7})$$

where \mathbf{p} and \mathbf{k} are momenta of electron (positron) and photon respectively, $d\mathbf{p} = d\epsilon_\pm d\epsilon_\pm^2 \beta_\pm / c^3$, $d\mathbf{k}' = d\epsilon'_\gamma \epsilon_\gamma'^2 d\epsilon'_\gamma / c^3$ and the differential probability $w_{\mathbf{k}', \mathbf{p}'; \mathbf{k}, \mathbf{p}}$ is given by (H.5.3).

In (H.1.7) one can perform one integration over $d\mathbf{p}'$

$$\int d\mathbf{p}' \delta(\mathbf{k} + \mathbf{p} - \mathbf{k}' - \mathbf{p}') \rightarrow 1, \quad (\text{H.1.8})$$

but it is necessary to take into account the momentum conservation in the next integration over $d\mathbf{k}'$, so

$$\begin{aligned} & \int d\epsilon'_\gamma \delta(\epsilon_\gamma + \epsilon_\pm - \epsilon'_\gamma - \epsilon'_\pm) = \\ & = \int d(\epsilon'_\gamma + \epsilon'_\pm) \frac{1}{|\partial(\epsilon'_\gamma + \epsilon'_\pm)/\partial\epsilon'_\gamma|} \delta(\epsilon_\gamma + \epsilon_\pm - \epsilon'_\gamma - \epsilon'_\pm) \rightarrow \frac{1}{|\partial(\epsilon'_\gamma + \epsilon'_\pm)/\partial\epsilon'_\gamma|} \equiv J_{\text{cs}}, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.1.9})$$

where the Jacobian of the transformation is

$$J_{\text{cs}} = \frac{1}{1 - \beta'_\pm \mathbf{b}'_\gamma \cdot \mathbf{b}'_\pm}, \quad (\text{H.1.10})$$

where $\mathbf{b}_i = \mathbf{p}_i / p$, $\mathbf{b}'_i = \mathbf{p}'_i / p'$, $\mathbf{b}'_\pm = (\beta_\pm \epsilon_\pm \mathbf{b}_\pm + \epsilon_\gamma \mathbf{b}_\gamma - \epsilon'_\gamma \mathbf{b}'_\gamma) / (\beta'_\pm \epsilon'_\pm)$.

Finally, for the absorption coefficient

$$\chi^{\text{cs}} f_\gamma = - \int d\mathbf{p}' d\mathbf{p} \frac{\epsilon'_\gamma |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_\pm \epsilon_\gamma \epsilon'_\pm} J_{\text{cs}} f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}, t) f_\pm(\mathbf{p}, t), \quad (\text{H.1.11})$$

where the matrix element here is dimensionless. This integral is evaluated numerically.

For all binary interactions exact QED matrix elements are used which can be found in the standard textbooks, e.g. in Berestetskii et al. (1982), Greiner and Reinhardt (2003), Akhiezer and Berestetskii (1981), and are given below.

In order to account for charge screening in Coulomb scattering the minimal scattering angles are introduced following Haug (1988). This allows to apply the same scheme for the computation of emission and absorption coefficients even for Coulomb scattering, while many treatments in the literature use Fokker-Planck approximation Pilla and Shaham (1997).

For such a dense plasma collisional integrals in (H.1.4) should include not only binary interactions, having order α^2 in Feynman diagrams, but also triple ones, having order α^3 Berestetskii et al. (1982). Consider relativistic bremsstrahlung

$$e_1 + e_2 \leftrightarrow e'_1 + e'_2 + \gamma'. \quad (\text{H.1.12})$$

For the time derivative, for instance, of the distribution function f_2 in the direct and in the inverse reactions (H.1.12) one has

$$\begin{aligned} \dot{f}_2 = & \int d\mathbf{p}_1 d\mathbf{p}'_1 d\mathbf{p}'_2 d\mathbf{k}' \left[W_{\mathbf{p}'_1, \mathbf{p}'_2, \mathbf{k}'; \mathbf{p}_1, \mathbf{p}_2} f'_1 f'_2 f'_k - W_{\mathbf{p}_1, \mathbf{p}_2; \mathbf{p}'_1, \mathbf{p}'_2, \mathbf{k}'} f_1 f_2 \right] = \quad (\text{H.1.13}) \\ & \int d\mathbf{p}_1 d\mathbf{p}'_1 d\mathbf{p}'_2 d\mathbf{k}' \frac{c^6 \hbar^3}{(2\pi)^2} \frac{\delta^{(4)}(P_f - P_i) |M_{fi}|^2}{2^5 \epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 \epsilon'_1 \epsilon'_2 \epsilon'_\gamma} \left[f'_1 f'_2 f'_k - \frac{1}{(2\pi \hbar)^3} f_1 f_2 \right], \end{aligned}$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} d\mathbf{p}_1 d\mathbf{p}_2 W_{\mathbf{p}'_1, \mathbf{p}'_2, \mathbf{k}'; \mathbf{p}_1, \mathbf{p}_2} &\equiv V^2 dw_1, \\ d\mathbf{p}'_1 d\mathbf{p}'_2 d\mathbf{k}' W_{\mathbf{p}_1, \mathbf{p}_2; \mathbf{p}'_1, \mathbf{p}'_2, \mathbf{k}'} &\equiv V dw_2, \end{aligned}$$

and dw_1 and dw_2 are differential probabilities given by (H.1.5). The matrix element here has dimensions of the length squared.

In the case of the distribution functions (H.1.18), see below, there are multipliers proportional to $\exp \frac{\varphi}{k_B T}$ in front of the integrals, where φ are chemical potentials. The calculation of emission and absorption coefficients is then reduced to the well known thermal equilibrium case Svensson (1984). In fact, since reaction rates of triple interactions are α times smaller than binary reaction rates, it is expected that binary reactions come to detailed balance first. Only when binary reactions are all balanced, triple interactions become important. In addition, when binary reactions come into balance, distribution

Binary interactions	Radiative and pair producing variants
Reactions with pairs	
Møller and Bhabha scattering $e_1^\pm e_2^\pm \longrightarrow e_1^{\pm'} e_2^{\pm'}$ $e^\pm e^\mp \longrightarrow e^{\pm'} e^{\mp'}$	Bremsstrahlung $e_1^\pm e_2^\pm \leftrightarrow e_1^{\pm'} e_2^{\pm'} \gamma$ $e^\pm e^\mp \leftrightarrow e^{\pm'} e^{\mp'} \gamma$
Single Compton scattering $e^\pm \gamma \longrightarrow e^\pm \gamma'$	Double Compton scattering $e^\pm \gamma \leftrightarrow e^\pm \gamma' \gamma''$
Pair production and annihilation $\gamma \gamma' \leftrightarrow e^\pm e^\mp$	Radiative pair production and three photon annihilation $\gamma \gamma' \leftrightarrow e^\pm e^\mp \gamma''$ $e^\pm e^\mp \leftrightarrow \gamma \gamma' \gamma''$
	$e^\pm \gamma \leftrightarrow e^{\pm'} e^\mp e^{\pm''}$

Table H.1.: Microphysical processes in the pair plasma.

functions already acquire the form (H.1.18). Although there is no principle difficulty in computations using exact matrix elements for triple reactions as well, the simplified scheme allows for much faster numerical computation.

All possible binary and triple interactions between electrons, positrons and photons are considered as summarized in Tab. H.1.

Each of the above mentioned reactions is characterized by the corresponding timescale and optical depth. For Compton scattering of a photon, for instance

$$t_{\text{cs}} = \frac{1}{\sigma_T n_{\pm} c}, \quad \tau_{\text{cs}} = \sigma_T n_{\pm} R, \quad (\text{H.1.14})$$

where $\sigma_T = \frac{8\pi}{3} \alpha^2 \left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c}\right)^2$ is the Thomson cross section. There are two timescales in the problem that characterize the condition of detailed balance between direct and inverse reactions, t_{cs} for binary and $\alpha^{-1} t_{\text{cs}}$ for triple interactions respectively.

Notice, that electron-positron pair can annihilate into neutrino channel with the main contribution from the reaction $e^\pm e^\mp \longrightarrow \nu \bar{\nu}$. By this process the energy could leak out from the plasma if it is transparent for neutrinos. The optical depth and energy loss for this process can be estimated following Beaudet et al. (1967) by using Fermi theory, see also Dicus (1972), Misiaszek et al. (2006) for calculations within electro-weak theory.

The optical depth is given by (H.1.14) with the cross section

$$\sigma_{\nu \bar{\nu}} \sim \frac{g^2}{\pi} \left(\frac{\hbar}{m_e c}\right)^2, \quad (\text{H.1.15})$$

where $g \simeq 10^{-12}$ is the weak interaction coupling constant and it is assumed that typical energies of electron and positron are $\sim m_e c^2$ and their relative ve-

locities $v \sim c$. Numerically $\sigma_{\nu\bar{\nu}}/\sigma_T = \frac{3}{8\pi^2} (g/\alpha)^2 \simeq 7 \cdot 10^{-22}$. For GRB sources the plasma may be both transparent and opaque to neutrino production. The energy loss when pairs are relativistic and nondegenerate is

$$\frac{d\rho}{dt} = \frac{128g^2}{\pi^5} \zeta(5)\zeta(4)\theta^9 m_e c^2 \left(\frac{m_e c}{\hbar}\right)^3 \left(\frac{m_e c^2}{\hbar}\right). \quad (\text{H.1.16})$$

The ratio between the energy lost due to neutrinos and the energy of photons in thermal equilibrium is then

$$\frac{1}{\rho_\gamma} \frac{d\rho}{dt} \Delta t = \frac{128g^2}{\pi^3} \zeta(5)\zeta(4)\theta^5 \left(\frac{m_e c^2}{\hbar}\right) \Delta t \simeq 3.6 \cdot 10^{-3} \theta^5 \frac{\Delta t}{1 \text{ sec}}. \quad (\text{H.1.17})$$

For GRB sources with the dynamical time $\Delta t \sim 10^{-3}$ sec, the energy loss due to neutrinos becomes relevant Koers and Wijers (2005) for high temperatures $\theta > 10$. However, on the timescale of relaxation to thermal equilibrium $\Delta t \sim 10^{-12}$ sec the energy loss is negligible.

Starting from arbitrary distribution functions a common development is found: at the time t_{cs} the distribution functions always have evolved in a functional form on the entire energy range, and depend only on two parameters. In fact it is found for the distribution functions

$$f_i(\varepsilon) = \frac{2}{(2\pi\hbar)^3} \exp\left(-\frac{\varepsilon - \nu_i}{\theta_i}\right), \quad (\text{H.1.18})$$

with chemical potential $\nu_i \equiv \frac{\varphi_i}{m_e c^2}$ and temperature $\theta_i \equiv \frac{k_B T_i}{m_e c^2}$, where $\varepsilon \equiv \frac{\epsilon}{m_e c^2}$ is the energy of the particle. Such a configuration corresponds to a kinetic equilibrium Kolb and Turner (1990), Pilla and Shaham (1997), Ehlers (1973) in which all particles acquire a common temperature and nonzero chemical potentials. Triple interactions become essential for $t > t_{\text{cs}}$, after the establishment of kinetic equilibrium. In strict mathematical sense the sufficient condition for reaching thermal equilibrium is when all direct reactions are exactly balanced with their inverse. Therefore, in principle, not only triple, but also four-particle, five-particle and so on reaction have to be accounted for in equation (H.1.4). The timescale for reaching thermal equilibrium will be then determined by the slowest reaction which is not balanced with its inverse. The necessary condition here is the detailed balance at least in triple interactions, since binary reactions do not change chemical potentials at all.

Notice that similar method to ours was applied in Pilla and Shaham (1997) in order to compute spectra of particles in kinetic equilibrium. However, it was never shown how particles evolve down to thermal equilibrium.

In the case of pure pair plasma chemical potentials in (H.1.18) represents

deviation from the thermal equilibrium through the relation

$$v = \theta \ln(n/n_{th}), \quad (\text{H.1.19})$$

where n_{th} are concentrations of particles in thermal equilibrium.

H.2. The discretization procedure and the computational scheme

In order to solve equations (H.1.4) a finite difference method is used by introducing a computational grid in the phase space to represent the distribution functions and to compute collisional integrals following Aksenov et al. (2004). The goal is to construct the scheme implementing energy, baryon number and electric charge conservation laws. For this reason instead of distribution functions f_i , spectral energy densities are used

$$E_i(\epsilon_i) = \frac{4\pi\epsilon_i^3\beta_i f_i}{c^3}, \quad (\text{H.2.1})$$

where $\beta_i = \sqrt{1 - (m_i c^2 / \epsilon_i)^2}$, in the phase space ϵ_i . Then

$$\epsilon_i f_i(\mathbf{p}, t) d\mathbf{r} d\mathbf{p} = \frac{4\pi\epsilon_i^3\beta_i f_i}{c^3} \mathbf{r} d\epsilon_i = E_i d\mathbf{r} d\epsilon_i \quad (\text{H.2.2})$$

is the energy in the volume of the phase space $d\mathbf{r} d\mathbf{p}$. The particle density is

$$n_i = \int f_i d\mathbf{p} = \int \frac{E_i}{\epsilon_i} d\epsilon_i, \quad dn_i = f_i d\mathbf{p}, \quad (\text{H.2.3})$$

while the corresponding energy density is

$$\rho_i = \int \epsilon_i f_i d\mathbf{p} = \int E_i d\epsilon_i.$$

Boltzmann equations (H.1.4) can be rewritten in the form

$$\frac{1}{c} \frac{\partial E_i}{\partial t} = \sum_q (\tilde{\eta}_i^q - \chi_i^q E_i), \quad (\text{H.2.4})$$

where $\tilde{\eta}_i^q = (4\pi\epsilon_i^3\beta_i/c^3)\eta_i^q$.

The computational grid for phase space is $\{\epsilon_i, \mu, \phi\}$, where $\mu = \cos \vartheta$, ϑ and ϕ are angles between radius vector \mathbf{r} and the particle momentum \mathbf{p} . The zone boundaries are $\epsilon_{i,\omega \mp 1/2}$, $\mu_{k \mp 1/2}$, $\phi_{l \mp 1/2}$ for $1 \leq \omega \leq \omega_{\max}$, $1 \leq k \leq k_{\max}$, $1 \leq l \leq l_{\max}$. The length of the i -th interval is $\Delta\epsilon_{i,\omega} \equiv \epsilon_{i,\omega+1/2} - \epsilon_{i,\omega-1/2}$. On

the finite grid the functions (H.2.1) become

$$E_{i,\omega} \equiv \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{i,\omega}} \int_{\Delta\epsilon_{i,\omega}} d\epsilon E_i(\epsilon). \quad (\text{H.2.5})$$

Now the collisional integrals in (H.2.4) are replaced by the corresponding sums.

After this procedure the set of ordinary differential equations (ODE's) is obtained, instead of the system of partial differential equations for the quantities $E_{i,\omega}$ to be solved. There are several characteristic times for different processes in the problem, and therefore the system of differential equations is stiff. (Eigenvalues of Jacobi matrix differs significantly, and the real parts of eigenvalues are negative.) Gear's method Hall and Watt (1976) is used to integrate ODE's numerically. This high-order implicit method was developed for the solution of stiff ODE's. The method is conserves for the number of particles, when appropriate.

In this method exact energy conservation law is satisfied. For binary interactions the particles number conservation law is satisfied as interpolation of grid functions $E_{i,\omega}$ inside the energy intervals is adopted.

H.3. Conservation laws

Conservation laws consist of charge and energy conservations. In addition, in binary reactions particle number is conserved.

Energy conservation law can be rewritten for the spectral density

$$\frac{d}{dt} \sum_i \rho_i = 0, \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{d}{dt} \sum_{i,\omega} Y_{i,\omega} = 0, \quad (\text{H.3.1})$$

where

$$Y_{i,\omega} = \int_{\epsilon_{i,\omega}-\Delta\epsilon_{i,\omega}/2}^{\epsilon_{i,\omega}+\Delta\epsilon_{i,\omega}/2} E_i d\epsilon. \quad (\text{H.3.2})$$

Particle's conservation law in binary reactions reduces to

$$\frac{d}{dt} \sum_i n_i = 0, \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{d}{dt} \sum_{i,\omega} \frac{Y_{i,\omega}}{\epsilon_{i,\omega}} = 0. \quad (\text{H.3.3})$$

For electrically neutral plasma considered in this Chapter charge conservation implies

$$n_- = n_+. \quad (\text{H.3.4})$$

H.4. Determination of temperature and chemical potentials in kinetic equilibrium

Consider distribution functions for photons and pairs in the most general form (H.1.18). If one supposes that reaction rate for the Bhabha scattering vanishes, i.e. there is equilibrium with respect to reaction

$$e^+ + e^- \leftrightarrow +e^{+'} + e^{-'}, \quad (\text{H.4.1})$$

and the corresponding condition can be written in the following way

$$f_+(1 - f_+')(1 - f_-') = f_+'(1 - f_+)f_-'(1 + f_-), \quad (\text{H.4.2})$$

where Bose-Einstein enhancement along with Pauli blocking factors are taken into account, it can be shown that electrons and positrons have the same temperature

$$\theta_+ = \theta_- \equiv \theta_{\pm}, \quad (\text{H.4.3})$$

and they have arbitrary chemical potentials.

With (H.4.3) analogous consideration for the Compton scattering

$$e^{\pm} + \gamma \leftrightarrow +e^{\pm'} + \gamma', \quad (\text{H.4.4})$$

gives

$$f_{\pm}(1 - f_{\pm}')f_{\gamma}(1 + f_{\gamma}') = f_{\pm}'(1 - f_{\pm})f_{\gamma}'(1 + f_{\gamma}), \quad (\text{H.4.5})$$

and leads to the same temperature of pairs and photons

$$\theta_{\pm} = \theta_{\gamma} \equiv \theta_k, \quad (\text{H.4.6})$$

with arbitrary chemical potentials. If, in addition, reaction rate in the pair-creation and annihilation process

$$e^{\pm} + e^{\mp} \leftrightarrow \gamma + \gamma' \quad (\text{H.4.7})$$

vanishes too, i.e. there is equilibrium with respect to pair production and annihilation, with the corresponding condition,

$$f_+f_-(1 + f_{\gamma})(1 + f_{\gamma}') = f_{\gamma}f_{\gamma}'(1 - f_+)(1 - f_-), \quad (\text{H.4.8})$$

it turns out that also chemical potentials for pairs and photons satisfy the following condition for the chemical potentials

$$\nu_+ + \nu_- = 2\nu_{\gamma}. \quad (\text{H.4.9})$$

However, since in general $\nu_{\gamma} \neq 0$ the condition (H.4.9) does not imply $\nu_+ = \nu_-$.

	Interaction	Parameters of DFs
I	e^+e^- scattering	$\theta_+ = \theta_-, \forall \nu_+, \nu_-$
II	$e^\pm\gamma$ scattering	$\theta_\gamma = \theta_\pm, \forall \nu_\gamma, \nu_\pm$
III	pair production	$\nu_+ + \nu_- = 2\nu_\gamma$, if $\theta_\gamma = \theta_\pm$
IV	Tripe interactions	$\nu_\gamma, \nu_\pm = 0$, if $\theta_\gamma = \theta_\pm$

Table H.2.: Relations between parameters of equilibrium DFs fulfilling detailed balance conditions for the reactions shown in Tab. H.1.

In general, the detailed balance conditions for different reactions lead to relations between temperatures and chemical potentials summarized in table H.2.

Kinetic equilibrium is first established simultaneously for electrons, positrons and photons. Thus they reach the same temperature, but with chemical potentials different from zero. Later on, protons reach the same temperature.

In order to find temperatures and chemical potentials the following constraints are implemented: energy conservation (H.3.1), particle number conservation (H.3.3), charge conservation (H.3.4), condition for the chemical potentials (H.4.9).

Given (H.1.18) it is found for photons

$$\frac{\rho_\gamma}{n_\gamma m_e c^2} = 3\theta_\gamma, \quad n_\gamma = \frac{1}{V_0} \exp\left(\frac{\nu_\gamma}{\theta_\gamma}\right) 2\theta_\gamma^3, \quad (\text{H.4.10})$$

and for pairs

$$\frac{\rho_\pm}{n_\pm m_e c^2} = j_2(\theta_\pm), \quad n_\pm = \frac{1}{V_0} \exp\left(\frac{\nu_\pm}{\theta_\pm}\right) j_1(\theta_\pm), \quad (\text{H.4.11})$$

where the Compton volume is

$$V_0 = \frac{1}{8\pi} \left(\frac{2\pi\hbar}{m_e c}\right)^3 \quad (\text{H.4.12})$$

and functions j_1 and j_2 are defined as

$$j_1(\theta) = \theta K_2(\theta^{-1}) \rightarrow \begin{cases} \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2}} e^{-\frac{1}{\theta}} \theta^{3/2}, & \theta \rightarrow 0 \\ 2\theta^3, & \theta \rightarrow \infty \end{cases}, \quad (\text{H.4.13})$$

$$j_2(\theta) = \frac{3K_3(\theta^{-1}) + K_1(\theta^{-1})}{4K_2(\theta^{-1})} \rightarrow \begin{cases} 1 + \frac{3\theta}{2}, & \theta \rightarrow 0 \\ 3\theta, & \theta \rightarrow \infty \end{cases}. \quad (\text{H.4.14})$$

For pure electron-positron-photon plasma in kinetic equilibrium, summing up energy densities in (H.4.10),(H.4.11) and using (H.4.3),(H.4.6) and (H.4.9)

it is found

$$\sum_{e^+, e^-, \gamma} \rho_i = \frac{2m_e c^2}{V_0} \exp\left(\frac{\nu_k}{\theta_k}\right) \left[3\theta^4 + j_1(\theta_k)j_2(\theta_k)\right], \quad (\text{H.4.15})$$

and analogously for number densities

$$\sum_{e^+, e^-, \gamma} n_i = \frac{2}{V_0} \exp\left(\frac{\nu_k}{\theta_k}\right) \left[\theta_k^3 + j_1(\theta_k)\right]. \quad (\text{H.4.16})$$

Therefore, two unknowns, ν_k and θ_k can be found.

In thermal equilibrium ν_γ vanishes and one has

$$\nu_+ = \nu_- = 0. \quad (\text{H.4.17})$$

H.5. Binary interactions

H.5.1. Compton scattering

The time evolution of the distribution functions of photons and pair particles due to Compton scattering may be described by Landau and Lifshitz (1981b), Ochelkov et al. (1979)

$$\begin{aligned} \left(\frac{\partial f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}, t)}{\partial t}\right)_{\gamma e^\pm \rightarrow \gamma' e^\pm} &= \int d\mathbf{k}' d\mathbf{p} d\mathbf{p}' V w_{\mathbf{k}', \mathbf{p}'; \mathbf{k}, \mathbf{p}} \times \\ &\times [f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}', t) f_\pm(\mathbf{p}', t) - f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}, t) f_\pm(\mathbf{p}, t)], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.1})$$

$$\begin{aligned} \left(\frac{\partial f_\pm(\mathbf{p}, t)}{\partial t}\right)_{\gamma e^\pm \rightarrow \gamma' e^\pm} &= \int d\mathbf{k} d\mathbf{k}' d\mathbf{p}' V w_{\mathbf{k}', \mathbf{p}'; \mathbf{k}, \mathbf{p}} \times \\ &\times [f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}', t) f_\pm(\mathbf{p}', t) - f_\gamma(\mathbf{k}, t) f_\pm(\mathbf{p}, t)], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.2})$$

where

$$w_{\mathbf{k}', \mathbf{p}'; \mathbf{k}, \mathbf{p}} = \frac{\hbar^2 c^6}{(2\pi)^2 V} \delta(\epsilon_\gamma - \epsilon_\pm - \epsilon'_\gamma - \epsilon'_\pm) \delta(\mathbf{k} + \mathbf{p} - \mathbf{k}' - \mathbf{p}') \frac{|M_{fi}|^2}{16\epsilon_\gamma \epsilon_\pm \epsilon'_\gamma \epsilon'_\pm}, \quad (\text{H.5.3})$$

is the probability of the process,

$$|M_{fi}|^2 = 2^6 \pi^2 \alpha^2 \left[\frac{m_e^2 c^2}{s - m_e^2 c^2} + \frac{m_e^2 c^2}{u - m_e^2 c^2} + \left(\frac{m_e^2 c^2}{s - m_e^2 c^2} + \frac{m_e^2 c^2}{u - m_e^2 c^2} \right)^2 - \frac{1}{4} \left(\frac{s - m_e^2 c^2}{u - m_e^2 c^2} + \frac{u - m_e^2 c^2}{s - m_e^2 c^2} \right) \right], \quad (\text{H.5.4})$$

is the square of the matrix element, $s = (\mathbf{p} + \mathbf{k})^2$ and $u = (\mathbf{p} - \mathbf{k}')^2$ are invariants, $\mathbf{k} = (\epsilon_\gamma/c)(1, \mathbf{e}_\gamma)$ and $\mathbf{p} = (\epsilon_\pm/c)(1, \beta_\pm \mathbf{e}_\pm)$ are energy-momentum four vectors of photons and electrons, respectively, $d\mathbf{p} = d\epsilon_\pm d\epsilon_\pm^2 \beta_\pm / c^3$, $d\mathbf{k}' = d\epsilon'_\gamma \epsilon_\gamma'^2 d\epsilon'_\gamma / c^3$ and $do = d\mu d\phi$.

The energies of photon and positron (electron) after the scattering are

$$\epsilon'_\gamma = \frac{\epsilon_\pm \epsilon_\gamma (1 - \beta_\pm \mathbf{b}_\pm \cdot \mathbf{b}_\gamma)}{\epsilon_\pm (1 - \beta_\pm \mathbf{b}_\pm \cdot \mathbf{b}'_\gamma) + \epsilon_\gamma (1 - \mathbf{b}_\gamma \cdot \mathbf{b}'_\gamma)}, \quad \epsilon'_\pm = \epsilon_\pm + \epsilon_\gamma - \epsilon'_\gamma, \quad (\text{H.5.5})$$

$$\mathbf{b}_i = \mathbf{p}_i / p, \mathbf{b}'_i = \mathbf{p}'_i / p', \mathbf{b}'_\pm = (\beta_\pm \epsilon_\pm \mathbf{b}_\pm + \epsilon_\gamma \mathbf{b}_\gamma - \epsilon'_\gamma \mathbf{b}'_\gamma) / (\beta'_\pm \epsilon'_\pm).$$

For photons, the absorption coefficient (H.1.11) in the Boltzmann equations (H.1.4) is

$$\chi_\gamma^{\gamma e^\pm \rightarrow \gamma' e'^\pm} f_\gamma = -\frac{1}{c} \left(\frac{\partial f_\gamma}{\partial t} \right)_{\gamma e^\pm \rightarrow \gamma' e'^\pm}^{\text{abs}} = \int dn_\pm do'_\gamma J_{\text{cs}} \frac{\epsilon'_\gamma |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_\pm \epsilon_\gamma \epsilon'_\pm} f_\gamma, \quad (\text{H.5.6})$$

where $dn_i = d\epsilon_i do_i \epsilon_i^2 \beta_i f_i / c^3 = d\epsilon_i do_i E_i / (2\pi \epsilon_i)$.

From equations (H.5.1) and (H.5.6), the absorption coefficient for photon energy density E_γ averaged over the ϵ, μ -grid with zone numbers ω and k is

$$\begin{aligned} (\chi E)_{\gamma, \omega}^{\gamma e^\pm \rightarrow \gamma' e'^\pm} &\equiv \frac{1}{\Delta \epsilon_{\gamma, \omega}} \int_{\epsilon_\gamma \in \Delta \epsilon_{\gamma, \omega}} d\epsilon_\gamma d\mu_\gamma (\chi E)_\gamma^{\gamma e^\pm \rightarrow \gamma' e'^\pm} = \\ &= \frac{1}{\Delta \epsilon_{\gamma, \omega}} \int_{\epsilon_\gamma \in \Delta \epsilon_{\gamma, \omega}} dn_\gamma dn_\pm do'_\gamma J_{\text{cs}} \frac{\epsilon'_\gamma |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_\pm \epsilon'_\pm}, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.7})$$

where the Jacobian of the transformation is

$$J_{\text{cs}} = \frac{\epsilon'_\gamma \epsilon'_\pm}{\epsilon_\gamma \epsilon_\pm (1 - \beta_\pm \mathbf{b}_\gamma \cdot \mathbf{b}_\pm)}. \quad (\text{H.5.8})$$

Similar integrations can be performed for the other terms of equations (H.5.1),

(H.5.2), and

$$\eta_{\gamma,\omega}^{\gamma e^{\pm} \rightarrow \gamma' e^{\pm'}} = \frac{1}{\Delta \epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} \int_{\epsilon'_{\gamma} \in \Delta \epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} dn_{\gamma} dn_{\pm} do'_{\gamma} J_{cs} \frac{\epsilon'^2_{\gamma} |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_{\pm} \epsilon_{\gamma} \epsilon'_{\pm}}, \quad (\text{H.5.9})$$

$$\eta_{\pm,\omega}^{\gamma e^{\pm} \rightarrow \gamma' e^{\pm'}} = \frac{1}{\Delta \epsilon_{\pm,\omega}} \int_{\epsilon'_{\pm} \in \Delta \epsilon_{\pm,\omega}} dn_{\gamma} dn_{\pm} do'_{\gamma} J_{cs} \frac{\epsilon'_{\gamma} |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_{\pm} \epsilon_{\gamma}}, \quad (\text{H.5.10})$$

$$(\chi E)_{\pm,\omega}^{\gamma e^{\pm} \rightarrow \gamma' e^{\pm'}} = \frac{1}{\Delta \epsilon_{\pm,\omega}} \int_{\epsilon_{\pm} \in \Delta \epsilon_{\pm,\omega}} dn_{\gamma} dn_{\pm} do'_{\gamma} J_{cs} \frac{\epsilon'_{\gamma} |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_{\gamma} \epsilon'_{\pm}}. \quad (\text{H.5.11})$$

In order to perform integrals (H.5.7)-(H.5.11) numerically over ϕ ($0 \leq \phi \leq 2\pi$) a uniform grid $\phi_{l \mp 1/2}$ is introduced with $1 \leq l \leq l_{\max}$ and $\Delta \phi_l = (\phi_{l+1/2} - \phi_{l-1/2})/2 = 2\pi/l_{\max}$. It is assumed that any function of ϕ in equations (H.5.7)-(H.5.9) in the interval $\Delta \phi_j$ is equal to its value at $\phi = \phi_j = (\phi_{l-1/2} + \phi_{l+1/2})/2$. It is necessary to integrate over ϕ only once at the beginning of calculations. The number of intervals of the ϕ -grid depends on the average energy of particles and is typically taken as $l_{\max} = 2k_{\max} = 64$.

H.5.2. Pair creation and annihilation

The rates of change of the distribution function due to pair creation and annihilation are

$$\left(\frac{\partial f_{\gamma_j}(\mathbf{k}_i, t)}{\partial t} \right)_{\gamma_1 \gamma_2 \rightarrow e^- e^+} = - \int d\mathbf{k}_j d\mathbf{p}_- d\mathbf{p}_+ V w_{\mathbf{p}_-, \mathbf{p}_+; \mathbf{k}_1, \mathbf{k}_2} f_{\gamma_1}(\mathbf{k}_1, t) f_{\gamma_2}(\mathbf{k}_2, t), \quad (\text{H.5.12})$$

$$\left(\frac{\partial f_{\gamma_i}(\mathbf{k}_i, t)}{\partial t} \right)_{e^- e^+ \rightarrow \gamma_1 \gamma_2} = \int d\mathbf{k}_j d\mathbf{p}_- d\mathbf{p}_+ V w_{\mathbf{k}_1, \mathbf{k}_2; \mathbf{p}_-, \mathbf{p}_+} f_-(\mathbf{p}_-, t) f_+(\mathbf{p}_+, t), \quad (\text{H.5.13})$$

for $i = 1, j = 2$, and for $j = 1, i = 2$.

$$\left(\frac{\partial f_{\pm}(\mathbf{p}_{\pm}, t)}{\partial t} \right)_{\gamma_1 \gamma_2 \rightarrow e^- e^+} = \int d\mathbf{p}_{\mp} d\mathbf{k}_1 d\mathbf{k}_2 V w_{\mathbf{p}_-, \mathbf{p}_+; \mathbf{k}_1, \mathbf{k}_2} f_{\gamma}(\mathbf{k}_1, t) f_{\gamma}(\mathbf{k}_2, t), \quad (\text{H.5.14})$$

$$\left(\frac{\partial f_{\pm}(\mathbf{p}_{\pm}, t)}{\partial t} \right)_{e^- e^+ \rightarrow \gamma_1 \gamma_2} = - \int d\mathbf{p}_{\mp} d\mathbf{k}_1 d\mathbf{k}_2 V w_{\mathbf{k}_1, \mathbf{k}_2; \mathbf{p}_-, \mathbf{p}_+} f_-(\mathbf{p}_-, t) f_+(\mathbf{p}_+, t), \quad (\text{H.5.15})$$

where

$$w_{\mathbf{p}_-, \mathbf{p}_+; \mathbf{k}_1, \mathbf{k}_2} = \frac{\hbar^2 c^6}{(2\pi)^2 V} \delta(\epsilon_- + \epsilon_+ - \epsilon_1 - \epsilon_2) \delta(\mathbf{p}_- + \mathbf{p}_+ - \mathbf{k}_1 - \mathbf{k}_2) \frac{|M_{fi}|^2}{16 \epsilon_- \epsilon_+ \epsilon_1 \epsilon_2}. \quad (\text{H.5.16})$$

Here, the matrix element $|M_{fi}|^2$ is given by equation (H.5.4) with the new invariants $s = (\mathbf{p}_- - \mathbf{k}_1)^2$ and $u = (\mathbf{p}_- - \mathbf{k}_2)^2$, see Berestetskii et al. (1982).

The energies of photons created via annihilation of a e^\pm pair are

$$\epsilon_1(\mathbf{b}_1) = \frac{m^2 c^4 + \epsilon_- \epsilon_+ (1 - \beta_- \beta_+ \mathbf{b}_- \cdot \mathbf{b}_+)}{\epsilon_- (1 - \beta_- \mathbf{b}_- \cdot \mathbf{b}_1) + \epsilon_+ (1 - \beta_+ \mathbf{b}_+ \cdot \mathbf{b}_1)}, \quad \epsilon_2(\mathbf{b}_1) = \epsilon_- + \epsilon_+ - \epsilon_1, \quad (\text{H.5.17})$$

while the energies of pair particles created by two photons are found from

$$\epsilon_-(\mathbf{b}_-) = \frac{B \mp \sqrt{B^2 - AC}}{A}, \quad \epsilon_+(\mathbf{b}_-) = \epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2 - \epsilon_-, \quad (\text{H.5.18})$$

where $A = (\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2)^2 - [(\epsilon_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}_-]^2$, $B = (\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2) \epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 (1 - \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2)$, $C = m_e^2 c^4 [(\epsilon_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}_-]^2 + \epsilon_1^2 \epsilon_2^2 (1 - \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2)^2$. Only one root in equation (H.5.18) has to be chosen. From energy-momentum conservation

$$\mathbf{k}_1 + \mathbf{k}_2 - \mathbf{p}_- = \mathbf{p}_+, \quad (\text{H.5.19})$$

taking square from the energy part leads to

$$\epsilon_1^2 + \epsilon_2^2 + \epsilon_-^2 + 2\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 - 2\epsilon_1 \epsilon_- - 2\epsilon_2 \epsilon_- = \epsilon_+^2, \quad (\text{H.5.20})$$

and taking square from the momentum part

$$\epsilon_1^2 + \epsilon_2^2 + \epsilon_-^2 \beta_-^2 + 2\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2 - 2\epsilon_1 \epsilon_- \beta_- \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_- - 2\epsilon_2 \epsilon_- \beta_- \mathbf{b}_2 \cdot \mathbf{b}_- = (\epsilon_+ \beta_+)^2. \quad (\text{H.5.21})$$

There are no additional roots because of the arbitrary \mathbf{e}_+

$$\begin{aligned} \epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 (1 - \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2) - \epsilon_1 \epsilon_- (1 - \beta_- \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_-) - \epsilon_2 \epsilon_- (1 - \beta_- \mathbf{b}_2 \cdot \mathbf{b}_-) &= 0, \\ \epsilon_- \beta_- (\epsilon_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}_- &= \epsilon_- (\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2) - \epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 (1 - \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.22})$$

Eliminating β it is obtained

$$\begin{aligned} &\epsilon_1^2 \epsilon_2^2 (1 - \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2)^2 - 2\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 (1 - \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2) (\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2) \epsilon_- + \\ &+ \left\{ (\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2)^2 - [(\epsilon_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}_-]^2 \right\} \epsilon_-^2 = \\ &= [(\epsilon_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}_-] (-m^2), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.23})$$

Therefore, the condition to be checked reads

$$\begin{aligned} \epsilon_- \beta_- [(\epsilon_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}_-]^2 &= [\epsilon_- (\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2) - (\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2) (1 - \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2)] \times \\ &\times [(\epsilon_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}_-] \geq 0. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.24})$$

Finally, integration of equations (H.5.12)-(H.5.15) yields

$$\begin{aligned} \eta_{\gamma,\omega}^{e^-e^+\rightarrow\gamma_1\gamma_2} &= \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_1 \in \Delta\epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} d^2n_{\pm} J_{ca} \frac{\epsilon_1^2 |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_- \epsilon_+ \epsilon_2} \right) + \\ &+ \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_2 \in \Delta\epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} d^2n_{\pm} J_{ca} \frac{\epsilon_1 |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_- \epsilon_+} \right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.25})$$

$$\begin{aligned} (\chi E)_{e,\omega}^{e^-e^+\rightarrow\gamma_1\gamma_2} &= \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{e,\omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_- \in \Delta\epsilon_{e,\omega}} d^2n_{\pm} J_{ca} \frac{\epsilon_1 |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_+ \epsilon_2} \right) + \\ &+ \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{e,\omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_+ \in \Delta\epsilon_{e,\omega}} d^2n_{\pm} J_{ca} \frac{\epsilon_1 |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_- \epsilon_2} \right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.26})$$

$$\begin{aligned} (\chi E)_{\gamma,\omega}^{\gamma_1\gamma_2\rightarrow e^-e^+} &= \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_1 \in \Delta\epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} d^2n_{\gamma} J_{ca} \frac{\epsilon_- \beta_- |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_2 \epsilon_+} \right) + \\ &+ \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_2 \in \Delta\epsilon_{\gamma,\omega}} d^2n_{\gamma} J_{ca} \frac{\epsilon_- \beta_- |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_1 \epsilon_+} \right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.27})$$

$$\begin{aligned} \eta_{e,\omega}^{\gamma_1\gamma_2\rightarrow e^-e^+} &= \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{e,\omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_- \in \Delta\epsilon_{e,\omega}} d^2n_{\gamma} J_{ca} \frac{\epsilon_-^2 \beta_- |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 \epsilon_+} \right) + \\ &+ \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{e,\omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_+ \in \Delta\epsilon_{e,\omega}} d^2n_{\gamma} J_{ca} \frac{\epsilon_- \beta_- |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2} \right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.28})$$

where $d^2n_{\pm} = dn_- dn_+ do_1$, $d^2n_{\gamma} = dn_{\gamma_1} dn_{\gamma_2} do_-$, $dn_{\pm} = d\epsilon_{\pm} do_{\pm} \epsilon_{\pm}^2 \beta_{\pm} f_{\pm}$, $dn_{\gamma_{1,2}} = d\epsilon_{1,2} do_{1,2} \epsilon_{1,2}^2 f_{\gamma_{1,2}}$ and the Jacobian is

$$J_{ca} = \frac{\epsilon_+ \beta_-}{(\epsilon_+ + \epsilon_-) \beta_- - (\epsilon_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}_-}. \quad (\text{H.5.29})$$

H.5.3. Møller scattering of electrons and positrons

The time evolution of the distribution functions of electrons (or positrons) is described by

$$\begin{aligned} \left(\frac{\partial f_i(\mathbf{p}_i, t)}{\partial t} \right)_{e_1 e_2 \rightarrow e'_1 e'_2} &= \int d\mathbf{p}_j d\mathbf{p}'_1 d\mathbf{p}'_2 V w_{\mathbf{p}'_1, \mathbf{p}'_2; \mathbf{p}_1, \mathbf{p}_2} \times \\ &\times [f_1(\mathbf{p}'_1, t) f_2(\mathbf{p}'_2, t) - f_1(\mathbf{p}_1, t) f_2(\mathbf{p}_2, t)], \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.5.30})$$

with $i = 1, j = 2$, and with $j = 1, i = 2$, and where

$$w_{\mathbf{p}'_1, \mathbf{p}'_2; \mathbf{p}_1, \mathbf{p}_2} = \frac{\hbar^2 c^6}{(2\pi)^2 V} \delta(\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2 - \epsilon'_1 - \epsilon'_2) \delta(\mathbf{p}_1 + \mathbf{p}_2 - \mathbf{p}'_1 - \mathbf{p}'_2) \frac{|M_{fi}|^2}{16\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 \epsilon'_1 \epsilon'_2}, \quad (\text{H.5.31})$$

$$|M_{fi}|^2 = 2^6 \pi^2 \alpha^2 \left\{ \frac{1}{t^2} \left[\frac{s^2 + u^2}{2} + 4m_e^2 c^2 (t - m_e^2 c^2) \right] + \right. \quad (\text{H.5.32})$$

$$+ \frac{1}{u^2} \left[\frac{s^2 + t^2}{2} + 4m_e^2 c^2 (u - m_e^2 c^2) \right] + \quad (\text{H.5.33})$$

$$\left. + \frac{4}{tu} \left(\frac{s}{2} - m_e^2 c^2 \right) \left(\frac{s}{2} - 3m_e^2 c^2 \right) \right\}, \quad (\text{H.5.34})$$

with $s = (\mathbf{p}_1 + \mathbf{p}_2)^2 = 2(m_e^2 c^2 + \mathbf{p}_1 \mathbf{p}_2)$, $t = (\mathbf{p}_1 - \mathbf{p}'_1)^2 = 2(m_e^2 c^2 - \mathbf{p}_1 \mathbf{p}'_1)$, and $u = (\mathbf{p}_1 - \mathbf{p}'_2)^2 = 2(m_e^2 c^2 - \mathbf{p}_1 \mathbf{p}'_2)$ Berestetskii et al. (1982).

The energies of final-state particles are given by (H.5.18) with new coefficients $\tilde{A} = (\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2)^2 - (\epsilon_1 \beta_1 \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}'_1 + \epsilon_2 \beta_2 \mathbf{b}_2 \cdot \mathbf{b}'_1)^2$, $\tilde{B} = (\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2)[m_e^2 c^4 + \epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 (1 - \beta_1 \beta_2 \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2)]$, and $\tilde{C} = m_e^2 c^4 (\epsilon_1 \beta_1 \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}'_1 + \epsilon_2 \beta_2 \mathbf{b}_2 \cdot \mathbf{b}'_1)^2 + [m_e^2 c^4 + \epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 (1 - \beta_1 \beta_2 \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2)]^2$. The condition to be checked is

$$\left[\epsilon'_1 (\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2) - m_e^2 c^4 - (\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2) (1 - \beta_1 \beta_2 \mathbf{b}_1 \cdot \mathbf{b}_2) \right] [(\epsilon_1 \beta_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \beta_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}'_1] \geq 0. \quad (\text{H.5.35})$$

Integration of equations (H.5.30), similar to the case of Compton scattering in Section H.5.1 yields

$$\eta_{e, \omega}^{e_1 e_2 \rightarrow e'_1 e'_2} = \frac{1}{\Delta \epsilon_{e, \omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon'_1 \in \Delta \epsilon_{e, \omega}} d^2 n J_{\text{ms}} \frac{\epsilon_1'^2 \beta_1' |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 \epsilon'_2} \right) + \quad (\text{H.5.36})$$

$$+ \frac{1}{\Delta \epsilon_{e, \omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon'_2 \in \Delta \epsilon_{e, \omega}} d^2 n J_{\text{ms}} \frac{\epsilon_1' \beta_1' |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_1 \epsilon_2} \right),$$

$$(\chi E)_{e, \omega}^{e_1 e_2 \rightarrow e'_1 e'_2} = \frac{1}{\Delta \epsilon_{e, \omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_1 \in \Delta \epsilon_{e, \omega}} d^2 n J_{\text{ms}} \frac{\epsilon_1' \beta_1' |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_2 \epsilon'_2} \right) + \quad (\text{H.5.37})$$

$$+ \frac{1}{\Delta \epsilon_{e, \omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_2 \in \Delta \epsilon_{e, \omega}} d^2 n J_{\text{ms}} \frac{\epsilon_1' \beta_1' |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16 \epsilon_1 \epsilon'_2} \right),$$

where $d^2 n = dn_1 dn_2 d\Omega_1$, $dn_{1,2} = d\epsilon_{1,2} d\Omega_{1,2} \epsilon_{1,2}^2 \beta_{1,2} f_{1,2}$, and the Jacobian is

$$J_{\text{ms}} = \frac{\epsilon_2' \beta_2'}{(\epsilon_1' + \epsilon_2') \beta_1' - (\epsilon_1 \beta_1 \mathbf{b}_1 + \epsilon_2 \beta_2 \mathbf{b}_2) \cdot \mathbf{b}'_1}. \quad (\text{H.5.38})$$

H.5.4. Bhaba scattering of electrons on positrons

The time evolution of the distribution functions of electrons and positrons due to Bhaba scattering is described by

$$\left(\frac{\partial f_{\pm}(\mathbf{p}_{\pm}, t)}{\partial t} \right)_{e^-e^+ \rightarrow e^-'e^+'} = \int d\mathbf{p}_{-} d\mathbf{p}'_{-} d\mathbf{p}'_{+} V w_{\mathbf{p}'_{-}, \mathbf{p}'_{+}; \mathbf{p}_{-}, \mathbf{p}_{+}} \times \\ \times [f_{-}(\mathbf{p}'_{-}, t) f_{+}(\mathbf{p}'_{+}, t) - f_{-}(\mathbf{p}_{-}, t) f_{+}(\mathbf{p}_{+}, t)], \quad (\text{H.5.39})$$

where

$$w_{\mathbf{p}'_{-}, \mathbf{p}'_{+}; \mathbf{p}_{-}, \mathbf{p}_{+}} = \frac{\hbar^2 c^6}{(2\pi)^2 V} \delta(\epsilon_{-} + \epsilon_{+} - \epsilon'_{-} - \epsilon'_{+}) \delta(\mathbf{p}_{-} + \mathbf{p}_{+} - \mathbf{p}'_{-} - \mathbf{p}'_{+}) \frac{|M_{fi}|^2}{16\epsilon_{-}\epsilon_{+}\epsilon'_{-}\epsilon'_{+}}, \quad (\text{H.5.40})$$

and $|M_{fi}|$ is given by the equation (H.5.34), but the invariants are $s = (\mathbf{p}_{-} - \mathbf{p}'_{+})^2$, $t = (\mathbf{p}_{+} - \mathbf{p}'_{-})^2$ and $u = (\mathbf{p}_{-} + \mathbf{p}_{+})^2$. The final energies ϵ'_{-} , ϵ'_{+} are functions of the outgoing particle directions in a way similar to that in Section H.5.3, see also Berestetskii et al. (1982).

Integration of equations (H.5.39) yields

$$\eta_{\pm, \omega}^{e^-e^+ \rightarrow e^-'e^+'} = \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{\pm, \omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon'_{-} \in \Delta\epsilon_{e, \omega}} d^2 n'_{\pm} J_{bs} \frac{\epsilon'^2_{-} \beta'_{-} |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_{-}\epsilon_{+}\epsilon'_{-}\epsilon'_{+}} \right) + \\ + \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{\pm, \omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon'_{+} \in \Delta\epsilon_{e, \omega}} d^2 n'_{\pm} J_{bs} \frac{\epsilon'_{-} \beta'_{-} |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_{-}\epsilon_{+}} \right), \quad (\text{H.5.41})$$

$$(\chi E)_{\pm, \omega}^{e^-e^+ \rightarrow e^-'e^+'} = \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{\pm, \omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_{-} \in \Delta\epsilon_{e, \omega}} d^2 n'_{\pm} J_{bs} \frac{\epsilon'_{-} \beta'_{-} |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_{+}\epsilon'_{+}} \right) + \\ + \frac{1}{\Delta\epsilon_{\pm, \omega}} \left(\int_{\epsilon_{+} \in \Delta\epsilon_{e, \omega}} d^2 n'_{\pm} J_{bs} \frac{\epsilon'_{-} \beta'_{-} |M_{fi}|^2 \hbar^2 c^2}{16\epsilon_{-}\epsilon'_{+}} \right), \quad (\text{H.5.42})$$

where $d^2 n'_{\pm} = dn_{-} dn_{+} d\Omega'_{-}$, $dn_{\pm} = d\epsilon_{\pm} d\Omega_{\pm} \epsilon_{\pm}^2 \beta_{\pm} f_{\pm}$, and the Jacobian is

$$J_{bs} = \frac{\epsilon'_{+} \beta'_{+}}{(\epsilon'_{-} + \epsilon'_{+}) \beta'_{-} - (\epsilon_{-} \beta_{-} \mathbf{b}_{-} + \epsilon_{+} \beta_{+} \mathbf{b}_{+}) \cdot \mathbf{b}'_{-}}. \quad (\text{H.5.43})$$

Analogously to the case of pair creation and annihilation in Section (H.5.2) the energies of final state particles are given by (H.5.18) with the coefficients $\check{A} = (\epsilon_{-} + \epsilon_{+})^2 - (\epsilon_{-} \beta_{-} \mathbf{b}_{-} \cdot \mathbf{b}'_{-} + \epsilon_{+} \beta_{+} \mathbf{b}_{+} \cdot \mathbf{b}'_{-})^2$, $\check{B} = (\epsilon_{-} + \epsilon_{+}) [m_e^2 c^4 + \epsilon_{-} \epsilon_{+} (1 - \beta_{-} \beta_{+} \mathbf{b}_{-} \cdot \mathbf{b}_{+})]$, $\check{C} = [m_e^2 c^4 + \epsilon_{-} \epsilon_{+} (1 - \beta_{-} \beta_{+} \mathbf{b}_{-} \cdot \mathbf{b}_{+})]^2 + m_e^2 c^4 [\epsilon_{-} \beta_{-} \mathbf{b}_{-} \cdot \mathbf{b}'_{-} + \epsilon_{+} \beta_{+} \mathbf{b}_{+} \cdot \mathbf{b}'_{-}]^2$. In order to select the correct root one has to check the condition (H.5.35) changing the subscripts $1 \rightarrow -, 2 \rightarrow +$.

H.6. Three-body processes

Emission coefficients for triple interactions are adopted from Svensson (1984).

Bremsstrahlung

$$\eta_{\gamma}^{e^{\mp}e^{\mp} \rightarrow e^{\mp}e^{\mp}\gamma} = (n_+^2 + n_-^2) \frac{16}{3} \frac{\alpha c}{\varepsilon} \left(\frac{e^2}{m_e c^2} \right)^2 \times \\ \times \ln \left[4\tilde{\zeta}(11.2 + 10.4\theta^2) \frac{\theta}{\varepsilon} \right] \frac{\frac{3}{5}\sqrt{2}\theta + 2\theta^2}{\exp(1/\theta)K_2(1/\theta)}, \quad (\text{H.6.1})$$

$$\eta_{\gamma}^{e^-e^+ \rightarrow e^-e^+\gamma} = n_+ n_- \frac{16}{3} \frac{2\alpha c}{\varepsilon} \left(\frac{e^2}{m_e c^2} \right)^2 \times \\ \times \ln \left[4\tilde{\zeta}(1 + 10.4\theta^2) \frac{\theta}{\varepsilon} \right] \frac{\sqrt{2} + 2\theta + 2\theta^2}{\exp(1/\theta)K_2(1/\theta)}, \quad (\text{H.6.2})$$

where $\tilde{\zeta} = e^{-0.5772}$, and $K_2(1/\theta)$ is the modified Bessel function of the second kind of order 2.

Double Compton scattering

$$\eta_{\gamma}^{e^{\pm}\gamma \rightarrow e^{\pm'}\gamma'\gamma''} = (n_+ + n_-) n_{\gamma} \frac{128}{3} \frac{\alpha c}{\varepsilon} \times \\ \times \left(\frac{e^2}{m_e c^2} \right)^2 \frac{\theta^2}{1 + 13.91\theta + 11.05\theta^2 + 19.92\theta^3}, \quad (\text{H.6.3})$$

Three photon annihilation

$$\eta_{\gamma}^{e^{\pm}e^{\mp} \rightarrow \gamma\gamma'\gamma''} = n_+ n_- \alpha c \left(\frac{e^2}{m_e c^2} \right)^2 \frac{1}{\varepsilon} \frac{\frac{4}{\theta} \left(2\ln^2 2\tilde{\zeta}\theta + \frac{\pi^2}{6} - \frac{1}{2} \right)}{4\theta + \frac{1}{\theta^2} \left(2\ln^2 2\tilde{\zeta}\theta + \frac{\pi^2}{6} - \frac{1}{2} \right)}, \quad (\text{H.6.4})$$

where two limiting approximations Svensson (1984) are joined together.

Radiative pair production

$$\eta_e^{\gamma\gamma' \rightarrow \gamma''e^{\pm}e^{\mp}} = \eta_{\gamma}^{e^{\pm}e^{\mp} \rightarrow \gamma\gamma'\gamma''} \frac{n_{\gamma}^2}{n_+ n_-} \left[\frac{K_2(1/\theta)}{2\theta^2} \right]^2. \quad (\text{H.6.5})$$

Electron-photon pair production

$$\eta_{\gamma}^{e_1^{\pm}\gamma \rightarrow e_1^{\pm'}e^{\pm}e^{\mp}} = \begin{cases} (n_+ + n_-) n_{\gamma} \alpha c \left(\frac{e^2}{m_e c^2} \right)^2 \exp(-\frac{2}{\theta}) 16.1\theta^{0.541}, & \theta \leq 2, \\ (n_+ + n_-) n_{\gamma} \alpha c \left(\frac{e^2}{m_e c^2} \right)^2 \left(\frac{56}{9} \ln 2\tilde{\zeta}\theta - \frac{8}{27} \right) \frac{1}{1+0.5/\theta}, & \theta > 2. \end{cases} \quad (\text{H.6.6})$$

The absorption coefficient for three-body processes is written as

$$\chi_\gamma^{3p} = \eta_\gamma^{3p} / E_\gamma^{\text{eq}}, \quad (\text{H.6.7})$$

where η_γ^{3p} is the sum of the emission coefficients of photons in the three particle processes, $E_\gamma^{\text{eq}} = 2\pi\epsilon^3 f_\gamma^{\text{eq}} / c^3$, where f_γ^{eq} is given by (H.1.18).

From equation (H.2.4), the law of energy conservation in the three-body processes is

$$\int \sum_i (\eta_i^{3p} - \chi_i^{3p} E_i) d\mu d\epsilon = 0. \quad (\text{H.6.8})$$

For exact conservation of energy in these processes the following coefficients of emission and absorption for electrons are introduced:

$$\chi_e^{3p} = \frac{\int (\eta_\gamma^{3p} - \chi_\gamma^{3p} E_\gamma) d\epsilon d\mu}{\int E_e d\epsilon d\mu}, \quad \eta_e^{3p} = 0, \quad \int (\eta_\gamma^{3p} - \chi_\gamma^{3p} E_\gamma) d\epsilon d\mu > 0, \quad (\text{H.6.9})$$

or

$$\frac{\eta_e^{3p}}{E_e} = -\frac{\int (\eta_\gamma^{3p} - \chi_\gamma^{3p} E_\gamma) d\epsilon d\mu}{\int E_e d\epsilon d\mu}, \quad \chi_e^{3p} = 0, \quad \int (\eta_\gamma^{3p} - \chi_\gamma^{3p} E_\gamma) d\epsilon d\mu < 0. \quad (\text{H.6.10})$$

H.7. Cutoff in the Coulomb scattering

Denote quantities in the center of mass (CM) frame with index 0, and with prime after interaction. Suppose there are two particles with masses m_1 and m_2 . The change of the angle of the first particle in CM system is

$$\theta_{10} = \arccos(\mathbf{b}_{10} \cdot \mathbf{b}'_{10}), \quad (\text{H.7.1})$$

the numerical grid size is $\Delta\theta_g$, the minimal angle at the scattering is θ_{\min} .

By definition in the in CM frame

$$\mathbf{p}_{10} + \mathbf{p}_{20} = 0, \quad (\text{H.7.2})$$

where

$$\mathbf{p}_{i0} = \mathbf{p}_i + \left[(\Gamma - 1)(\mathbf{N} \cdot \mathbf{p}_i) - \Gamma \frac{V}{c} \epsilon_i \right] \mathbf{N}, \quad i = 1, 2, \quad (\text{H.7.3})$$

and

$$\epsilon_i = \Gamma(\epsilon_{i0} + \mathbf{V} \cdot \mathbf{p}_{i0}). \quad (\text{H.7.4})$$

Then for the velocity of the CM frame

$$\frac{\mathbf{V}}{c} = c \frac{\mathbf{p}_1 + \mathbf{p}_2}{\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2}, \quad \mathbf{N} = \frac{\mathbf{V}}{V}, \quad \Gamma = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{V}{c}\right)^2}}. \quad (\text{H.7.5})$$

By definition

$$\mathbf{b}_{10} = \mathbf{b}_{20}, \quad \mathbf{b}'_{10} = \mathbf{b}'_{20}, \quad (\text{H.7.6})$$

and then

$$\begin{aligned} |\mathbf{p}_{10}| &= |\mathbf{p}_{20}| = p_0 \equiv \\ &\equiv \frac{1}{c} \sqrt{\epsilon_{10}^2 - m_1^2 c^4} = \frac{1}{c} \sqrt{\epsilon_{20}^2 - m_2^2 c^4}, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{H.7.7})$$

where

$$\epsilon_{10} = \frac{(\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2)^2 - \Gamma^2(m_2^2 - m_1^2)c^4}{2(\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2)\Gamma}, \quad (\text{H.7.8})$$

$$\epsilon_{20} = \frac{(\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2)^2 + \Gamma^2(m_2^2 - m_1^2)c^4}{2(\epsilon_1 + \epsilon_2)\Gamma}. \quad (\text{H.7.9})$$

Haug Haug (1988) gives the minimal scattering angle in the center of mass system

$$\theta_{\min} = \frac{2\hbar}{m_e c D} \frac{\gamma_r}{(\gamma_r + 1) \sqrt{2(\gamma_r - 1)}}, \quad (\text{H.7.10})$$

where the maximum impact parameter (neglecting the effect of protons) is

$$D = \frac{c^2}{\omega} \frac{p_0}{\epsilon_{10}}, \quad (\text{H.7.11})$$

and the invariant Lorentz factor of relative motion (e.g. Haug (1988)) is

$$\gamma_r = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 - \left(\frac{v_r}{c}\right)^2}} = \frac{\epsilon_1 \epsilon_2 - \mathbf{p}_1 \cdot \mathbf{p}_2 c^2}{m_1 m_2 c^4}. \quad (\text{H.7.12})$$

Finally, in the CM frame

$$t_{\min} = 2 \left[(m_e c)^2 - \left(\frac{\epsilon_{10}}{c} \right)^2 \left(1 - \beta_{10}^2 \cos \theta_{\min} \right) \right]$$

Since it is invariant, t in the denominator of $|M_{fi}|^2$ in (H.5.34) is replaced by the value $t \sqrt{1 + t_{\min}^2/t^2}$ to implement the cutoff scheme. Also at the scattering of equivalent particles u in the denominator of $|M_{fi}|^2$ in (H.5.34) by is

changed by the value $u\sqrt{1+t_{\min}^2/u^2}$.

H.8. Numerical results

The results of numerical simulations are reported below. Two limiting initial conditions with flat spectra are chosen: (i) electron-positron pairs with a 10^{-5} energy fraction of photons and (ii) the reverse case, i.e., photons with a 10^{-5} energy fraction of pairs. The grid consists of 60 energy intervals and 16×32 intervals for two angles characterizing the direction of the particle momenta. In both cases the total energy density is $\rho = 10^{24} \text{ erg} \cdot \text{cm}^{-3}$. In the first case initial concentration of pairs is $3.1 \cdot 10^{29} \text{ cm}^{-3}$, in the second case the concentration of photons is $7.2 \cdot 10^{29} \text{ cm}^{-3}$.

In Fig. H.1, panel A concentrations of photons and pairs as well as their sum for both initial conditions are shown. After calculations begin, concentrations and energy density of photons (pairs) increase rapidly with time, due to annihilation (creation) of pairs. Then, in the kinetic equilibrium phase, concentrations of each component stay almost constant, and the sum of concentrations of photons and pairs remains unchanged. Finally, both individual components and their sum reach stationary values. If one compares and contrasts both cases as reproduced in Fig. H.1 A one can see that, although the initial conditions are drastically different, in both cases the same asymptotic values of the concentration are reached.

One can see in Fig. H.1, panel C that the spectral density of photons and pairs can be fitted already at $t_k \approx 20t_{\text{Cs}} \approx 7 \cdot 10^{-15} \text{ sec}$ by distribution functions (H.1.18) with definite values of temperature $\theta_k(t_{\text{Cs}}) \approx 1.2$ and chemical potential $\phi_k(t_k) \approx -4.5$, common for pairs and photons. As expected, after t_k the distribution functions preserve their form (H.1.18) with the values of temperature and chemical potential changing in time, as shown in Fig. H.1, panel B. As one can see from this figure, the chemical potential evolves with time and reaches zero at the moment $t_{\text{th}} \approx \alpha^{-1}t_k \approx 7 \cdot 10^{-13} \text{ sec}$, corresponding to the final stationary solution. Condition (H.4.6) is satisfied in kinetic equilibrium.

The necessary condition for thermal equilibrium in the pair plasma is the detailed balance between direct and inverse triple interactions. This point is usually neglected in the literature where there are claims that the thermal equilibrium may be established with only binary interactions Stepney (1983). In order to demonstrate it explicitly in Fig. H.1, panel A the dependence of concentrations of pairs and photons when inverse triple interactions are artificially switched off is also shown. In this case (see dotted curves in the upper part of Fig. H.1, panel A), after kinetic equilibrium is reached concentrations of pairs decrease monotonically with time, and thermal equilibrium is never reached.

The existence of a non-null chemical potential for photons indicates the

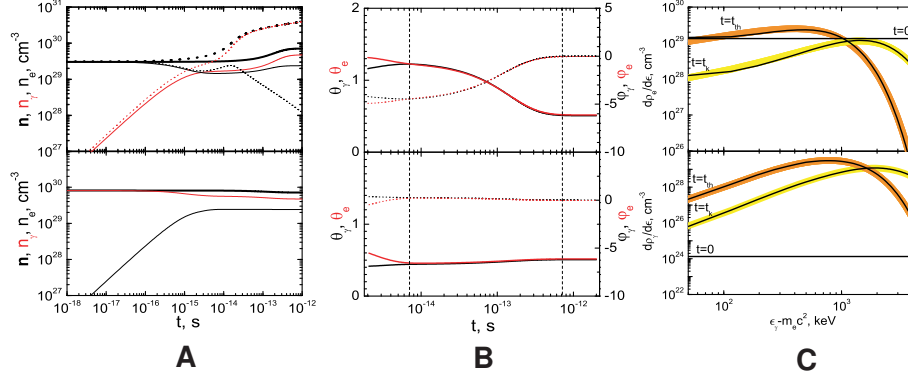


Figure H.1.: **A:** Dependence on time of concentrations of pairs (black), photons (red) and both (thick) when all interactions take place (solid). Upper (lower) figure corresponds to the case when initially there are mainly pairs (photons). Dotted curves on the upper figure show concentrations when inverse triple interactions are neglected. In this case an enhancement of the pairs occurs with the corresponding increase in photon number and thermal equilibrium is never reached. **B:** Time dependence of temperatures, measured on the left axis (solid), and chemical potentials, measured on the right axis (dotted), of electrons (black) and photons (red). The dashed lines correspond to the reaching of the kinetic ($\sim 10^{-14}\text{sec}$) and the thermal ($\sim 10^{-12}\text{sec}$) equilibria. Upper (lower) figure corresponds to the case when initially there are mainly pairs (photons). **C:** Spectra of pairs (upper figure) and photons (lower figure) when initially only pairs are present. The black curve represents the results of numerical calculations obtained successively at $t = 0$, $t = t_k$ and $t = t_{th}$ (see the text). Both spectra of photons and pairs are initially taken to be flat. The yellow curves indicate the spectra obtained from (H.1.18) at $t = t_k$. The perfect fit of the two curves is most evident in the entire energy range leading to the first determination of the temperature and chemical potential both for pairs and photons. The orange curves indicate the final spectra as thermal equilibrium is reached.

departure of the distribution function from the one corresponding to thermal equilibrium. Negative (positive) value of the chemical potential generates an increase (decrease) of the number of particles in order to approach the one corresponding to the thermal equilibrium state. Then, since the total number of particles increases (decreases), the energy is shared between more (less) particles and the temperature decreases (increases). Clearly, as thermal equilibrium is approached, the chemical potential of photons is zero.

In this example with the energy density $10^{24} \text{ erg} \cdot \text{cm}^{-3}$ the thermal equilibrium is reached at $\sim 7 \cdot 10^{-13} \text{ sec}$ with the final temperature $T_{\text{th}} = 0.26 \text{ MeV}$. For a larger energy density the duration of the kinetic equilibrium phase, as well as of the thermalization time scale, is smaller. Recall, that in entire temperature range the plasma is nondegenerate.

The results, obtained for the case of an uniform plasma, can only be adopted for a description of a physical system with dimensions $R_0 \gg \frac{1}{n\sigma_T} = 4.3 \cdot 10^{-5} \text{ cm}$.

The assumption of the constancy of the energy density is only valid if the dynamical timescale $t_{\text{dyn}} = \left(\frac{1}{R} \frac{dR}{dt} \right)^{-1}$ of the plasma is much larger than the above timescale t_{th} which is indeed true in all the cases of astrophysical interest.

Since thermal equilibrium is obtained already on the timescale $t_{th} \lesssim 10^{-12} \text{ sec}$, and such a state is independent of the initial distribution functions for electrons, positrons and photons, the sufficient condition to obtain an isothermal distribution on a causally disconnected spatial scale $R > ct_{th} = 10^{-2} \text{ cm}$ is the request of constancy of the energy density on such a scale as well as, of course, the invariance of the physical laws.

To summarize, the evolution of an initially nonequilibrium optically thick electron-positron-photon plasma is considered up to reaching thermal equilibrium. Starting from arbitrary initial conditions kinetic equilibrium is obtained from first principles, directly solving the relativistic Boltzmann equation with collisional integrals computed from QED matrix elements. The essential role of direct and inverse triple interactions in reaching thermal equilibrium is demonstrated. These results can be applied in the theories of the early universe and of GRBs, where thermal equilibrium is postulated at the very early stages. These results can in principle be tested in laboratory experiments in the generation of electron-positron pairs.

I. Concluding remarks

We have reviewed three fundamental quantum processes which have highlighted some of the greatest effort in theoretical and experimental physics in last seventy years. They all deal with creation and annihilation of electron-positron pairs. We have followed the original path starting from the classical works of Dirac, on the process $e^+e^- \rightarrow 2\gamma$, and the inverse process, $2\gamma \rightarrow e^+e^-$, considered by Breit-Wheeler. We have then reviewed the e^+e^- pair creation in a critical electric field $E_c = m_e^2 c^3 / (\hbar e)$ and the Sauter-Heisenberg-Euler-Schwinger description of this process both in Quantum Mechanics and Quantum Electrodynamics. We have also taken this occasion to reconstruct the exciting conceptual developments, initiated by the Sauter work, enlarged by the Born-Infeld nonlinear electrodynamical approach, finally leading to the Euler and Euler-Heisenberg results. We were guided in this reconstruction by the memories of many discussions of one of us (RR) with Werner Heisenberg. We have then reviewed the latest theoretical developments deriving the general formula for pair-production rate in electric fields varying in space and in time, compared with one in a constant electric field approximation originally studied by Schwinger within QED. We also reviewed recent studies of pair production rates in selected electric fields varying both in space and in time, obtained in literatures using instanton and JWKB methods. Special attention has been given to the pair-production rate in electric fields alternating periodically in time, early derived by Brezin, Itzykson and Popov, and the nonlinear Compton effect in the processes of electrons and photons colliding with laser beams, studied by Nikishov and Narozhny. These theoretical results play an essential role in Laboratory experiments to observe the pair-production phenomenon using laser technologies.

We then reviewed the different level of verification of these three processes in experiments carried all over the world. We stressed the success of experimental verification of the Dirac process, by far one of the most prolific and best tested process in the field of physics. We also recalled the study of the hadronic branch in addition to the pure electrodynamical branch originally studied by Dirac, made possible by the introduction of e^+e^- storage rings technology. We then turned to the very exciting current situation which sees possibly the Breit-Wheeler formula reaching its first experimental verification. This result is made possible thanks to the current great developments of laser physics. We reviewed as well the somewhat traumatic situation in the last forty years of the heavy-ion collisions in Darmstadt and Brookhaven, yet unsuccessfully attempting to observe the creation of electron-positron pairs

in heavy ion collisions. We also reviewed how this vast experimental program was rooted in the theoretical ideas of Zeldovich, Popov, Greiner and their schools.

We have then recalled the great novelty in the field of relativistic astrophysics where we are daily observing the phenomenon of Gamma Ray Bursts Piran (1999, 2005); Meszaros (2006); Ruffini et al. (2003a, 2007a). These bursts of photons occur in energy range keV to MeV, last about one second and come from astrophysical sources located at a cosmological distance Costa et al. (1997); van Paradijs et al. (1997); Kulkarni et al. (1998); Halpern et al. (1998); Ramaprakash et al. (1998). The energy released is up to $\sim 10^{54}$ ergs, equivalent to all the energy emitted by all the stars of all the galaxies of the entire visible Universe during that second. It is generally agreed that the energetics of this GRBs sources is dominated by a dense plasma of electrons, positrons and photons created during the process of gravitational collapse leading to a Black Hole. It is clear that the Sauter-Heisenberg-Euler-Schwinger vacuum polarization process, we have considered in the first part of the report, is a viable theoretical model to study the creation of such an electron-positron optically thick plasma. Similarly the Breit-Wheeler and the Dirac processes we have discussed, are essential in describing the further evolution of such an optically thick electron-positron plasma. The GRBs present an unique opportunity to test new unexplored regime of ultra high energy physics with Lorentz factor $\gamma \sim 200$ and relativistic field theories in the strongest general relativistic domain.

The aim in this report, in addition to describe the above mentioned three basic quantum processes, has been to identify and review three basic topics in ultrarelativistic regimes. They are necessary to reach a theoretical understanding of the new and complex phenomenon occurring in the quantum electrodynamical processes during the gravitational collapse to a Kerr-Newman black hole and in the onset of the dense electron positron plasma. The first topic contains the basic results of the physics of black holes, of their energetics and of the associated process of vacuum polarization. We reviewed the procedures to generalize in a Kerr-Newman geometry the QED treatment of Schwinger and the creation of enormous number of 10^{60} electron-positron pairs in such a process.

The second topic is the back reaction of a newly created electron-positron plasma on an overcritical electric field. Again we reviewed the Breit-Wheeler and Dirac processes applied in the wider context of the Vlasov-Boltzmann-Maxwell equations. To discuss the back reaction of electron-positron pair on external electric fields, we reviewed semi-classical and kinetic theories describing the plasma oscillations using respectively the Dirac-Maxwell equations and the Boltzmann-Vlasov equations. We also reviewed the discussions of plasma oscillations damping due to quantum decoherence and collisions, described by respectively the quantum Boltzmann-Vlasov equation and Boltzmann-Vlasov equation with particle collisions terms. We particu-

larly addressed the study of the influence of the collision processes $e^+e^- \rightleftharpoons \gamma\gamma$ on the plasma oscillations in supercritical electric field $E > E_c$. After 10^{3-4} Compton times, the oscillating electric field is damped to its critical value with a large number of photons created. An equipartition of number and energy between electron-positron pairs and photons is reached. For the plasma oscillation with undercritical electric field $E \lesssim E_c$, we recalled that electron-positron pairs, created by the vacuum polarization process, move as charged particles in external electric field reaching a maximum Lorentz factor at finite length of oscillations, instead of arbitrary large Lorentz factors, as traditionally assumed. Finally we point out some recent results which differentiate the case $E > E_c$ from the one $E < E_c$ with respect to the creation of the rest mass of the pair versus its kinetic energy. For $E > E_c$ the vacuum polarization process transforms the electromagnetic energy of the field mainly in the rest mass of pairs, with moderate contribution to their kinetic energy. Such phenomena, certainly fundamental on astrophysical scales, may become soon directly testable in the the verification of the Breit Wheeler process tested in laser experiments in the laboratory.

As third topic we have reviewed the recent progress in the understanding of thermalization process of an optically thick electron-positron-photon plasma. Numerical integration of relativistic Boltzmann equation with collisional integrals for binary and triple interactions is used to follow the time evolution of such a plasma, in the range of energies per particle between 0.1 and 10 MeV, starting from arbitrary nonequilibrium configuration. It is recalled that there exist two types of equilibria in such a plasma: kinetic equilibrium, when all particles are at the same temperature, but have different nonzero chemical potentials, and thermal equilibrium, when chemical potentials vanish. The crucial role of direct and inverse binary and triple interactions in reaching thermal equilibrium is emphasized. These results are indeed essential in determining the initial conditions and differentiating major different approaches in the astrophysical scenario of GRBs.

The comprehension of these three ultrarelativistic processes are indeed necessary for starting to formulate the dynamics and the basic energetics of GRBs, which we will address in a forthcoming report.

The comprehension of an astrophysical system is only reached when the understanding of its energetics is reached. There are two classical examples of how theoretical physics has given the conceptual basis to comprehend an astrophysical system. The first case is the theoretical work which led to the understanding of the energy sources of main sequence stars. The “long march” started in 1920s, when J. Perrin Perrin (1920) and A. Eddington (1920) pointed out independently that the fusion of four hydrogen nuclei into one helium nucleus could explain the energy production in stars. This idea was put on a solid base by R. Atkinson and F. Houtermans (1929a,b) using G. Gamow quantum theory of nuclear barrier penetration Gamow and Houtermans (1929). This work, further de-

veloped by C.F. von Weizsacker von Weizsäcker (1937, 1938) led to the monumental theoretical work of H. Bethe (1968) later further developed by Burbidge et al. (1957). It was concluded that nuclear fusion process explained the energy sources of stars. The second case is the theoretical work which lead to the understanding of the energy source of the binary X-ray sources. These sources, discovered by R. Giacconi and his group Giacconi (1978), presented luminosities up to $10^4 L_{\odot}$ in the X ray band. In this case the main theoretical physics tool was represented by the solution of the effective potential around a gravitationally collapsed object and the consequent evaluation of the gravitational binding energy for circular orbits. It was then possible to understand that in binary X-ray sources the energy source was indeed a new form of energy, alternative to the nuclear energy explaining main sequence stars. It became clear that the energy source was due to matter accretion process in relativistic gravitational potential. It was concluded that relativistic gravitational energy is the source of X-ray binaries Giacconi (2003).

The reason of reviewing in this report all the above mentioned fundamental mechanisms is that we are very likely to approach a similar epochal discovery. There is the distinct possibility that explanation of the energy source of the most energetic phenomenon yet observed in the Universe is given by a vacuum polarization process and consequent creation of e^+e^- pairs occurring during the formation of a black hole Ruffini (2009). It may be soon concluded that the blackholic energy is indeed the source of GRBs.

It is then possible from our review and the many references we have given to gain an understanding of this new field of research. The three topics which we have reviewed are closely linked to the three quantum processes currently being tested in precision measurement in the laboratories. There is a distinct possibility that the experiments in the laboratories and the astrophysical observations cover complementary aspects which may facilitate a deeper and wider understanding of the GRB phenomenon as well as of the nuclear and laser physics processes as well as of heavy-ion collisions.

Acknowledgment. We would like to thank A. Aksenov, D. Arnett, A. Ashtekar, V.A. Belinski, D. Bini, P. Chardonnet, F. Fraschetti, R. Giacconi, W. Greiner, F. Guerra, R. Jantzen, G. 't Hooft, I.B. Khriplovich, H. Kleinert, P. Menotti, S. Mercuri, N.B. Narozhny, A. Pelster, V.S. Popov, G. Preparata, B. Punsly, J. Rafelski, J. Reihardt, A. Ringwald, J. Rueda, M. Testa, L. Vitagliano, J. Wilson for many important discussions.

Bibliography

«The l3 experiment at cern» (????).

«The linac coherent light source» (????).

«Slac experiment 144» (????).

AHARONIAN, F., AKHPERJANIAN, A.G., BAZER-BACHI, A.R., BEILICKE, M., BENBOW, W., BERGE, D., BERNLÖHR, K., BOISSON, C., BOLZ, O., BORREL, V. ET AL.

«A low level of extragalactic background light as revealed by γ -rays from blazars».

Nature, **440**, pp. 1018–1021 (2006).

AHARONIAN, F.A.

«TeV gamma rays from BL Lac objects due to synchrotron radiation of extremely high energy protons».

New Astronomy, **5**, pp. 377–395 (2000).

AHARONIAN, F.A.

Very High Energy Cosmic Gamma Radiation (World Scientific, 2003).

AHARONIAN, F.A., AKHPERJANIAN, A.G., BARRIO, J.A., BERNLÖHR, K., BOJAHR, H., CALLE, I., CONTRERAS, J.L., CORTINA, J., DENNINGHOFF, S., FONSECA, V. ET AL.

«The Energy Spectrum of TEV Gamma Rays from the Crab Nebula as Measured by the HEGRA System of Imaging Air Cerenkov Telescopes».

Astrophysical Journal, **539**, pp. 317–324 (2000).

AHMAD, I., APEX COLLABORATION AND ET AL.

«Ahmad et al. Reply:».

Physical Review Letters, **77**, pp. 2839–+ (1996).

AHMAD, I., AUSTIN, S.M., BACK, B.B., BETTS, R.R., CALAPRICE, F.P., CHAN, K.C., CHISHTI, A., CHOWDHURY, P., CONNER, C., DUNFORD, R.W. ET AL.

«Search for Narrow Sum-Energy Lines in Electron-Positron Pair Emission from Heavy-Ion Collisions near the Coulomb Barrier».

Physical Review Letters, **75**, pp. 2658–2661 (1995).

AHMAD, I., AUSTIN, S.M., BACK, B.B., BETTS, R.R., CALAPRICE, F.P.,
CHAN, K.C., CHISHTI, A., CONNER, C., DUNFORD, R.W., FOX, J.D.
ET AL.

«Search for Monoenergetic Positron Emission from Heavy-Ion Collisions
at Coulomb-Barrier Energies».

Physical Review Letters, **78**, pp. 618–621 (1997).

AKHIEZER, A. AND BERESTETSKII, V.

Quantum Electrodynamics (Moscow, Nauka, 1981).

AKSENOV, A.G., MILGROM, M. AND USOV, V.V.

«Structure of Pair Winds from Compact Objects with Application to Emis-
sion from Hot Bare Strange Stars».

ApJ, **609**, pp. 363–377 (2004).

AKSENOV, A.G., RUFFINI, R. AND VERESHCHAGIN, G.V.

«Thermalization of Nonequilibrium Electron-Positron-Photon Plasmas».

Phys. Rev. Lett., **99(12)**, pp. 125003–+ (2007).

AKSENOV, A.G., RUFFINI, R. AND VERESHCHAGIN, G.V.

«Thermalization of Electron-Positron-Photon Plasmas with an application
to GRB».

In *American Institute of Physics Conference Series*, volume 966 of *American
Institute of Physics Conference Series*, pp. 191–196 (2008).

ALKOFER, R., HECHT, M.B., ROBERTS, C.D., SCHMIDT, S.M. AND VINNIK,
D.V.

«Pair Creation and an X-Ray Free Electron Laser».

Physical Review Letters, **87(19)**, pp. 193902–+ (2001).

ALTARELLI, G.

«Partons in quantum chromodynamics».

Phys. Rep., **81**, pp. 1–129 (1982).

ALTARELLI, G. AND GRÜNEWALD, M.W.

«Precision electroweak tests of the Standard Model».

Phys. Rep., **403**, pp. 189–201 (2004).

ANDERSON, C.D.

«The Positive Electron».

Physical Review, **43**, pp. 491–494 (1933).

ANDERSSON, B., GUSTAFSON, G., INGELMAN, G. AND SJÖSTRAND, T.

«Parton fragmentation and string dynamics».

Phys. Rep., **97**, pp. 31–145 (1983).

- ARTHUR, J.E.A.
«Linac coherent light source (LCLS) design study report».
Technical report (????).
SLAC-R-0521.
- ATKINSON, R.D. AND HOUTERMANS, F.G.
«Zur Quantenmechanik der α -Strahlung».
Zeitschrift für Physik, **58**, pp. 478–496 (1929a).
- ATKINSON, R.D.E. AND HOUTERMANS, F.G.
«Zur Frage der Aufbaumöglichkeit der Elemente in Sternen».
Zeitschrift für Physik, **54**, pp. 656–665 (1929b).
- AVAN, J., FRIED, H.M. AND GABELLINI, Y.
«Nontrivial generalizations of the Schwinger pair production result».
Phys. Rev. D, **67(1)**, pp. 016003–+ (2003).
- BACKE, H., HANDSCHUG, L., HESSBERGER, F., KANKELEIT, E., RICHTER, L., WEIK, F., WILLWATER, R., BOKEMEYER, H., VINCENT, P., NAKAYAMA, Y. ET AL.
«Observation of Positron Creation in Superheavy Ion-Atom Collision Systems».
Physical Review Letters, **40**, pp. 1443–1446 (1978).
- BACKE, H.E.A.
Quantum electrodynamics of strong fields, volume 80 of *NATO Advanced Study Institute, Series B: Physics* (Plenum Press, 1983).
Proceedings of the conference NATO Advanced Study Institute on Quantum Electrodynamics of Strong Fields, Lahnstein, Germany, Jun 15-26, 1981.
- BADELEK, B., BLÖCHINGER, C., BLÜMLEIN, J., BOOS, E., BRINKMANN, R., BURKHARDT, H., BUSSEY, P., CARIMALO, C., CHYLA, J., ÇİFTÇİ, A.K. ET AL.
«The Photon Collider at Tesla».
International Journal of Modern Physics A, **19**, pp. 5097–5186 (2004).
- BAILEY, J., BORER, K., COMBLEY, F., DRUMM, H., FARLEY, F.J.M., FIELD, J.H., FLEGEL, W., HATTERSLEY, P.M., KRIENEN, F., LANGE, F. ET AL.
«The anomalous magnetic moment of positive and negative muons».
Physics Letters B, **68**, pp. 191–196 (1977).
- BAKSHI, P.M. AND MAHANTHAPPA, K.T.
«Expectation Value Formalism in Quantum Field Theory. I».
Journal of Mathematical Physics, **4**, pp. 1–11 (1963a).

- BAKSHI, P.M. AND MAHANTHAPPA, K.T.
«Expectation Value Formalism in Quantum Field Theory. II».
Journal of Mathematical Physics, **4**, pp. 12–16 (1963b).
- BAMBER, C., BOEGE, S.J., KOFFAS, T., KOTSEROGLOU, T., MELISSINOS, A.C., MEYERHOFER, D.D., REIS, D.A., RAGG, W., BULA, C., McDONALD, K.T. ET AL.
«Studies of nonlinear QED in collisions of 46.6 GeV electrons with intense laser pulses».
Phys. Rev. D, **60(9)**, pp. 092004–+ (1999).
- BARKLOW, T.L., DAWSON, S., HABER, H.E. AND SIEGRIST, J.L. (eds.).
Electroweak Symmetry Breaking and New Physics at the TeV Scale (World Scientific, 1997).
- BATALIN, I.A. AND FRADKIN, E.S.
«Quantum electrodynamics in external fields. I».
Theoretical and Mathematical Physics, **5**, pp. 1080–1100 (1970).
- BATEMAN, H.
Higher transcendental functions (California Institute of Technology Bateman Manuscript Project, New York: McGraw-Hill, 1953-1955, 1955).
- BAZ', A.I., ZELDOVICH, Y.B. AND PERELOMOV, A.M.
Scattering, Reactions, and Decays in Non-Relativistic Quantum Mechanics (Nauka, Moscow, 1966).
- BEAUDET, G., PETROSIAN, V. AND SALPETER, E.E.
«Energy Losses due to Neutrino Processes».
ApJ, **150**, pp. 979–+ (1967).
- BEKENSTEIN, J.D.
«Hydrostatic equilibrium and gravitational collapse of relativistic charged fluid balls.»
Phys. Rev. D, **4**, pp. 2185–2190 (1971).
- BEKENSTEIN, J.D.
«Black holes and entropy.»
Phys. Rev. D, **7**, pp. 2333–2346 (1973).
- BELYAEV, S. AND BUDKER, G.
«Relativistic Kinetic Equation».
DAN SSSR, **107**, pp. 807–810 (1956).
- BERESTETSKII, V.B., LIFSHITZ, E.M. AND PITAEVSKII, V.B.

- Relativistic quantum theory. Pt.1* (Course of theoretical physics - Pergamon International Library of Science, Technology, Engineering and Social Studies, Oxford: Pergamon Press, 1971, edited by Landau, Lev Davidovich (series); Lifshitz, E.M. (series), 1971).
- BERESTETSKII, V.B., LIFSHITZ, E.M. AND PITAEVSKII, V.B.
Quantum Electrodynamics (Elsevier, 1982).
- BERNARDINI, C.
«AdA:The First Electron-Positron Collider».
Physics in Perspective, **6**, pp. 156–183 (2004).
- BEST, C. AND EISENBERG, J.M.
«Pair creation in transport equations using the equal-time Wigner function».
Phys. Rev. D, **47**, pp. 4639–4646 (1993).
- BETHE, H.A.
Energy production in stars. Nobel lecture. ([Stockholm, Norstedt] 1968., 1968).
- BIAŁAS, A. AND CZYŻ, W.
«Boost-invariant Boltzmann-Vlasov equations for relativistic quark-antiquark plasma».
Phys. Rev. D, **30**, pp. 2371–2378 (1984).
- BIALAS, A. AND CZYZ, W.
«Chromoelectric flux tubes and the transverse-momentum distribution in high-energy nucleus-nucleus collisions».
Phys. Rev. D, **31**, pp. 198–200 (1985a).
- BIALAS, A. AND CZYZ, W.
«Oscillations of relativistic, boost-invariant quark-antiquark plasma».
Zeitschrift fur Physik C Particles and Fields, **28**, pp. 255–259 (1985b).
- BIALAS, A. AND CZYZ, W.
«Conversion of color field into qq matter in the central region of high-energy heavy ion collisions».
Nuclear Physics B, **267**, pp. 242–252 (1986).
- BIALAS, A., CZYZDOT, W., DYREK, A. AND FLORKOWSKI, W.
«Oscillations of quark-gluon plasma generated in strong color fields».
Nuclear Physics B, **296**, pp. 611–624 (1988).
- BIRO, T.S., NIELSEN, H.B. AND KNOLL, J.
«Colour rope model for extreme relativistic heavy ion collisions».
Nucl. Phys. B, **245**, pp. 449–468 (1984).

- BISNOVATYI-KOGAN, G.S., ZEL'DOVICH, Y.B. AND SYUNYAEV, R.A.
«Physical Processes in a Low-Density Relativistic Plasma.»
Soviet Ast. , **15**, pp. 17–+ (1971).
- BJORKEN, J. AND DRELL, S.
Relativistic Quantum Fields (McGraw-Hill College, 1965).
- BJORKEN, J. AND DRELL, S.
Relativistic Quantum Mechanics (McGraw-Hill Science, 1998).
- BLANDFORD, R.D. AND ZNAJEK, R.L.
«Electromagnetic extraction of energy from Kerr black holes».
MNRAS , **179**, pp. 433–456 (1977).
- BLASCHKE, D.B., PROZORKEVICH, A.V., ROBERTS, C.D., SCHMIDT, S.M.
AND SMOLYANSKY, S.A.
«Pair Production and Optical Lasers».
Physical Review Letters, **96(14)**, pp. 140402–+ (2006).
- BLOCH, J.C.R., MIZERNY, V.A., PROZORKEVICH, A.V., ROBERTS, C.D.,
SCHMIDT, S.M., SMOLYANSKY, S.A. AND VINNIK, D.V.
«Pair creation: Back reactions and damping».
Phys. Rev. D, **60(11)**, pp. 116011–+ (1999).
- BOGOLIUBOV, N.N. AND SHIRKOV, D.V.
Introduction to the theory of quantized fields (Introduction to the theory of
quantized fields, by Bogoli'ubov, N. N.; Shirkov, D. V. New York, Inter-
science Publishers, 1959. Interscience monographs in physics and astron-
omy ; v. 3, 1959).
- BOKEMEYER, H.E.A.
Quantum electrodynamics of strong fields, volume 80 of *NATO Advanced Study
Institute, Series B: Physics* (Plenum Press, 1983).
Proceedings of the conference NATO Advanced Study Institute on Quan-
tum Electrodynamics of Strong Fields, Lahnstein, Germany, Jun 15-26,
1981.
- BONOMETTO, S. AND REES, M.J.
«On possible observable effects of electron pair-production in QSOs».
MNRAS , **152**, pp. 21–+ (1971).
- BORDAG, M.
Quantum Field Theory Under the Influence of External Conditions (B.G.Teubner
GmbH, 1996).
- BORDAG, M.
Casimir Effect 50 Years Later (World Scientific Publishing Company, 1999).

- BORN, M.
«Der Impuls-Energie-Satz in der Elektrodynamik von Gustav Mie».
Göttingen Nachr. Math.-Phys. Klasse, p. 23 (1914).
- BORN, M.
«Modified Field Equations with a Finite Radius of the Electron».
Nature, **132**, pp. 282–+ (1933).
- BORN, M.
«On the Quantum Theory of the Electromagnetic Field».
Royal Society of London Proceedings Series A, **143**, pp. 410–437 (1934).
- BORN, M. AND INFELD, L.
«Foundations of the New Field Theory».
Royal Society of London Proceedings Series A, **144**, pp. 425–451 (1934).
- BORN, M. AND WOLF, E.
Principles of optics. Electromagnetic theory of propagation, interference and diffraction of light (Oxford: Pergamon Press, 1980, 6th corrected ed., 1980).
- BOYANOVSKY, D. AND DE VEGA, H.J.
«Quantum rolling down out of equilibrium».
Phys. Rev. D, **47**, pp. 2343–2355 (1993).
- BOYANOVSKY, D., DE VEGA, H.J. AND HOLMAN, R.
«Nonequilibrium evolution of scalar fields in FRW cosmologies».
Phys. Rev. D, **49**, pp. 2769–2785 (1994).
- BOYANOVSKY, D., DE VEGA, H.J., HOLMAN, R., LEE, D.S. AND SINGH, A.
«Dissipation via particle production in scalar field theories».
Phys. Rev. D, **51**, pp. 4419–4444 (1995).
- BOYANOVSKY, D., LAWRIE, I.D. AND LEE, D.S.
«Relaxation and kinetics in scalar field theories».
Phys. Rev. D, **54**, pp. 4013–4028 (1996).
- BREIT, G. AND WHEELER, J.A.
«Collision of Two Light Quanta».
Physical Review, **46**, pp. 1087–1091 (1934).
- BREZIN, E. AND ITZYKSON, C.
«Pair Production in Vacuum by an Alternating Field».
Phys. Rev. D, **2**, pp. 1191–1199 (1970).
- BRINKMANN, R., MATERLIK, G., ROSSBACH, J. AND WAGNER, A.
«Conceptual design of a 500-GeV $e^+ e^-$ linear collider with integrated X-ray laser facility. Vol. 1, 2».

Technical report (????).
DESY-97-048.

BRODSKY, S.J. AND MOHR, P.J.
«Quantum Electrodynamics in Strong and Supercritical Fields».
In I.A. Sellin (ed.), *Structure and Collisions of Ions and Atoms*, pp. 3–+ (1978).

BROWN, L.S., CAHN, R.N. AND MCLERRAN, L.D.
«Vacuum polarization in a strong Coulomb field. I. Induced point charge».
Phys. Rev. D, **12**, pp. 581–595 (1975a).

BROWN, L.S., CAHN, R.N. AND MCLERRAN, L.D.
«Vacuum polarization in a strong Coulomb field. II. Short-distance corrections».
Phys. Rev. D, **12**, pp. 596–608 (1975b).

BROWN, L.S., CAHN, R.N. AND MCLERRAN, L.D.
«Vacuum polarization in a strong Coulomb field. III. Nuclear size effects».
Phys. Rev. D, **12**, pp. 609–619 (1975c).

BROWN, L.S. AND KIBBLE, T.W.
«Interaction of Intense Laser Beams with Electrons».
Physical Review, **133**, pp. 705–719 (1964).

BULA, C., McDONALD, K.T., PREBYS, E.J., BAMBER, C., BOEGE, S.,
KOTSEROGLOU, T., MELISSINOS, A.C., MEYERHOFER, D.D., RAGG, W.,
BURKE, D.L. ET AL.
«Observation of Nonlinear Effects in Compton Scattering».
Physical Review Letters, **76**, pp. 3116–3119 (1996).

BULANOV, S.S.
«Pair production by a circularly polarized electromagnetic wave in a plasma».
Phys. Rev. E, **69(3)**, pp. 036408–+ (2004).

BULANOV, S.S., FEDOTOV, A.M. AND PEGORARO, F.
«Damping of electromagnetic waves due to electron-positron pair production».
Phys. Rev. E, **71(1)**, pp. 016404–+ (2005).

BULANOV, S.S., NAROZHNY, N.B., MUR, V.D. AND POPOV, V.S.
«Electron-positron pair production by electromagnetic pulses».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **102**, pp. 9–+ (2006).

BULANOV, S.V., ESIRKEPOV, T. AND TAJIMA, T.
«Light Intensification towards the Schwinger Limit».
Phys. Rev. Lett., **91(8)**, pp. 085001–+ (2003).

- BULANOV, S.V., ESIRKEPOV, T. AND TAJIMA, T.
«Erratum: Light Intensification towards the Schwinger Limit [Phys. Rev. Lett. 91, 085001 (2003)]». *Physical Review Letters*, **92(15)**, pp. 159901–+ (2004).
- BUNKIN, F.V. AND TUGOV, I.I.
«Possibility of Creating Electron-Positron Pairs in a Vacuum by the Focusing of Laser Radiation». *Soviet Physics Doklady*, **14**, pp. 678–+ (1970).
- BURBIDGE, E.M., BURBIDGE, G.R., FOWLER, W.A. AND HOYLE, F.
«Synthesis of the Elements in Stars». *Reviews of Modern Physics*, **29**, pp. 547–650 (1957).
- BURKE, D.L., FIELD, R.C., HORTON-SMITH, G., SPENCER, J.E., WALZ, D., BERRIDGE, S.C., BUGG, W.M., SHMAKOV, K., WEIDEMANN, A.W., BULA, C. ET AL.
«Positron Production in Multiphoton Light-by-Light Scattering». *Physical Review Letters*, **79**, pp. 1626–1629 (1997).
- CABIBBO, N. AND GATTO, R.
«Electron-Positron Colliding Beam Experiments». *Physical Review*, **124**, pp. 1577–1595 (1961).
- CALZETTA, E. AND HU, B.L.
«Dissipation of quantum fields from particle creation». *Phys. Rev. D*, **40**, pp. 656–659 (1989).
- CALZETTA, E. AND HU, B.L.
«Noise and fluctuations in semiclassical gravity». *Phys. Rev. D*, **49**, pp. 6636–6655 (1994).
- CARTER, B.
«Hamilton-jacobi and schrodinger separable solutions of einstein's equations». *Communications in Mathematical Physics*, **10**, pp. 280–310 (1968).
- CARTER, B.
«Has the Black Hole Equilibrium Problem Been Solved?»
In T. Piran and R. Ruffini (eds.), *Recent Developments in Theoretical and Experimental General Relativity, Gravitation, and Relativistic Field Theories*, pp. 136–+ (1999).
- CASE, K.M.
«Singular Potentials». *Physical Review*, **80**, pp. 797–806 (1950).

CASIMIR, H.B.G.

Proc. Koninkl. Ned. Akad. Wetenschap., **51**, p. 793 (1948).

CAVALLO, G. AND REES, M.J.

«A qualitative study of cosmic fireballs and gamma-ray bursts».

MNRAS, **183**, pp. 359–365 (1978).

CHEN, F., KLIMCHITSKAYA, G.L., MOHIDEEN, U. AND MOSTEPANENKO, V.M.

«Theory confronts experiment in the Casimir force measurements: Quantification of errors and precision».

Phys. Rev. A, **69**(2), pp. 022117–+ (2004).

CHEN, P. AND PELLEGRINI, C.

«Boiling the vacuum with intense electromagnetic fields».

In P. Chen (ed.), *Quantum aspects of beam physics*, pp. 571–576 (1998).

Prepared for 15th Advanced ICFA Beam Dynamics Workshop on Quantum Aspects of Beam Physics, Monterey, California, 4-9 Jan 1998.

CHEN, P. AND TAJIMA, T.

«Testing Unruh Radiation with Ultraintense Lasers».

Physical Review Letters, **83**, pp. 256–259 (1999).

CHERUBINI, C., GERALICO, A., RUEDA H., J.A. AND RUFFINI, R.

«On the “Dyadotorus” of the Kerr-Newman Spacetime».

In C.L. Bianco and S.S. Xue (eds.), *Relativistic Astrophysics*, volume 966 of *American Institute of Physics Conference Series*, pp. 123–126 (2008).

CHERUBINI, C., RUFFINI, R. AND VITAGLIANO, L.

«On the electromagnetic field of a charged collapsing spherical shell in general relativity».

Physics Letters B, **545**, pp. 226–232 (2002).

CHOU, K.C., SU, Z.B., HAO, B.L. AND YU, L.

«Equilibrium and nonequilibrium formalisms made unified».

Phys. Rep., **118**, pp. 1–2 (1985).

CHRISTODOULOU, D.

«Reversible and Irreversible Transformations in Black-Hole Physics».

Physical Review Letters, **25**, pp. 1596–1597 (1970).

CHRISTODOULOU, D. AND RUFFINI, R.

«Reversible transformations of a charged black hole.»

Phys. Rev. D, **4**, pp. 3552–3555 (1971).

CHURAZOV, E., SUNYAEV, R., SAZONOV, S., REVNIVTSEV, M. AND VARSHALOVICH, D.

- «Positron annihilation spectrum from the Galactic Centre region observed by SPI/INTEGRAL».
MNRAS , **357**, pp. 1377–1386 (2005).
- COOPER, F., EISENBERG, J.M., KLUGER, Y., MOTTOLA, E. AND SVETITSKY, B.
«Particle production in the central rapidity region».
Phys. Rev. D, **48**, pp. 190–208 (1993).
- COOPER, F., FRYE, G. AND SCHONBERG, E.
«Landau's hydrodynamic model of particle production and electron-positron annihilation into hadrons».
Phys. Rev. D, **11**, pp. 192–213 (1975).
- COOPER, F., HABIB, S., KLUGER, Y. AND MOTTOLA, E.
«Nonequilibrium dynamics of symmetry breaking in $\lambda\Phi^4$ theory».
Phys. Rev. D, **55**, pp. 6471–6503 (1997).
- COOPER, F., HABIB, S., KLUGER, Y., MOTTOLA, E., PAZ, J.P. AND ANDERSON, P.R.
«Nonequilibrium quantum fields in the large-N expansion».
Phys. Rev. D, **50**, pp. 2848–2869 (1994).
- COOPER, F. AND MOTTOLA, E.
«Initial-value problems in quantum field theory in the large-N approximation».
Phys. Rev. D, **36**, pp. 3114–3127 (1987).
- COOPER, F. AND MOTTOLA, E.
«Quantum back reaction in scalar QED as an initial-value problem».
Phys. Rev. D, **40**, pp. 456–464 (1989).
- COPPI, P.S. AND AHARONIAN, F.A.
«Understanding the spectra of TeV blazars: implications for the cosmic infrared background».
Astroparticle Physics, **11**, pp. 35–39 (1999).
- COPPI, P.S. AND BLANDFORD, R.D.
«Reaction rates and energy distributions for elementary processes in relativistic pair plasmas».
MNRAS , **245**, pp. 453–507 (1990).
- COSTA, E., FRONTERA, F., HEISE, J., FEROCI, M., IN'T ZAND, J., FIORE, F., CINTI, M.N., DAL FIUME, D., NICASTRO, L., ORLANDINI, M. ET AL.
«Discovery of an X-ray afterglow associated with the γ -ray burst of 28 February 1997».
Nature , **387**, pp. 783–785 (1997).

- COWAN, T.E. AND GREENBERG, J.S.
«Comment on the apex $e + e -$ experiment».
Phys. Rev. Lett., **77**(13), p. 2838 (1996).
- CVITANOVIĆ, P. AND KINOSHITA, T.
«Sixth-order magnetic moment of the electron».
Phys. Rev. D, **10**, pp. 4007–4031 (1974).
- DAMOUR, T.
«».
In *Marcel Grossmann Meeting: General Relativity*, pp. 459–+ (1975).
- DAMOUR, T.
«Surface Effects in Black-Hole Physics».
In *Marcel Grossmann Meeting: General Relativity*, pp. 587–+ (1982).
- DAMOUR, T. AND RUFFINI, R.
«Quantum electrodynamical effects in Kerr-Newman geometries.»
Physical Review Letters, **35**, pp. 463–466 (1975).
- DAMOUR, T., RUFFINI, R., HANNI, R.S. AND WILSON, J.R.
«Regions of magnetic support of a plasma around a black hole».
Phys. Rev. D, **17**, pp. 1518–1523 (1978).
- DARWIN, C.G.
«The Wave Equations of the Electron».
Royal Society of London Proceedings Series A, **118**, pp. 654–680 (1928).
- DE LA CRUZ, V. AND ISRAEL, W.
«Gravitational bounce».
Nuovo Cimento A Serie, **51**, pp. 744–760 (1967).
- DEACON, D.A.G., ELIAS, L.R., MADEY, J.M.J., RAMIAN, G.J.,
SCHWETTMAN, H.A. AND SMITH, T.I.
«First operation of a free-electron laser».
Physical Review Letters, **38**, pp. 892–894 (1977).
- DEBYE, P.
in discussion with Heisenberg (1934).
- DENARDO, G., HIVELY, L. AND RUFFINI, R.
«On the generalized ergosphere of the Kerr-Newman geometry».
Physics Letters B, **50**, pp. 270–272 (1974).
- DENARDO, G. AND RUFFINI, R.
«On the energetics of Reissner Nordstrom geometries.»
Physics Letters B, **45**, pp. 259–262 (1973).

- DERUELLE, N.
«Classical and quantum states in black hole physics.»
In *1st Marcel Grossmann Meeting on General Relativity*, pp. 483–498 (1977).
- DERUELLE, N. AND RUFFINI, R.
«Quantum and classical relativistic energy states in stationary geometries.»
Physics Letters B, **52**, pp. 437–441 (1974).
- DICUS, D.A.
«Stellar energy-loss rates in a convergent theory of weak and electromagnetic interactions.»
Phys. Rev. D, **6**, pp. 941–949 (1972).
- DIETZ, K., PORATH, R. AND RÖMER, H.
«Charge screening in supercritical Coulomb fields and a lower bound for electron energy levels.»
Nuclear Physics A, **560**, pp. 973–984 (1993).
- DIRAC, P.A.M.
«On the Theory of Quantum Mechanics.»
Royal Society of London Proceedings Series A, **112**, pp. 661–677 (1926).
- DIRAC, P.A.M.
«The Quantum Theory of the Electron.»
Royal Society of London Proceedings Series A, **117**, pp. 610–624 (1928).
- DIRAC, P.A.M.
«A Theory of Electrons and Protons.»
Royal Society of London Proceedings Series A, **126**, pp. 360–365 (1930a).
- DIRAC, P.A.M.
«Annihilation of electrons and protons.»
Proceedings of the Cambridge Philosophical Society, **26**, pp. 361–375 (1930b).
- DIRAC, P.A.M.
«Quantised Singularities in the Electromagnetic Field.»
Royal Society of London Proceedings Series A, **133**, pp. 60–72 (1931).
- DIRAC, P.A.M.
«Infinite distribution of electrons in the theory of the positron.»
Proceedings of the Cambridge Philosophical Society, **30**, pp. 150–163 (1934).
- DIRAC, P.A.M.
The principles of quantum mechanics (The International Series of Monographs on Physics, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1947, 1947).

- DUNNE, G. AND HALL, T.
«QED effective action in time dependent electric backgrounds».
Phys. Rev. D, **58(10)**, pp. 105022–+ (1998).
- DUNNE, G.V. AND SCHUBERT, C.
«Two-loop Euler-Heisenberg QED pair-production rate».
Nuclear Physics B, **564**, pp. 591–604 (2000).
- DUNNE, G.V. AND SCHUBERT, C.
«Worldline instantons and pair production in inhomogenous fields».
Phys. Rev. D, **72(10)**, pp. 105004–+ (2005).
- DUNNE, G.V. AND WANG, Q.H.
«Multidimensional worldline instantons».
Phys. Rev. D, **74(6)**, pp. 065015–+ (2006).
- DUNNE, G.V., WANG, Q.H., GIES, H. AND SCHUBERT, C.
«Worldline instantons and the fluctuation prefactor».
Phys. Rev. D, **73(6)**, pp. 065028–+ (2006).
- DUNNE, G.V.
«Heisenberg-Euler effective Lagrangians: Basics and extensions» (2004).
- DWEK, E. AND KRENNRICH, F.
«Simultaneous Constraints on the Spectrum of the Extragalactic Background Light and the Intrinsic TeV Spectra of Markarian 421, Markarian 501, and H1426+428».
ApJ, **618**, pp. 657–674 (2005).
- DYSON, F.
In *Communication at Science and Ultimate Reality, Symposium in honour of J. A. Wheeler, Princeton* (2002) (2002).
- DYSON, F.J.
«The Radiation Theories of Tomonaga, Schwinger, and Feynman».
Physical Review, **75**, pp. 486–502 (1949a).
- DYSON, F.J.
«The S Matrix in Quantum Electrodynamics».
Physical Review, **75**, pp. 1736–1755 (1949b).
- EBERLY, J.
Prog. Opt., **7** (1969).
- EDDINGTON, A.S.
Brit. Assoc. Repts., **45** (1920).

- EHLERS, J.
«Survey of general relativity theory».
In *Relativity, Astrophysics and Cosmology*, pp. 1–125 (1973).
- EINSTEIN, A. AND INFELD, L.
Evolution of Physics (Touchstone, 1967).
- EINSTEIN, A., INFELD, L. AND HOFFMANN, B.
«The gravitational equations and the problem of motion».
The Annals of Mathematics, **39(1)**, pp. 65–100 (1938).
ISSN 0003486X.
- EULER, H.
«Über die Streuung von Licht an Licht nach der Diracschen Theorie».
Annalen der Physik, **418**, pp. 398–448 (1936).
- EULER, H. AND KOCKEL, B.
«Über die Streuung von Licht an Licht nach der Diracschen Theorie».
Naturwissenschaften, **23**, pp. 246–247 (1935).
- FAZIO, G.G. AND STECKER, F.W.
«Predicted High Energy Break in the Isotropic Gamma Ray Spectrum: a Test of Cosmological Origin».
Nature, **226**, pp. 135–+ (1970).
- FEYNMAN, R.
Quantum Electrodynamics (Westview Press, 1998).
- FEYNMAN, R. AND HIBBS, A.
Quantum Mechanics and Path Integrals (McGraw-Hill Companies, 1965).
- FEYNMAN, R.P.
«Space-Time Approach to Non-Relativistic Quantum Mechanics».
Reviews of Modern Physics, **20**, pp. 367–387 (1948).
- FEYNMAN, R.P.
«Space-Time Approach to Quantum Electrodynamics».
Physical Review, **76**, pp. 769–789 (1949a).
- FEYNMAN, R.P.
«The Theory of Positrons».
Physical Review, **76**, pp. 749–759 (1949b).
- FIERZ, M.
«Zur anziehung leitender ebenen im vakuum».
Helvetica Physica Acta, **33**, pp. 855–858 (1960).

FOCK, V.

«Über die invariante Form der Wellen- und der Bewegungsgleichungen für einen geladenen Massenpunkt».

Zeitschrift für Physik, **39**, pp. 226–232 (1926).

FRADKIN, E., GITMAN, D. AND M., S.S.

Quantum Electrodynamics: With Unstable Vacuum (Springer, 1991).

FRASCHETTI, F., RUFFINI, R., VITAGLIANO, L. AND XUE, S.S.

«Theoretical predictions of spectral evolution of short GRBs».

Nuovo Cimento B Serie, **121**, pp. 1477–1478 (2006).

GAMOW, G.

Constitution of Atomic Nuclei And Radioactivity (Oxford University Press, 1931).

GAMOW, G. AND HOUTERMANS, F.G.

«Zur Quantenmechanik des radioaktiven Kerns».

Zeitschrift für Physik, **52**, pp. 496–509 (1929).

GANZ, R., BÄR, R., BALANDA, A., BAUMANN, J., BERG, W., BETHGE, K., BILLMEIER, A., BOKEMEYER, H., FEHLHABER, H., FOLGER, H. ET AL.

«Search for e^+e^- pairs with narrow sum-energy distributions in heavy-ion collisions».

Physics Letters B, **389**, pp. 4–12 (1996).

GATOFF, G., KERMAN, A.K. AND MATSUI, T.

«Flux-tube model for ultrarelativistic heavy-ion collisions: Electrohydrodynamics of a quark-gluon plasma».

Phys. Rev. D, **36**, pp. 114–129 (1987).

GERSHTEIN, S.S. AND POPOV, V.S.

Lett. Nuovo Cimento, **6**, p. 593 (1973).

GERSHTEIN, S.S. AND ZELDOVICH, Y.B.

Lett. Nuovo Cimento, **1**, p. 835 (1969).

GERSHTEIN, S.S. AND ZELDOVICH, Y.B.

«Positron Production during the Mutual Approach of Heavy Nuclei and the Polarization of the Vacuum».

Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **30**, pp. 358–+ (1969).

GIACCONI, R.

«Review of observations of compact sources».

In R. Giacconi and R. Ruffini (eds.), *Physics and Astrophysics of Neutron Stars and Black Holes*, pp. 17–42 (1978).

- GIACCONI, R.
«Nobel Lecture: The dawn of x-ray astronomy».
Reviews of Modern Physics, **75**, pp. 995–1010 (2003).
- GIBBONS, G.W.
«Vacuum polarization and the spontaneous loss of charge by black holes.»
Communications in Mathematical Physics, **44**, pp. 245–264 (1975).
- GIBBONS, G.W. AND HAWKING, S.W.
«Action integrals and partition functions in quantum gravity.»
Phys. Rev. D, **15**, pp. 2752–2756 (1977).
- GIES, H., JAECKEL, J. AND RINGWALD, A.
«Accelerator cavities as a probe of millicharged particles.»
Europhysics Letters, **76**, pp. 794–800 (2006).
- GIES, H. AND KLINGMÜLLER, K.
«Pair production in inhomogeneous fields.»
Phys. Rev. D, **72(6)**, pp. 065001–+ (2005).
- GIES, H. AND LANGFELD, K.
«Quantum diffusion of magnetic fields in a numerical worldline approach.»
Nuclear Physics B, **613**, pp. 353–365 (2001).
- GIES, H. AND LANGFELD, K.
«Loops and Loop Clouds - A Numerical Approach to the Worldline Formalism in QED.»
International Journal of Modern Physics A, **17**, pp. 966–976 (2002).
- GIES, H., LANGFELD, K. AND MOYAERTS, L.
«Casimir effect on the worldline.»
Journal of High Energy Physics, **6**, pp. 18–+ (2003).
- GOLDMAN, A.
Sov. Phys. JETP, **19** (1964a).
- GOLDMAN, I.
«Intensity effects in compton scattering.»
Physics Letters, **8**, pp. 103–106 (1964b).
- GOODMAN, J.
«Are gamma-ray bursts optically thick?»
ApJ, **308**, pp. L47–L50 (1986).
- GORDON, W.
«Der Comptoneffekt nach der Schrödingerschen Theorie.»
Zeitschrift für Physik, **40**, pp. 117–133 (1926).

GORDON, W.

«Die Energieniveaus des Wasserstoffatoms nach der Diracschen Quantentheorie des Elektrons».

Zeitschrift für Physik, **48**, pp. 11–14 (1928a).

GORDON, W.

«Über den Stoß zweier Punktladungen nach der Wellenmechanik».

Zeitschrift für Physik, **48**, pp. 180–191 (1928b).

GOULD, R.J.

«Thermal bremsstrahlung from high-temperature plasmas».

ApJ, **238**, pp. 1026–1033 (1980).

GOULD, R.J.

«Kinetic theory of relativistic plasmas».

Physics of Fluids, **24**, pp. 102–107 (1981).

GOULD, R.J.

«Processes in relativistic plasmas».

ApJ, **254**, pp. 755–766 (1982).

GOULD, R.J.

«The cross section for double Compton scattering».

ApJ, **285**, pp. 275–278 (1984).

GOULD, R.J. AND SCHRÉDER, G.P.

«Opacity of the Universe to High-Energy Photons».

Physical Review, **155**, pp. 1408–1411 (1967).

GRADSHTEYN, I.S. AND RYZHIK, I.M.

Table of integrals, series and products (New York: Academic Press, —c1994, 5th ed. completely reset, edited by Jeffrey, Alan, 1994).

GRAF, O., REINHARDT, J., MÜLLER, B., GREINER, W. AND SOFF, G.

«Angular correlations of coincident electron-positron pairs produced in heavy-ion collisions with nuclear time delay».

Physical Review Letters, **61**, pp. 2831–2834 (1988).

GREENBERG, J.S. AND GREINER, W.

«Search for the sparking of the vacuum».

Physics Today, **35**, pp. 24–35 (1982).

GREENBERG, J.

In *Proceedings of the 11th International Conference on the Physics of Electronic and Atomic Collisions* (North Holland, Amsterdam, 1980).

GREINER, W., MULLER, B. AND RAFELSKI, J.

Quantum Electrodynamics of Strong Fields (Berlin, Springer, 1985).

- GREINER, W. AND REINHARDT, J.
«Supercritical fields in heavy ion physics - a status report».
In P. Chen (ed.), *Quantum Aspects of Beam Physics*, pp. 438–463 (World Scientific, 1999).
Proceedings of the 15th Advanced ICFA Beam Dynamics Workshop on Quantum Aspects of Beam Physics, Monterey, California, 4-9 Jan 1998.
- GREINER, W. AND REINHARDT, J.
Quantum Electrodynamics (Berlin, Springer, 2003).
- GREINER, W. AND SCHRAMM, S.
«Resource Letter QEDV-1: The QED vacuum».
American Journal of Physics, **76**, pp. 509–518 (2008).
- GRIK, A., MAMAEV, S. AND MOSTEPANENKO, V.
Vacuum Quantum Effects in Strong External Fields (Moscow, Atomizdat, 1980).
- GRÜNEWALD, M.W.
«Experimental tests of the electroweak Standard Model at high energies».
Phys. Rep. , **322**, pp. 125–346 (1999).
- GUILBERT, P.W. AND STEPNEY, S.
«Pair production, Comptonization and dynamics in astrophysical plasmas».
MNRAS , **212**, pp. 523–544 (1985).
- GYULASSY, M.
«Vacuum Polarization in Heavy-Ion Collisions».
Physical Review Letters, **33**, pp. 921–925 (1974).
- GYULASSY, M.
«Higher order vacuum polarization for finite radius nuclei».
Nuclear Physics A, **244**, pp. 497–525 (1975).
- HABIB, S., KLUGER, Y., MOTTOLA, E. AND PAZ, J.P.
«Dissipation and Decoherence in Mean Field Theory».
Physical Review Letters, **76**, pp. 4660–4663 (1996).
- HALL, G. AND WATT, J.M.
Modern Numerical Methods for Ordinary Differential Equations (New York, Oxford University Press, 1976).
- HALPERN, J.P., THORSTENSEN, J.R., HELFAND, D.J. AND COSTA, E.
«Optical afterglow of the γ -ray burst of 14 December 1997».
Nature , **393**, pp. 41–43 (1998).

HALPERN, O.

«Scattering Processes Produced by Electrons in Negative Energy States». *Physical Review*, **44**, pp. 855–856 (1933).

HARRIS, B.W., CHEN, F. AND MOHIDEEN, U.

«Precision measurement of the Casimir force using gold surfaces». *Phys. Rev. A*, **62(5)**, pp. 052109–+ (2000).

HAUG, E.

«Electron-positron bremsstrahlung in mildly relativistic thermal plasmas». *A&A*, **148**, pp. 386–390 (1985).

HAUG, E.

«Energy loss and mean free path of electrons in a hot thermal plasma». *A&A*, **191**, pp. 181–185 (1988).

HAUSER, M.G. AND DWEK, E.

«The Cosmic Infrared Background: Measurements and Implications». *ARA&A*, **39**, pp. 249–307 (2001).

HAWKING, S.W.

«Black hole explosions?». *Nature*, **248**, pp. 30–+ (1974).

HAWKING, S.W.

«Particle creation by black holes». *Communications in Mathematical Physics*, **43**, pp. 199–220 (1975).

HEINZ, S., BERDERMANN, E., HEINE, F., JOERES, O., KIENLE, P., KOENIG, I., KOENIG, W., KOZHUHAROV, C., LEINBERGER, U., RHEIN, M. ET AL.

«Weak e^+e^- lines from internal pair conversion observed in collisions of ^{238}U with heavy nuclei». *European Physical Journal A*, **1**, pp. 27–37 (1998).

HEISENBERG, W.

«Bemerkungen zur Diracschen Theorie des Positrons». *Zeitschrift für Physik*, **90**, pp. 209–231 (1934).

HEISENBERG, W. AND EULER, H.

«Folgerungen aus der Diracschen Theorie des Positrons». *Zeitschrift für Physik*, **98**, pp. 714–732 (1936).

HEITLER, W.

Quantum theory of radiation (International Series of Monographs on Physics, Oxford: Clarendon, 1954, 3rd ed., 1954).

- HOFFMANN, B.
«Gravitational and Electromagnetic Mass in the Born-Infeld Electrodynamics».
Physical Review, **47**, pp. 877–880 (1935).
- HOFFMANN, B. AND INFELD, L.
«On the Choice of the Action Function in the New Field Theory».
Physical Review, **51**, pp. 765–773 (1937).
- HØYE, J.S., BREVIK, I. AND AARSETH, J.B.
«Casimir problem of spherical dielectrics: Quantum statistical and field theoretical approaches».
Phys. Rev. E, **63(5)**, pp. 051101–+ (2001).
- ISRAEL, W.
«Singular hypersurfaces and thin shells in general relativity».
Nuovo Cimento B Serie, **44**, pp. 1–14 (1966).
- ITZYKSON, C. AND ZUBER, J.B.
Quantum Field Theory (Dover Publications, 2006).
- IWAMOTO, S. AND TAKAHARA, F.
«Wien Fireball Model of Relativistic Outflows in Active Galactic Nuclei».
ApJ, **601**, pp. 78–89 (2004).
- KAPLAN, S.A.
«On circular orbits in Einstein's Gravitation Theory».
Zhurnal Eksperimental'noi i Teoreticheskoi Fiziki, **19**, pp. 951–952 (1949).
- KELDYSH, L.
Zh. Eksp. Teor. Fiz., **47**, p. 1515 (1964).
- KERMAN, A.K., MATSUI, T. AND SVETITSKY, B.
«Particle production in the central rapidity region of ultrarelativistic nuclear collisions».
Physical Review Letters, **56**, pp. 219–222 (1986).
- KHRIPLOVICH, I.B.
«Charged-particle creation by charged black holes».
Nuovo Cimento B Serie, **115**, pp. 761–+ (2000).
- KIENLE, P.
Atomic Physics 7 (Plenum Press, 1981).
- KIENLE, P., H., B. AND BOKEMEYER, H.
Quantum electrodynamics of strong fields, volume 80 of *NATO Advanced Study Institute, Series B: Physics* (Plenum Press, 1983).

Proceedings of the conference NATO Advanced Study Institute on Quantum Electrodynamics of Strong Fields, Lahnstein, Germany, Jun 15-26, 1981.

KIM, S.P. AND PAGE, D.N.

«Schwinger pair production via instantons in strong electric fields».
Phys. Rev. D, **65(10)**, pp. 105002–+ (2002).

KIM, S.P. AND PAGE, D.N.

«Schwinger pair production in electric and magnetic fields».
Phys. Rev. D, **73(6)**, pp. 065020–+ (2006).

KIM, S.P. AND PAGE, D.N.

«Improved approximations for fermion pair production in inhomogeneous electric fields».
Phys. Rev. D, **75(4)**, pp. 045013–+ (2007).

KLEIN, O.

«Quantentheorie und fünfdimensionale Relativitätstheorie».
Zeitschrift für Physik, **37**, pp. 895–906 (1926).

KLEIN, O.

«Die Reflexion von Elektronen an einem Potentialsprung nach der relativistischen Dynamik von Dirac».
Zeitschrift für Physik, **53**, pp. 157–165 (1929).

KLEIN, O. AND NISHINA, T.

«Über die Streuung von Strahlung durch freie Elektronen nach der neuen relativistischen Quantendynamik von Dirac».
Zeitschrift für Physik, **52**, pp. 853–868 (1929).

KLEINERT, H.

Gauge Fields in Condensed Matter (World Scientific, 1990).

KLEINERT, H.

Path integrals in quantum mechanics, statistics polymer physics, and financial markets (World Scientific, 2004).

KLEINERT, H.

«Particles and quantum fields» (2008).

KLEINERT, H., RUFFINI, R. AND XUE, S.S.

«Electron-positron pair production in space- or time-dependent electric fields».
Physical Review D (Particles, Fields, Gravitation, and Cosmology), **78(2)**, 025011 (2008).

- KLEMPERER, O.
«The annihilation radiation of the positron».
Proceedings of the Cambridge Philosophical Society, **30**, pp. 347–354 (1934).
- KLUGER, Y., EISENBERG, J.M. AND SVETITSKY, B.
«Pair Production in a Strong Electric Field: AN Initial Value Problem in Quantum Field Theory».
International Journal of Modern Physics E, **2**, pp. 333–380 (1993).
- KLUGER, Y., EISENBERG, J.M., SVETITSKY, B., COOPER, F. AND MOTTOLA, E.
«Pair production in a strong electric field».
Physical Review Letters, **67**, pp. 2427–2430 (1991).
- KLUGER, Y., EISENBERG, J.M., SVETITSKY, B., COOPER, F. AND MOTTOLA, E.
«Fermion pair production in a strong electric field».
Phys. Rev. D, **45**, pp. 4659–4671 (1992).
- KLUGER, Y., MOTTOLA, E. AND EISENBERG, J.M.
«Quantum Vlasov equation and its Markov limit».
Phys. Rev. D, **58(12)**, pp. 125015–+ (1998).
- KNEISKE, T.M., BRETZ, T., MANNHEIM, K. AND HARTMANN, D.H.
«Implications of cosmological gamma-ray absorption. II. Modification of gamma-ray spectra».
A&A, **413**, pp. 807–815 (2004).
- KNEISKE, T.M., MANNHEIM, K. AND HARTMANN, D.H.
«Implications of cosmological gamma-ray absorption. I. Evolution of the metagalactic radiation field».
A&A, **386**, pp. 1–11 (2002).
- KOERS, H.B.J. AND WIJERS, R.A.M.J.
«The effect of neutrinos on the initial fireballs in gamma-ray bursts».
MNRAS, **364**, pp. 934–942 (2005).
- KOLB, E.W. AND TURNER, M.S.
The Early Universe (Frontiers in Physics, Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley, 1990).
- KOTSEROGLOU, T., BAMBER, C., BOEGE, S., MELISSINOS, A.C., MEYER-HOFER, D.D., RAGG, W., BULA, C., McDONALD, K.T., PREBYS, E.J., BERNSTEIN, D. ET AL.
«Picosecond timing of terawatt laser pulses with the SLAC 46 GeV electron beam».

Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Research A, **383**, pp. 309–317 (1996).

KOZHUHAROV, C.

«12th International Conference on the Physics of Electronic and Atomic Collisions».

In S. Datz (ed.), *Physics of Electronic and Atomic Collisions: ICPEAC XII*, p. 179 (1982).

KOZHUHAROV, C., KIENLE, P., BERDERMANN, E., BOKEMEYER, H., GREENBERG, J.S., NAKAYAMA, Y., VINCENT, P., BACKE, H., HANDSCHUG, L. AND KANKELEIT, E.

«Positrons from 1.4-GeV Uranium-Atom Collisions».

Physical Review Letters, **42**, pp. 376–379 (1979).

KREKORA, P., COOLEY, K., SU, Q. AND GROBE, R.

«Creation Dynamics of Bound States in Supercritical Fields».

Physical Review Letters, **95**(7), pp. 070403–+ (2005).

KULKARNI, S.R., DJORGOVSKI, S.G., RAMAPRAKASH, A.N., GOODRICH, R., BLOOM, J.S., ADELBERGER, K.L., KUNDIC, T., LUBIN, L., FRAIL, D.A., FRONTERA, F. ET AL.

«Identification of a host galaxy at redshift $z = 3.42$ for the γ -ray burst of 14 December 1997».

Nature, **393**, pp. 35–39 (1998).

LAMB, W.E. AND RETHERFORD, R.C.

«Fine Structure of the Hydrogen Atom by a Microwave Method».

Physical Review, **72**, pp. 241–243 (1947).

LAMOREAUX, S.K.

«Demonstration of the Casimir Force in the 0.6 to 6 μm Range».

Physical Review Letters, **78**, pp. 5–8 (1997).

LANDAU, L.D. AND LIFSHITZ, E.M.

Electrodynamics of continuous media (Energy Conversion Management, 1960).

LANDAU, L.D. AND LIFSHITZ, E.M.

The classical theory of fields (Course of theoretical physics - Pergamon International Library of Science, Technology, Engineering and Social Studies, Oxford: Pergamon Press, 1975, 4th rev.engl.ed., 1975).

LANDAU, L.D. AND LIFSHITZ, E.M.

Non-Relativistic Quantum Mechanics (Elsevier, 1981a).

- LANDAU, L.D. AND LIFSHITZ, E.M.
Physical Kinetics (Elsevier, 1981b).
- LANDAU, L.
«On the multiple production of particles in high energy collisions».
Izv. Akad. Nauk SSSR Ser. Fiz., **17**, p. 51 (1953).
- LANGFELD, K., MOYAERTS, L. AND GIES, H.
«Fermion-induced quantum action of vortex systems».
Nuclear Physics B, **646**, pp. 158–180 (2002).
- LAUTRUP, B.E., PETERMAN, A. AND DE RAFAEL, E.
«Recent developments in the comparison between theory and experiments in quantum electrodynamics».
Phys. Rep., **3**, pp. 193–259 (1972).
- LEE, T.D.
Particle Physics and Introduction to Field Theory (Harwood Academic Publishers, 1990).
- LEINBERGER, U., BERDERMANN, E., HEINE, F., HEINZ, S., JOERES, O., KIENTLE, P., KOENIG, I., KOENIG, W., KOZHUHAROV, C., RHEIN, M. ET AL.
«New results on e^+e^- -line emission in U+Ta collisions».
Physics Letters B, **394**, pp. 16–22 (1997).
- LIGHTMAN, A.P.
«Double Compton emission in radiation dominated thermal plasmas».
ApJ, **244**, pp. 392–405 (1981).
- LIGHTMAN, A.P.
«Relativistic thermal plasmas - Pair processes and equilibria».
ApJ, **253**, pp. 842–858 (1982).
- LIGHTMAN, A.P. AND BAND, D.L.
«Relativistic thermal plasmas - Radiation mechanisms».
ApJ, **251**, pp. 713–726 (1981).
- LINDAU, I., CORNACCHIA, M. AND ARTHUR, J.
«The stanford xfel project - lcls» (1999).
- LOW, F.E.
«Model of the bare Pomeron».
Phys. Rev. D, **12**, pp. 163–173 (1975).
- MACMINN, D. AND PRIMACK, J.R.

- «Probing the ERA of Galaxy Formation via TeV Gamma-Ray Absorption by the Near Infrared Extragalactic Background».
Space Science Reviews, **75**, pp. 413–422 (1996).
- MARINOV, M.S. AND POPOV, V.S.
«Effect of Screening on the Critical Charge of a Nucleus».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics Letters, **17**, pp. 368–+ (1973).
- MARINOV, M.S. AND POPOV, V.S.
«Electron-positron pair creation from vacuum induced by variable electric field».
Fortschritte der Physik, **25**, pp. 373–400 (1977).
- MARTIN, C. AND VAUTHERIN, D.
«Finite-size effects in pair production by an external field».
Phys. Rev. D, **38**, pp. 3593–3595 (1988).
- MARTIN, C. AND VAUTHERIN, D.
«Finite-size and dynamical effects in pair production by an external field».
Phys. Rev. D, **40**, pp. 1667–1673 (1989).
- MATERLIK, G. AND TSCHENTSCHER, T.
«Tesla technical design report. part v. the x-ray free electron laser» (????).
- MATERLIK, G. AND WROBLEWSKI, T.
«The tesla x-ray free electron laser project at desy» (1999).
- MEDVEDEV, B.V. AND SHIRKOV, D.V.
«P. a. m. dirac and the formation of the basic ideas of quantum field theory».
Soviet Physics Uspekhi, **30(9)**, pp. 791–815 (1987).
- MELISSINOS, A.C.
«The spontaneous breakdown of the vacuum».
pp. 564–570 (1999).
Proceedings of the 15th Advanced ICFA Beam Dynamics Workshop on Quantum Aspects of Beam Physics, Monterey, California, 4-9 Jan 1998.
- MESZAROS, P.
«Gamma-ray bursts.»
Reports of Progress in Physics, **69**, pp. 2259–2322 (2006).
- MEZZACAPPA, A.
Open Issues in Core Collapse Supernova Theory, chapter An Overview, pp. 3–29 (World Scientific, 2006).

- MIE, G.
«Grundlagen einer Theorie der Materie».
Annalen der Physik, **344**, pp. 1–40 (1912a).
- MIE, G.
«Grundlagen einer Theorie der Materie».
Annalen der Physik, **342**, pp. 511–534 (1912b).
- MIE, G.
«Grundlagen einer Theorie der Materie».
Annalen der Physik, **345**, pp. 1–66 (1913).
- MIGDAL, A., PERELOMOV, A. AND POPOV, V.
«Analytical properties of wave functions at low energy».
Yadernaya Fizika, **14**, pp. 874–885 (1971).
- MIHALAS, D. AND MIHALAS, B.W.
Foundations of Radiation Hydrodynamics (New York, Oxford University Press, 1984).
- MILLER, A.I.
Early Quantum Electrodynamics (Early Quantum Electrodynamics, Edited by Arthur I. Miller, pp. 285. ISBN 0521568919. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press, October 1995., 1995).
- MILLER-JONES, J.C.A., FENDER, R.P. AND NAKAR, E.
«Opening angles, Lorentz factors and confinement of X-ray binary jets».
MNRAS, **367**, pp. 1432–1440 (2006).
- MILSTEIN, A.I., MÜLLER, C., HATSAGORTSYAN, K.Z., JENTSCHURA, U.D. AND KEITEL, C.H.
«Polarization-operator approach to electron-positron pair production in combined laser and Coulomb fields».
Phys. Rev. A, **73(6)**, pp. 062106–+ (2006).
- MILTON, K.A.
«TOPICAL REVIEW: The Casimir effect: recent controversies and progress».
Journal of Physics A Mathematical General, **37**, pp. 209–+ (2004).
- MILTON, K.
The Casimir Effect (World Scientific Publishing Company, 2001).
- MISIASZEK, M., ODRZYWOŁEK, A. AND KUTSCHERA, M.
«Neutrino spectrum from the pair-annihilation process in the hot stellar plasma».
Phys. Rev. D, **74(4)**, pp. 043006–+ (2006).

- MISNER, C.W., THORNE, K.S. AND WHEELER, J.A.
 Gravitation (San Francisco: W.H. Freeman and Co., 1973, 1973).
- MOHIDEEN, U. AND ROY, A.
 «Precision Measurement of the Casimir Force from 0.1 to 0.9 μm ».
 Physical Review Letters, **81**, pp. 4549–4552 (1998).
- MOSTEPANENKO, V.M. AND FROLOV, V.M.
 «Particle creation from vacuum by homogeneous electric field with a periodical time dependence».
 Yad. Fiz., **19**, pp. 885–896 (1974).
- MOUROU, G.A., BARTY, C.P.J. AND PERRY, M.D.
 «Ultrahigh-intensity lasers: Physics of the extreme on a tabletop».
 Physics Today, **51**, pp. 22–28 (1998).
- MOUROU, G.A., TAJIMA, T. AND BULANOV, S.V.
 «Optics in the relativistic regime».
 Reviews of Modern Physics, **78**, pp. 309–371 (2006).
- MULLER, B.
 «Positron Creation in Superheavy Quasi-Molecules».
 Annual Review of Nuclear and Particle Science, **26**, pp. 351–383 (1976).
- MÜLLER, B., PEITZ, H., RAFELSKI, J. AND GREINER, W.
 «Solution of the Dirac Equation for Strong External Fields».
 Physical Review Letters, **28**, pp. 1235–1238 (1972a).
- MÜLLER, B., RAFELSKI, J. AND GREINER, W.
 «Auto-ionization of positrons in heavy ion collisions».
 Zeitschrift für Physik, **257**, pp. 183–211 (1972b).
- MÜLLER, B., RAFELSKI, J. AND GREINER, W.
 «Electron shells in over-critical external fields».
 Zeitschrift für Physik, **257**, pp. 62–77 (1972c).
- MÜLLER, U., REINHARDT, J., DE REUS, T., SCHLÜTER, P., SOFF, G., WITTSCHORKE, K. AND MÜLLER, B.
 Quantum electrodynamics of strong fields, volume 80 of *NATO Advanced Study Institute, Series B: Physics* (Plenum Press, 1983).
 Proceedings of the conference NATO Advanced Study Institute on Quantum Electrodynamics of Strong Fields, Lahnstein, Germany, Jun 15-26, 1981.
- MURAYAMA, H. AND PESKIN, M.E.
 «Physics Opportunities of ee Linear Colliders».
 Annual Review of Nuclear and Particle Science, **46**, pp. 533–608 (1996).

- NAGANO, M. AND WATSON, A.A.
«Observations and implications of the ultrahigh-energy cosmic rays».
Reviews of Modern Physics, **72**, pp. 689–732 (2000).
- NAROZHNY, N.B., BULANOV, S.S., MUR, V.D. AND POPOV, V.S.
« e^+e^- -pair production by a focused laser pulse in vacuum».
Physics Letters A, **330**, pp. 1–2 (2004).
- NAROZHNY, N.B. AND FOFANOV, M.S.
«Scattering of Relativistic Electrons by a Focused Laser Pulse».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **90**, pp. 753–768 (2000).
- NAROZHNYI, N.B. AND NIKISHOV, A.I.
«The Simplist processes in the pair creating electric field».
Yad. Fiz., **11**, p. 1072 (1970).
- NAROZHNYĬ, N.B. AND NIKISHOV, A.I.
«Pair production by a periodic electric field».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **38**, pp. 427–+ (1974).
- NEWMAN, E.T., COUCH, E., CHINNAPARED, K., EXTON, A., PRAKASH, A.
AND TORRENCE, R.
«Metric of a Rotating, Charged Mass».
Journal of Mathematical Physics, **6**, pp. 918–919 (1965).
- NIKISHOV, A.I.
«Absorption of high-energy photons in the universe».
Zhurnal Eksperimental'noi i Teoreticheskoi Fiziki, **41**, pp. 549–550 (1961).
- NIKISHOV, A.I.
JETP, **30**, pp. 660–+ (1969).
- NIKISHOV, A.I. AND RITUS, V.I.
Sov. Phys. JETP, **19**, p. 529 (1964a).
- NIKISHOV, A.I. AND RITUS, V.I.
Sov. Phys. JETP, **19**, p. 1191 (1964b).
- NIKISHOV, A.I. AND RITUS, V.I.
Sov. Phys. JETP, **20**, p. 757 (1965a).
- NIKISHOV, A.I. AND RITUS, V.I.
Sov. Phys. JETP, **20**, p. 622 (1965b).
- NIKISHOV, A.I. AND RITUS, V.I.
«Pair Production by a Photon and Photon Emission by an Electron in the Field of an Intense Electromagnetic Wave and in a Constant Field».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **25**, pp. 1135–+ (1967).

NIKISHOV, A.I. AND RITUS, V.I.

Proc. (Tr.) P. N. Lebedev Phys. Inst. Acad. Sci. USSR, **111** (1979).

NIKISHOV, A.

Sov. Phys. JETP, **14**, p. 393 (1962).

NUHN, H.D. AND PELLEGRINI, C.

«Proceedings of the x-ray fel theory and simulation codes workshop» (2000).

NUSSINOV, S.

«Colored-Quark Version of Some Hadronic Puzzles».

Physical Review Letters, **34**, pp. 1286–1289 (1975).

OCHELKOV, I.P., PRILUTSKII, O.F., ROZENTAL, I.L. AND USOV, V.V.

Relativistic kinetics and hydrodynamics (Moscow, Atomizdat, 1979).

OPPENHEIMER, J.R. AND SNYDER, H.

«On Continued Gravitational Contraction».

Physical Review, **56**, pp. 455–459 (1939).

PAULI, W.

Theory of Relativity (Dover Publications, 1981).

PENROSE, R.

«Gravitational Collapse: the Role of General Relativity».

Nuovo Cimento Rivista Serie, **1**, pp. 252–+ (1969).

PENROSE, R. AND FLOYD, G.R.

«Black holes-Extraction of rotational energy».

Nature, **229**, pp. 177–+ (1971).

PERELOMOV, A.M. AND POPOV, V.S.

Zh. Eksp. Teor. Fiz., **61**, p. 1743 (1971).

PERRIN, J.B.

Rev. du Mois, **21**, p. 113 (1920).

PERRY, M.D. AND MOUROU, G.

«Terawatt to Petawatt Subpicosecond Lasers».

Science, **264**, pp. 917–924 (1994).

PIEPER, W. AND GREINER, W.

«Interior electron shells in superheavy nuclei».

Zeitschrift fur Physik, **218**, pp. 327–340 (1969).

- PILLA, R.P. AND SHAHAM, J.
«Kinetics of Electron-Positron Pair Plasmas Using an Adaptive Monte Carlo Method».
ApJ, **486**, pp. 903–+ (1997).
- PIRAN, T.
«Gamma-ray bursts and the fireball model».
Phys. Rep., **314**, pp. 575–667 (1999).
- PIRAN, T.
«The physics of gamma-ray bursts».
Reviews of Modern Physics, **76**, pp. 1143–1210 (2005).
- POMERANCHUK, I.Y. AND SMORODINSKII, Y.
«Energy levels of systems with z greater than 137».
Journal of Physics (USSR), **9**, pp. 97–100 (1945).
- POPOV, V.S.
«Collapse to the center at $z \gtrsim 137$ and critical nuclear charge».
Yadernaya Fizika, **12**, pp. 429–447 (1970a).
- POPOV, V.S.
«Electron Energy Levels at $Z \gtrsim 137$ ».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics Letters, **11**, pp. 162–+ (1970b).
- POPOV, V.S.
«On the Properties of the Discrete Spectrum for Z Close to 137».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **33**, pp. 665–+ (1971a).
- POPOV, V.S.
«Position Production in a Coulomb Field with $Z \gtrsim 137$ ».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **32**, pp. 526–+ (1971b).
- POPOV, V.S.
«Production of e^+e^- Pairs in an Alternating External Field».
ZhETF Pis ma Redaktsiiu, **13**, pp. 261–+ (1971c).
- POPOV, V.S.
«Pair Production in a Variable and Homogeneous Electric Field as an Oscillator Problem».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **35**, pp. 659–+ (1972a).
- POPOV, V.S.
«Pair Production in a Variable External Field (Quasiclassical Approximation)».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **34**, pp. 709–+ (1972b).

POPOV, V.S.

«Resonant pair production in a strong electric field».
ZhETF Pis ma Redaktsiiu, **18**, pp. 435–+ (1973a).

POPOV, V.S.

«Spontaneous positron production in collisions between heavy nuclei».
Zhurnal Eksperimental'noi i Teoreticheskoi Fiziki, **65**, pp. 35–53 (1973b).

POPOV, V.S.

«Critical Charge in Quantum Electrodynamics».
Physics of Atomic Nuclei, **64**, pp. 367–392 (2001a).

POPOV, V.S.

«Schwinger Mechanism of Electron-Positron Pair Production by the Field of Optical and X-ray Lasers in Vacuum».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics Letters, **74**, pp. 133–138 (2001b).

POPOV, V.

Yad. Fiz., **14**, p. 458 (1971d).

POPOV, V.

«Method of imaginary time for periodical fields».
Yadernaya Fizika, **19**, pp. 1140–1156 (1974).

PREPARATA, G., RUFFINI, R. AND XUE, S.

«On the Dyadosphere of Black Holes».
J. of Korean Phys. Soc., **42**, pp. S99–S105 (2003).

PREPARATA, G., RUFFINI, R. AND XUE, S.S.

«The dyadosphere of black holes and gamma-ray bursts».
A&A, **338**, pp. L87–L90 (1998).

PRICE, R.H. AND THORNE, K.S.

The membrane paradigm, pp. 1–12 (Black Holes: The Membrane Paradigm, 1986).

RAFELSKI, J., FULCHER, L.P. AND KLEIN, A.

«Fermions and bosons interacting with arbitrarily strong external fields».
Phys. Rep., **38**, pp. 227–361 (1978a).

RAFELSKI, J., MÜLLER, B. AND GREINER, W.

«Spontaneous vacuum decay of supercritical nuclear composites».
Zeitschrift fur Physik, **285**, pp. 49–52 (1978b).

RAMAPRAKASH, A.N., KULKARNI, S.R., FRAIL, D.A., KORESKO, C., KUCHNER, M., GOODRICH, R., NEUGEBAUER, G., MURPHY, T., EIKENBERRY, S., BLOOM, J.S. ET AL.

- «The energetic afterglow of the γ -ray burst of 14 December 1997».
Nature, **393**, pp. 43–46 (1998).
- REES, M., RUFFINI, R. AND WHEELER, J.A.
Black holes, gravitational waves and cosmology: an introduction to current research (New York, Gordon and Breach, Science Publishers, Inc. (Topics in Astrophysics and Space Physics. Volume 10), 1974. 182 p., 1974).
- REINHARDT, J. AND GREINER, W.
«REVIEW: Quantum electrodynamics of strong fields».
Reports on Progress in Physics, **40**, pp. 219–295 (1977).
- REINHARDT, J., MÜLLER, U., MÜLLER, B. AND GREINER, W.
«The decay of the vacuum in the field of superheavy nuclear systems».
Zeitschrift für Physik, **303**, pp. 173–188 (1981).
- REISS, H.R.
«Absorption of Light by Light».
Journal of Mathematical Physics, **3**, pp. 59–67 (1962).
- REISS, H.R.
«Production of Electron Pairs from a Zero-Mass State».
Physical Review Letters, **26**, pp. 1072–1075 (1971).
- RHOADES, C.E. AND RUFFINI, R.
«Maximum mass of a neutron star.»
Physical Review Letters, **32**, pp. 324–327 (1974).
- RINGWALD, A.
«Fundamental physics at an X-ray free electron laser».
ArXiv High Energy Physics - Phenomenology e-prints (2001a).
- RINGWALD, A.
«Pair production from vacuum at the focus of an X-ray free electron laser».
Physics Letters B, **510**, pp. 107–116 (2001b).
- RINGWALD, A.
«Boiling the Vacuum with an X-Ray Free Electron Laser».
ArXiv High Energy Physics - Phenomenology e-prints (2003).
- RINKER, JR., G.A. AND WILETS, L.
«Vacuum polarization in strong, realistic electric fields».
Phys. Rev. A, **12**, pp. 748–762 (1975).
- ROBERTS, C.D., SCHMIDT, S.M. AND VINNIK, D.V.
«Quantum Effects with an X-Ray Free-Electron Laser».
Physical Review Letters, **89(15)**, pp. 153901–+ (2002).

RUFFINI, R.

«On the energetics of black holes.»

In C. DeWitt and B. DeWitt (eds.), *Black Holes (Les Astres Occlus)*, pp. 451–546 (Gordon and Breach, 1973).

RUFFINI, R.

«Physics outside the horizon of a black hole».

In R. Giacconi and R. Ruffini (eds.), *Physics and Astrophysics of Neutron Stars and Black Holes*, pp. 287–355 (1978).

RUFFINI, R.

«Beyond the Critical Mass: The Dyadosphere of Black Holes».

In H. Sato and N. Sugiyama (eds.), *Frontiers Science Series 23: Black Holes and High Energy Astrophysics*, pp. 167–+ (1998).

RUFFINI, R.

The Kerr Spacetime: Rotating Black Holes in General Relativity, chapter The ergosphere and dyadosphere of the Kerr black hole, p. 161 (Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, 2009).

RUFFINI, R., BERNARDINI, M.G., BIANCO, C.L., CAITO, L., CHARDONNET, P., DAINOTTI, M.G., FRASCHETTI, F., GUIDA, R., ROTONDO, M., VERESHCHAGIN, G. ET AL.

«The Blackholic energy and the canonical Gamma-Ray Burst».

In *American Institute of Physics Conference Series*, volume 910 of *American Institute of Physics Conference Series*, pp. 55–217 (2007a).

RUFFINI, R., BIANCO, C.L., CHARDONNET, P., FRASCHETTI, F., VITAGLIANO, L. AND XUE, S.

«New perspectives in physics and astrophysics from the theoretical understanding of Gamma-Ray Bursts».

In *AIP Conf. Proc. 668: Cosmology and Gravitation*, pp. 16–107 (2003a).

RUFFINI, R., BIANCO, C.L., FRASCHETTI, F., XUE, S.S. AND CHARDONNET, P.

«On a Possible Gamma-Ray Burst-Supernova Time Sequence».

ApJ , **555**, pp. L117–L120 (2001a).

RUFFINI, R., BIANCO, C.L., FRASCHETTI, F., XUE, S.S. AND CHARDONNET, P.

«On the Interpretation of the Burst Structure of Gamma-Ray Bursts».

ApJ , **555**, pp. L113–L116 (2001b).

RUFFINI, R., BIANCO, C.L., FRASCHETTI, F., XUE, S.S. AND CHARDONNET, P.

«Relative Spacetime Transformations in Gamma-Ray Bursts».

ApJ , **555**, pp. L107–L111 (2001c).

- RUFFINI, R., BIANCO, C.L., FRASCHETTI, P.C.F. AND XUE, S.S.
«On the physical processes which lie at the bases of time variability of GRBs».
Nuovo Cimento B Serie, **116**, pp. 99–+ (2001d).
- RUFFINI, R., FRASCHETTI, F., VITAGLIANO, L. AND XUE, S.S.
«Observational Signatures of AN Electromagnetic Overcritical Gravitational Collapse».
International Journal of Modern Physics D, **14**, pp. 131–141 (2005).
- RUFFINI, R., SALMONSON, J.D., WILSON, J.R. AND XUE, S.S.
«On the pair electromagnetic pulse of a black hole with electromagnetic structure».
A&A, **350**, pp. 334–343 (1999).
- RUFFINI, R., SALMONSON, J.D., WILSON, J.R. AND XUE, S.S.
«On the pair-electromagnetic pulse from an electromagnetic black hole surrounded by a baryonic remnant».
A&A, **359**, pp. 855–864 (2000).
- RUFFINI, R., VERESHCHAGIN, G.V. AND XUE, S.S.
«Vacuum polarization and plasma oscillations».
Phys. Lett. A, **371**, pp. 399–405 (2007b).
- RUFFINI, R., VERESHCHAGIN, G. AND XUE, S.S.
«The breit-wheeler cutoff in high-energy γ -rays».
to be published (2008).
- RUFFINI, R. AND VITAGLIANO, L.
«Irreducible mass and energetics of an electromagnetic black hole».
Physics Letters B, **545**, pp. 233–237 (2002).
- RUFFINI, R. AND VITAGLIANO, L.
«Energy Extraction from Gravitational Collapse to Static Black Holes».
International Journal of Modern Physics D, **12**, pp. 121–127 (2003).
- RUFFINI, R., VITAGLIANO, L. AND XUE, S.S.
«On a separatrix in the gravitational collapse to an overcritical electromagnetic black hole».
Physics Letters B, **573**, pp. 33–38 (2003b).
- RUFFINI, R., VITAGLIANO, L. AND XUE, S.S.
«On plasma oscillations in strong electric fields».
Phys. Lett. B, **559**, pp. 12–19 (2003c).
- RUFFINI, R. AND WHEELER, J.A.
«Introducing the black hole.»
Physics Today, **24**, pp. 30–36 (1971a).

RUFFINI, R. AND WHEELER, J.A.

«Relativistic cosmology and space platforms.»

ESRO, SP, No. 52, p. 45 - 174, 52, pp. 45–174 (1971b).

RUFFINI, R. AND WILSON, J.R.

«Relativistic magnetohydrodynamical effects of plasma accreting into a black hole».

Phys. Rev. D, 12, pp. 2959–2962 (1975).

RUFFINI, R. AND XUE, S.

J. of Korean Phys. Soc. , 49, p. 715 (2006).

SAUTER, F.

«Über das Verhalten eines Elektrons im homogenen elektrischen Feld nach der relativistischen Theorie Diracs».

Zeitschrift fur Physik, 69, pp. 742–764 (1931a).

SAUTER, F.

«Zum "Kleinschen Paradoxon".»

Zeitschrift fur Physik, 73, pp. 547–+ (1931b).

SCHMIDT, S., BLASCHKE, D., RÖPKE, G., PROZORKEVICH, A.V., SMOLYANSKY, S.A. AND TONEEV, V.D.

«Non-Markovian effects in strong-field pair creation».

Phys. Rev. D, 59(9), pp. 094005–+ (1999).

SCHMIDT, S., BLASCHKE, D., RÖPKE, G., SMOLYANSKY, S.A., PROZORKEVICH, A.V. AND TONEEV, V.D.

«A Quantum Kinetic Equation for Particle Production in the Schwinger Mechanism».

International Journal of Modern Physics E, 7, pp. 709–722 (1998).

SCHRÖDINGER, E.

«Quantisierung als Eigenwertproblem».

Annalen der Physik, 386, pp. 109–139 (1926).

SCHUBERT, C.

«Perturbative quantum field theory in the string-inspired formalism».

Phys. Rep. , 355, pp. 73–234 (2001).

SCHWEPPE, J., GRUPPE, A., BETHGE, K., BOKEMEYER, H., COWAN, T., FOLGER, H., GREENBERG, J.S., GREIN, H., ITO, S., SCHULE, R. ET AL.

«Observation of a peak structure in positron spectra from u+cm collisions».

Phys. Rev. Lett., 51(25), pp. 2261–2264 (1983).

- SCHWINGER, J.
«On Quantum-Electrodynamics and the Magnetic Moment of the Electron».
Physical Review, **73**, pp. 416–417 (1948a).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Quantum Electrodynamics. I. A Covariant Formulation».
Physical Review, **74**, pp. 1439–1461 (1948b).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Quantum Electrodynamics. II. Vacuum Polarization and Self-Energy».
Physical Review, **75**, pp. 651–679 (1949a).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Quantum Electrodynamics. III. The Electromagnetic Properties of the Electron-Radiative Corrections to Scattering».
Physical Review, **76**, pp. 790–817 (1949b).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«On Gauge Invariance and Vacuum Polarization».
Physical Review, **82**, pp. 664–679 (1951).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«The Theory of Quantized Fields. V».
Physical Review, **93**, pp. 615–628 (1954a).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«The Theory of Quantized Fields. VI».
Physical Review, **94**, pp. 1362–1384 (1954b).
- SCHWINGER, J.
Selected Papers on Quantum Electrodynamics (Dover Publications, 1958).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Brownian Motion of a Quantum Oscillator».
Journal of Mathematical Physics, **2**, pp. 407–432 (1961).
- SCHWINGER, J.
Particles Sources and Fields (ADDISON WESLEY, 1970).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Casimir Energy for Dielectrics».
Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, **89**, pp. 4091–4093 (1992a).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Casimir Energy for Dielectrics: Spherical Geometry».
Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, **89**, pp. 11118–11120 (1992b).

- SCHWINGER, J.
«Casimir Light: A Glimpse».
Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, **90**, pp. 958–959 (1993a).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Casimir Light: Photon Pairs».
Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, **90**, pp. 4505–4507 (1993b).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Casimir Light: Pieces of the Action».
Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, **90**, pp. 7285–7287 (1993c).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Casimir Light: The Source».
Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, **90**, pp. 2105–2106 (1993d).
- SCHWINGER, J.
«Casimir Light: Field Pressure».
Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, **91**, pp. 6473–6475 (1994).
- SCHWINGER, J.
Particles, Sources, and Fields: Vol. 2 (Westview Press, 1998).
- SCHWITTERS, R.F. AND STRAUCH, K.
«The Physics of e+e- Collisions».
Annual Review of Nuclear and Particle Science, **26**, pp. 89–149 (1976).
- SENGUPTA, N.
Bull. Calcutta Math. Soc., **44** (1952).
- SHEN, B. AND YU, M.Y.
«High-Intensity Laser-Field Amplification between Two Foils».
Physical Review Letters, **89(26)**, pp. A265004+ (2002).
- SHNOL, É.É.
«Remarks on the theory of quasistationary states».
Theoretical and Mathematical Physics, **8**, pp. 729–736 (1971).
- SMOLYANSKY, S.A., ROEPKE, G., SCHMIDT, S., BLASCHKE, D., TONEEV, V.D. AND PROZORKEVICH, A.V.
«Dynamical derivation of a quantum kinetic equation for particle production in the Schwinger mechanism».
ArXiv High Energy Physics - Phenomenology e-prints (1997).
- SOFF, G., MÜLLER, B. AND RAFELSKI, J.
«Precise Values for Critical fields in Quantum Electrodynamics».
Zeitschrift Naturforschung Teil A, **29**, pp. 1267–+ (1974).

- SOFF, G., SCHLÜTER, P., MÜLLER, B. AND GREINER, W.
«Self-Energy of Electrons in Critical Fields».
Physical Review Letters, **48**, pp. 1465–1468 (1982).
- SOMMERFELD, A.
«Zur Quantentheorie der Spektrallinien».
Annalen der Physik, **356**, pp. 1–94 (1916).
- SPARNAAY, M.J.
«Measurements of attractive forces between flat plates».
Physica, **24**, pp. 751–764 (1958).
- STAROBINSKIĬ, A.A.
«Amplification of waves during reflection from a rotating "black hole"».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **37**, pp. 28–+ (1973).
- STECKER, F.W., DE JAGER, O.C. AND SALAMON, M.H.
«TeV gamma rays from 3C 279 - A possible probe of origin and intergalactic infrared radiation fields».
ApJ, **390**, pp. L49–L52 (1992).
- STECKER, F.W., MALKAN, M.A. AND SCULLY, S.T.
«Intergalactic Photon Spectra from the Far-IR to the UV Lyman Limit for $0 < z < 6$ and the Optical Depth of the Universe to High-Energy Gamma Rays».
ApJ, **648**, pp. 774–783 (2006).
- STECKER, F.W., PUGET, J.L. AND FAZIO, G.G.
«The cosmic far-infrared background at high galactic latitudes».
ApJ, **214**, pp. L51–L55 (1977).
- STEPNEY, S.
«Two-body relaxation in relativistic thermal plasmas».
MNRAS, **202**, pp. 467–481 (1983).
- STEPNEY, S. AND GUILBERT, P.W.
«Numerical FITS to important rates in high temperature astrophysical plasmas».
MNRAS, **204**, pp. 1269–1277 (1983).
- STREATER, R. AND WIGHTMAN, A.
PCT, Spin and Statistics, and All That (Princeton University Press, 2000).
- SVENSSON, R.
«Electron-Positron Pair Equilibria in Relativistic Plasmas».
ApJ, **258**, pp. 335–+ (1982a).

SVENSSON, R.

«The pair annihilation process in relativistic plasmas».
ApJ , **258**, pp. 321–334 (1982b).

SVENSSON, R.

«Steady mildly relativistic thermal plasmas - Processes and properties».
MNRAS , **209**, pp. 175–208 (1984).

TAJIMA, T.

«Fundamental physics with an X-ray free electron laser».
Plasma Physics Reports, **29**, pp. 207–210 (2003).

TAJIMA, T. AND MOUROU, G.

«Zettawatt-exawatt lasers and their applications in ultrastrong-field physics».
Phys. Rev. ST Accelerators and Beams, **5(3)**, pp. 031301–+ (2002).

TOLMAN, R.C.

«Effect of Inhomogeneity on Cosmological Models».
Proceedings of the National Academy of Science, **20**, pp. 169–176 (1934).

TOMARAS, T.N., TSAMIS, N.C. AND WOODARD, R.P.

«Back reaction in light cone QED».
Phys. Rev. D, **62(12)**, pp. 125005–+ (2000).

TOMONAGA, S.

«On a Relativistically Invariant Formulation of the Quantum Theory of Wave Fields».
Progress of Theoretical Physics, **1**, pp. 27–42 (1946).

TREMAINE, A., WANG, X.J., BABZIEN, M., BEN-ZVI, I., CORNACCHIA, M.,
NUHN, H.D., MALONE, R., MUROKH, A., PELLEGRINI, C., REICHE, S.
ET AL.

«Experimental Characterization of Nonlinear Harmonic Radiation from a Visible Self-Amplified Spontaneous Emission Free-Electron Laser at Saturation».
Physical Review Letters, **88(20)**, pp. 204801–+ (2002).

TRIEBWASSER, S., DAYHOFF, E.S. AND LAMB, W.E.

«Fine Structure of the Hydrogen Atom. V».
Physical Review, **89**, pp. 98–106 (1953).

TROUP, G.J. AND PERLMAN, H.S.

«Pair Production in a Vacuum by an Alternating Field».
Phys. Rev. D, **6**, pp. 2299–2299 (1972).

- UNRUH, W.G.
«Notes on black-hole evaporation».
Phys. Rev. D, **14**, pp. 870–892 (1976).
- USOV, V.V.
«Bare Quark Matter Surfaces of Strange Stars and e^+e^- Emission».
Phys. Rev. Lett. , **80**, pp. 230–233 (1998).
- VAN PARADIJS, J., GROOT, P.J., GALAMA, T., KOUVELIOTOU, C., STROM, R.G., TELTING, J., RUTTEN, R.G.M., FISHMAN, G.J., MEEGAN, C.A., PETTINI, M. ET AL.
«Transient optical emission from the error box of the γ -ray burst of 28 February 1997».
Nature , **386**, pp. 686–689 (1997).
- VANYASHIN, V.S. AND TERENT'EV, M.V.
«The Vacuum Polarization of a Charged Vector Field».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **21**, pp. 375–+ (1965).
- VASSILIEV, V.V.
«Extragalactic background light absorption signal in the TeV gamma-ray spectra of blazars.»
Astroparticle Physics, **12**, pp. 217–238 (2000).
- VERGANI, S.D.
«Direct GRB fireball Lorentz factor measurements through REM early afterglow observations».
Ap&SS, **311**, pp. 197–201 (2007).
- VINCENT, P., HEINIG, K., JÄGER, J.U., KAUN, K.H., RICHLER, H. AND WOITTENEK, H.
Quantum electrodynamics of strong fields, volume 80 of NATO Advanced Study Institute, Series B: Physics (Plenum Press, 1983).
Proceedings of the conference NATO Advanced Study Institute on Quantum Electrodynamics of Strong Fields, Lahnstein, Germany, Jun 15-26, 1981.
- VINNIK, D.V., PROZORKEVICH, A.V., SMOLYANSKY, S.A., TONEEV, V.D., HECHT, M.B., ROBERTS, C.D. AND SCHMIDT, S.M.
«Plasma production and thermalisation in a strong field».
European Physical Journal C, **22**, pp. 341–349 (2001).
- VON WEIZSÄCKER, C.F.
«Über elementumwandlungen im innern der sterne, i».
Z. Phys., **38**, p. 176190 (1937).

VON WEIZSÄCKER, C.F.

«Über elementumwandlungen im innern der sterne, ii».
Z. Phys., **39**, p. 633646 (1938).

VORONKOV, V.V. AND KOLESNIKOV, N.N.

Soy. Phys. JETP, **12**, pp. 136–137 (1961).

WANG, R.C. AND WONG, C.Y.

«Finite-size effect in the Schwinger particle-production mechanism».
Phys. Rev. D, **38**, pp. 348–359 (1988).

WARDLE, J.F.C., HOMAN, D.C., OJHA, R. AND ROBERTS, D.H.

«Electron-positron jets associated with the quasar 3C279».
Nature, **395**, pp. 457–461 (1998).

WEAVER, T.A.

«Reaction rates in a relativistic plasma».
Phys. Rev. A, **13**, pp. 1563–1569 (1976).

WEINBERG, S.

Gravitation and Cosmology: Principles and Applications of the General Theory of Relativity (Gravitation and Cosmology: Principles and Applications of the General Theory of Relativity, by Steven Weinberg, pp. 688. ISBN 0-471-92567-5. Wiley-VCH, July 1972., 1972).

WEINBERG, S.

The quantum theory of fields. Vol.1: Foundations (Cambridge, New York: Cambridge University Press, —c1995, 1995).

WEISSKOPF, V.

«Über die Selbstenergie des Elektrons».
Zeitschrift für Physik, **89**, pp. 27–39 (1934).

WEISSKOPF, V.

Kgl. Danske Viden. Selskab, **14**, p. 6 (1936).

WERNER, F.G. AND WHEELER, J.A.

«Superheavy Nuclei».
Physical Review, **109**, pp. 126–144 (1958).

WOLKOW, D.

«ber eine klasse von lsungen der diracschen gleichung».
Zeitschrift für Physik, **94**, pp. 250–260 (1935).

XUE, S.S.

«Possible vacuum-energy releasing».
Physics Letters B, **508**, pp. 211–215 (2001).

- XUE, S.S.
«Magnetically induced vacuum decay».
Phys. Rev. D, **68(1)**, pp. 013004–+ (2003a).
- XUE, S.S.
«The Dynamical Casimir Effect and Energetic Sources for Gamma Ray Bursts».
Modern Physics Letters A, **18**, pp. 1325–1330 (2003b).
- XUE, S.S.
«On quantum radiation in curved spacetime».
General Relativity and Gravitation, **37**, pp. 857–872 (2005).
- XUE, S.S. AND XIAN, D.C.
«The Casimir effect in a gauge covariant field theory».
Acta Physica Sinica, **34**, pp. 1084–1087 (1986).
- XUE, S.S.
«CASIMIR EFFECT OF SCALAR FIELD ON $S(n-1)$ MANIFOLD».
Commun. Theor. Phys., **12**, pp. 209–218 (1989a).
- XUE, S.S.
«RADIATIVE CORRECTION TO CASIMIR EFFECT».
Commun. Theor. Phys., **11**, pp. 243–248 (1989b).
- ZAGREBAEV, V. AND GREINER, W.
«Low-energy collisions of heavy nuclei: dynamics of sticking, mass transfer and fusion».
Journal of Physics G Nuclear Physics, **34**, pp. 1–25 (2007).
- ZAGREBAEV, V.I., OGANESSIAN, Y.T., ITKIS, M.G. AND GREINER, W.
«Superheavy nuclei and quasi-atoms produced in collisions of transuranium ions».
Phys. Rev. C, **73(3)**, pp. 031602–+ (2006).
- ZAUMEN, W.T.
«Upper bound on the electric charge of a black hole.»
Nature, **247**, pp. 530–531 (1974).
- ZDZIARSKI, A.A.
«Spectra from pair-equilibrium plasmas».
ApJ, **283**, pp. 842–847 (1984).
- ZELDOVICH, Y.B.
«Amplification of Cylindrical Electromagnetic Waves Reflected from a Rotating Body».
Soviet Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics, **35**, pp. 1085–+ (1972).

ZELDOVICH, Y.B. AND POPOV, V.S.

«Electronic Structure of Superheavy Atoms».
Soviet Physics Uspekhi, **14**, pp. 673–+ (1971).

ZELDOVICH, Y.B. AND RABINOVICH, E.M.

«Conditions for the applicability of statistical formulas to a degenerate fermi gas».
Soviet Phys. JETP, **10**, p. 924 (1960).

ZHENG, T. AND XUE, S.S.

«The casimir effect in perfectly conducting rectangular cavity».
Chinese Science Bulletin, **38**, pp. 631–635 (1993).

ZUREK, W.H.

«Decoherence and the transition from quantum to classical».
Physics Today, **44**, pp. 36–44 (1991).